by the same author

A MODERN ENGLISH GRAMMAR ON HISTORICAL PRINCIPLES
IN SEVEN PARTS

I. SOUNDS AND SPELLINGS
II. SYNTAX (FIRST VOLUME)
III. SYNTAX (SECOND VOLUME)
IV. SYNTAX (THIRD VOLUME)
V. SYNTAX (FOURTH VOLUME)
VI. MORPHOLOGY
VII. SYNTAX

LANGUAGE : ITS NATURE, DEVELOPMENT AND ORIGIN
HOW TO TEACH A FOREIGN LANGUAGE
CHAPTERS ON ENGLISH
AN INTERNATIONAL LANGUAGE
NOVIAL LEXIKE
THE PHILOSOPHY OF GRAMMAR
MANKIND, NATION AND INDIVIDUAL
LINGUISTICA
THE SYSTEM OF GRAMMAR
ANalytic Syntax
GROWTH AND STRUCTURE OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE
This book is copyright under the Berne Convention. Apart from any fair dealing for the purposes of private study, research, criticism or review, as permitted under the Copyright Act 1911, no portion may be reproduced by any process without written permission. Enquiry should be made to the publisher.
Preface.

It was originally my plan after the first volume of this work, which deals with sounds and spellings, to go on to Morphology and finally to Syntax—these two terms taken in the sense explained in my *Progress in Language*, 1894, p. 141, and again below, p. 1. My reasons for now deviating from this order and bringing out the syntactical before the morphological part, are partly of a purely personal character. When I took up work again after a rest necessitated by over-strain during a nine months' stay in America, I wanted something pleasurable to do and thought Syntax more attractive than Morphology; consequently I let my extensive preparatory work on endings etc., lie undisturbed in my drawers. Besides, I was told by friends here and abroad that they were especially eager to see my treatment of Syntax, and I felt that I had perhaps more new and original points of view to offer here than in pure Morphology. Unfortunately, however, the changed plan has entailed some small inconsistencies and obliged me to include in this volume some material that would have been better placed elsewhere, and I have thus been precluded from showing my own system to the best advantage.

This volume contains only the first part of my Syntax; when I printed the first chapter I still thought it possible to include chapters written long ago on
objects and predicatives, but, eventually I decided to leave them out in order not to swell the book to too great a length; I must, therefore, apologize for some misleading references to these chapters in chapter I.

It is my hope that this book may prove useful to the serious student both through the great number of examples given and through the new theories advanced here and there, more particularly in chapters IV, X, XII, and XIII. I have always been interested in the economy of speech, and have been glad to discover in some points the interplay of form and sense. I also believe that the general system and terminology indicated briefly in chapter I and explained more fully in Sprogets Logik (Copenhagen, Gyldendal, 1913) and in The Philosophy of Grammar (London 1924) has enabled me to state many grammatical facts more clearly than has hitherto been possible. But of this it is for others to judge.

With regard to my quotations, which I have collected during many years of both systematic and desultory reading, I think that they will be found in many ways more satisfactory than even the best made-up examples, for instance those in Sweet's chapters on syntax. Whenever it was feasible, I selected sentences that gave a striking and at the same time natural, expression to some characteristic thought; but it is evident that at times I was obliged to quote sentences that presented no special interest apart from their grammatical peculiarities. Sometimes I have found it expedient to print all the quotations I had available; but in most paragraphs I have made a selection, and in some cases I have even contented myself with giving the bare references without printing the sentences in full. Occasionally I have taken a quotation from
some grammar or monograph, but such quotations I have always been careful to indicate by inserting (q) after the name of the author. In the case of most standard authors I have used easily accessible but reliable editions, and I have frequently had to look up a quotation in these editions, which I had originally noted down from some other edition. I retain scrupulously the spelling of the original (even u and v, etc.) and only normalize the use of capitals. In quotations from works of fiction I have now and then abbreviated a proper name or replaced it by he or she, just as I have here and there left out a few unimportant words; but I have taken such liberties only with quotations from recent books and where I was quite sure that they could in no wise impair the value of the passage for the purpose for which I used it. The system followed in indicating the source whence a passage has been taken will, I think, be found sufficiently exact without taking up much space. As the chief point for most readers is to know the author of a passage, his name has always been written in full, except in the case of some of the greatest heroes in English literature (Ch = Chaucer, Sh = Shakespeare, Mi(ton), Di(ckens), Ru(skin), etc.). But the name of the book has generally been indicated by means of one or two initials, the clue to which will be found in the list appended below. With regard to the numerous quotations from newspapers and periodicals I have contented myself by writing NP and the year, as I very much doubt whether a single one of my readers would take the trouble to look them up even if I had given full references such as "The Times, Weekly edition, 27. Oct. 1903, p. 5, col. 2." Sometimes I place quotations within parentheses or after || to indicate that they are
not exactly on the same footing as the rest of the paragraph. Generally this will tell the judicious reader just as much as if I had tried to explain their peculiarity in express words.

In some cases I have not dared to assert in so many words that a phenomenon of which I had only nineteenth century instances was recent, though my impression is that I should have noted down older quotations if they had been at all frequent. In such cases it is always safer not to commit oneself, as fresh evidence may turn up any day and it is so very easy to overlook these things, especially if one is collecting examples of many phenomena at once. I have been able to correct the chronology of my predecessors on some points, and must be prepared in turn to find my own chronology improved on by subsequent writers of monographs.

The arrangement of grammatical matter is sometimes extremely difficult on account of the numerous cross-associations which determine the structure of a language. I have spent many weary hours arranging and re-arranging my thousands of paragraphs and my tens of thousands of slips; and though in some particulars I might now wish that I had followed a different order, I venture to think that I have here and there succeeded in finding the arrangement best suited to lay bare the inner connexion of the phenomena concerned. Numerous cross-references and the index will enable the reader to find what he is looking for, even if it has been put in an unexpected place.

In the final revision I have endeavoured to get rid of all traces of earlier draughts, some of them written many years ago, before my present views on grammar and terminology had matured. Unfortunately,
however, I find that I have retained in a few passages (2.63, 3.73 and 75) the loose employment of the word "collective", which I thought I had discarded everywhere. I may perhaps here state succinctly what I think should be the proper distinction between a collective and a "mass-word". From a logical point of view, a collective, such as family or clergy, is at once singular and plural, while a mass-word, such as water, measles, or pride, is neither singular nor plural — no matter which number the linguistic form may happen to indicate. For further details see 4.8 and 5.2.

It is a pleasant task to thank the many grammarians and friends without whose help my book would have been even less perfect than it is. My debt to the great New English Dictionary is conspicuous on many pages. To very many writers on grammar, from Koch and Mätzner through Sweet and Storm down to Franz and Wendt, etc., I owe very much, even where I differ from their views. My old friend Prof. G. C. Moore Smith, of the University of Sheffield, has been kind enough to go through two or three chapters in manuscript and to read the whole of the volume in proof; both matter and style have profited from his revision.

Gentofte, København (Copenhagen), November 1913.

Otto Jespersen

Besides making similar additions and corrections as in the first volume I have in the new edition of this volume throughout the text added references to the Appendix on pp. 485—512 (by page).

Dec. 1948.

Niels Haislund.
Contents

PREFACE V

ABBREVIATION AND LIST OF BOOKS xiii

I. Introductory 1

1.1 Syntax. 1.2 The Three Ranks. 1.3 Parts of Speech. 1.4 Verbs. Verbids. 1.5 Predicatives. 1.6 Objects. 1.7 Pronouns. 1.8 Word Groups. Clauses. Phrases.

II. Number 16

2.1 Two Numbers. 2.2. Forms. 2.3—2.5 Plural of Compounds. 2.6 Foreign Plurals. 2.7 Number in Adjectives. 2.8 You.

III. The Unchanged Plural 49

3.1 General. 3.2 Animals. 3.3 Birds. 3.4 Fishes. 3.5 Words indicating number. 3.6 Measures of time, of length, of weight, of money. 3.7 Other Unchanged Plurals. 3.8 Kind, etc. 3.9 Cases of Doubtful Number.

IV. The Meaning of Singular and Plural 70

4.1 Preliminary Survey. 4.2 The Normal Plural. 4.3 Characteristics of Several Individuals. 4.4 Plurals of Proper Names. 4.5 Plural of Approximation. 4.6 The Differentiated Plural. 4.7 Composite Objects. 4.8—4.9 Collectives.

V. Meaning of Number. Continued 108

5.1 Unification of Plurals. 5.2 Mass-Words. 5.3 Individualization and Concretion. 5.4 The Generic Singular and Plural. 5.5 Common Number. 5.6—5.7 Numerical Metanalysis.
VI. Number in Secondary Words
6.1 Adjuncts. 6.2 Predicatives. 6.3—6.6 Concord of the Verb. 6.7 Attraction. 6.8 There is. 6.9 Plural of Verbal Idea.

VII. Number. Appendix
7.1—7.2 Number in First-Words of Compounds. 7.3 Two Penny-Worth, etc. 7.4 Number in Genitival First-Words. 7.5 Number in Derivatives. 7.6 Words with Numerical Relations. 7.7 Words Referring to Two. 7.8—7.9 Words Referring to a Definite Number.

VIII. Substantives
8.1 Introductory. 8.2 Quotation Words. 8.3 Adjectives Substantivized. 8.4 Pronouns Substantivized. 8.5 Adverbs Substantivized. 8.6 Type Pick-pocket. 8.7 Type Afternoon. 8.8 Phrases. 8.9. Abbreviations.

IX. Substantivized Adjectives
9.1 Old Examples. 9.2—9.3 Denoting Persons. 9.4 Comparatives and Superlatives. 9.5 Genitive. 9.6—9.7 Neuters. 9.8 Superlatives, Ordinals, Participles. 9.9 Genitive of Neuters.

X. The Prop-Word One
10.1 The Beginnings. 10.2 The Numeral. 10.3 The Real Prop-Word, Indefinite. 10.4 Definite. 10.5 Recent Developments, the one, a one. 10.6 That one, etc. 10.7 'un. 10.8 Importance of the Construction. 10.9 Restrictions.

XI. Adjectives as Principals
11.1 Modern Restrictions. 11.2 Words going in pairs. 11.3 Singular. 11.4—11.5 Plural. 11.6 Half-pronominal Adjectives.

XII. Relations between Adjunct and Principal
12.1 Survey. Direct Adjuncts. 12.2 Shifted Subjunct-Adjuncts. 12.3 Partial Adjuncts. 12.4 Compositional Adjuncts. 12.5 Other Indirect Adjuncts.

XIII. Substantives as Adjuncts
13.1 The Problem. 13.2 Formal Character-
istics. 13.3 Co-ordination. 13.4 Use of One. 13.5 Use of Adverbs. 13.6 Isolation. 13.7 Adjectival Endings. 13.8 Conclusion.

XIV. Adjuncts. Continued


XV. Adjuncts. Concluded

15.1 Two Adjuncts. 15.2 Adjective-Subjuncts. 15.3 New-born, newly born; Moderate(ly) sized. 15.4—15.5 Post-Adjuncts. 15.6—15.7 Semi-Predicative Post-Adjuncts. 15.8 Infinitive Post-Adjuncts.

XVI. Rank of the Pronouns

16.1 Personal. 16.2 Possessive. 16.3—16.4 Demonstrative. 16.5 Interrogative and Relative. 16.6 Other Pronouns. None. 16.7 No = nān. 16.8 No = nā.

XVII. Rank of the Pronouns. Concluded

17.1 Some and Any. 17.2 Compounds with body and one. 17.3 Something, etc. 17.4 Somewhat, Somedeal, Aught. 17.5 All. 17.6 Either, Both, Every, Each. 17.7 Other.

INDEX 463
APPENDIX 485
Abbreviations and List of Books

(In this list L = London, MM = Macmillan, N. Y. = New York, T = Tauchnitz edition.)

See full list in vol. VII.

Ade A = George Ade, Artie. Chicago 1897.

adj = adjective.

adv = adverb.

Alden U = Percy Alden, The Unemployed. L.


Alford Q = Dean Alford, The Queen's English, 8th ed. L 1889.


S = Strange Stories. L 1899.

Anstey V = F. Anstey, Vice Versa. L 1882.


Archer A = William Archer, America To-Day. L 1904.

Arnold P = Matthew Arnold, Poetical Works. L 1890 (MM).

Ascham S = Roger Ascham, The Schoolemaster (Arber).

T = Toxophilus (ib.).

Austen E = Jane Austen, Emma. T.

M = Mansfield Park. L 1897.

P = Pride and Prejudice. L 1894.

S = Sense and Sensibility. L n.d.


Barrie A = James M. Barrie, Auld Licht Idylls. L 1898.

M = The Little Minister. L 1898.

MO = Margaret Ogilvy. T 1897.

T = Tommy and Grizel. L 1900.
Beaconsfield L = Benjamin Disraeli, Lothair. L n. d.


(Sometimes also quoted from Mermaid series ed.)


Bellamy L = Bellamy, Looking Backward. L n. d.

Bennett A = Arnold Bennett, Anna of the Five Towns. L 1912.

B = — The Grand Babylon Hotel. L(1912).

C = — Clayhanger. T 1912.

H = — How to Live on 24 Hours. L 1912.

HL = — Hilda Lessways. T 1912.


Benson W = Arthur C. Benson, From a College Window. L 1906.


D = — Dodo. T 1894.


Bentley T = E. C. Bentley, Trent's Last Case. L 1912.

Beow = Beowulf.

Birrell O = Augustine Birrell, Obiter Dicta. L (6 d ed.).

BJo = Ben Jonson, generally quoted from Mermaid ed.


P = — The Princess of Thule. T.

Ph = — The Strange Adventures of a Phaeton. L s. a.

Bøgholm = N. Bøgholm, Bacon og Shakespeare. København 1906.


Bradley S = Andrew C. Bradley, Shakespearean Tragedy. L 1904.

Bridges E = Robert Bridges, Eros and Psyche. L 1894.


Browning = Robert Browning, Poetical Works. L 1896 (Two vols.).

Mrs Browning A = Elizabeth Barrett Browning, Aurora Leigh. T.


Butler Er = Samuel Butler († 1902), Erewhon. L 1913.


Butler H = Samuel Butler († 1680), Hudibras, ed. by Waller. Cambridge 1906.
Abbreviations and List of Books.


Ch = Childe Harold (Canto and stanza).

DJ = Don Juan (Canto and stanza).

c. = century.


E = The Eternal Life. L 1901.

M = The Manxman. L 1894.

P = The Prodigal Son. L 1904.


Carlyle F = Thomas Carlyle in Froude, Life (1, 2 = First 40 Years of his Life, L 1882; 3, 4 = His Life in London. L 1884).

G = Correspondence with Goethe, ed. Norton. L 1887.

H = Heroes and Hero-Worship. L 1890.

P = Past and Present. L 1893.

R = Reminiscences, ed. by Froude. L 1881.

S = Sartor Resartus. L n. d.

Cambridge Trifles [anonymous]. L 1881.

Carpenter C = Edward Carpenter, Civilisation, its Cause and Cure. L 1897.

E = England’s Ideal. L 1887.

L = Love’s Coming of Age. Manchester 1897.


Carroll L = Lewis Carroll, Through the Looking-Glass. L (6 d).

A = Alice’s Adventures in Wonderland. L (6 d).


R = Reynard the Fox. (Arber.)

cf = confer.


Chesterton B = Gilbert K. Chesterton, Browning. L 1906.

F = The Innocence of Father Brown. T 1911.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>Biographia Literaria. (Everyman.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sh</td>
<td>Lectures on Shakespeare. (Bohn.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>coll.</td>
<td>colloquial.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Congreve</td>
<td>William Congreve, Mermaid ed. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conway C</td>
<td>Hugh Conway, Called Back. T 1884.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cp</td>
<td>compare.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan</td>
<td>Danish.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Darwin B</td>
<td>Charles Darwin, His Life, etc., by F. Darwin. L 1892.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>Journal of the Plague Year, ed. by Brayley. L n.d.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R</td>
<td>Robinson Crusoe 1719. [Facsimile ed. L 1883.]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2</td>
<td>Farther Adventures of Robinson Crusoe. L 1719.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Di D</td>
<td>Charles Dickens, David Copperfield. L 1897 (MM).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Do</td>
<td>Dombey and Son. L 1887 (Ch. D. ed.).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>Letters. L 1898 (MM).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Martin Chuzzlewit. L n.d. (Ch. D. ed.).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N</td>
<td>Nicholas Nickleby. L 1900 (MM).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pw</td>
<td>Pickwick Papers. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sk</td>
<td>Sketches. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T</td>
<td>Tale of Two Cities. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X</td>
<td>Christmas Books. L 1892 (MM).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dial.</td>
<td>dialect(s), dialectical.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R</td>
<td>Religion. L 1906.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>A Modern Symposion. L 1906.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Abbreviations and List of Books.


F = — The Sign of Four. T 1891.
G = — The Great Shadow. T 1893.
M = — The Stark Munro Letters. T 1895.
S1,2 = — Adventures; 3,4 = Memoirs; 5,6 = Return; of Sherlock Holmes. T 1893—1905.

St = — A Study in Scarlet. T 1892.

(Sometimes also quoted vol. 5 of Scott’s ed.)

Dyboski T = Roman Dyboski, Tennyson’s Sprache und Stil. Wien 1907.

E = English.

E3, see below Sh.


Egerton Castle K = Egerton Castle, Keynotes. L 1893.

EL = Elizabethan English.

Elliot, see GE.

Elizabeth R = The Adventures of Elizabeth in Rügen. L 1911.

Ellis M = Havelock Ellis, Man and Woman. L 1904.
N = — The New Spirit. L 1892.


EST = Englische Studien. Leipzig.

F = French; folio.


Fielding = Henry Fielding, Works, Second ed. L 1782 (8 vols.).
T = — Tom Jones. L 1782 (4 vols.).

First = My First Book, by W. Besant and 20 other writers. L 1897.

Fludyer = Harry Fludyer at Cambridge [by R. C. Lehmann]. L 1890.

Fox = Memories of Old Friends, from the Journals of Caroline Fox. T 1882.


Froude C = James Anthony Froude, Carlyle [see above].

O = — Oceana. T 1886.
G = German.
P = — Plays (1 = Silver Box. 2 = Joy. 3 = Strife. 4 = The Eldest Son. 5 = The Little Dream. 6 = Justice). L 1910—12.


L = — *Life and Letters*. T.
M = — *Mill on the Floss*. T.
S = — *Silas Marner*. T.
V = — *The Lifted Veil*. T.

O = — *The Odd Women*. L (Nelson).

Gosse D = Edmund Gosse, *Two Visits to Denmark*. L 1912.
F = — *Father and Son*. L 1907.
L = — *English Literature, Illustrated*. L 1908.
P = — *Portraits and Sketches*. L 1912.

Gr = Greek.

Haggard S = Rider Haggard, *She*. L 1896.
Hamerton F = Philip G. Hamerton, *French and English*. T.
Hardy E = Thomas Hardy, *The Hand of Ethelberta*. T 1876.
F = — *Far from the Madding Crowd*. L 1906.
L = — *Life's Little Ironies*. L 1908.
W = — *Wessex Tales*. L 1889.
Abbreviations and List of Books. XIX

F = — The Fowler. L 1899.
S = — Ships that Pass in the Night. L (6d ed).
Harrison R = Frederic Harrison, John Ruskin. L 1902.
Hawthorne [also Hawth] = Nathaniel Hawthorne, Works. N. Y. 1900.
S = — The Scarlet Letter. L 1903.
Sn = — The Snow Image and other Twice-Told Tales. N. Y. n. d. (Caldwell).
T = — Tanglewood Tales. L. n. d. (Warne).
Henley B = William E. Henley and Stevenson, Beau Austin. L.
Burns = — Burns in Centenary ed.
Q = — The Queen’s Quair. L 1904.
Holmes A = Oliver W. Holmes, The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table. L 1904.
Hope C = Anthony Hope [Hawkins], Comedies of Courtship. T 1896.
Ch = — A Change of Air. T 1893.
D = — Dolly Dialogues. L 1894.
F = — Father Stafford. L 1900 (6d ed.).
In = — Intrusions of Peggy. L 1907 (Nelson).
M = — A Man of Mark. L (6d ed.).
Q = — Quisanté. L (Nelson).
R = — Rupert of Hentzau. T 1898.
Z = — The Prisoner of Zenda. L 1894.
Hughes T1 = Thomas Hughes, Tom Brown’s School-Days. L 1886.
ib = ibidem (same work).
id = idem (same author).
IF = Indogermanische Forschungen.
Jackson S = Holbrook Jackson, Bernard Shaw. L 1907.
James A = Henry James, The American. T.
S = — The Soft Side. L 1900.
TM = — Two Magics. L.
Jerrold C = Douglas Jerrold, Mrs. Caudle’s Curtain Lectures. L.

Johnson R = Samuel Johnson, Rasselas ed. by Birkbeck-Hill. Oxford 1887

Jonson, see BJo.

Joyce Ir = P. W. Joyce, English as we speak it in Ireland. L 1910.


Ker E = W. P. Ker, English Literature, Medieval. L 1912.


Kipling B = Rudyard Kipling, Barrack-Room Ballads. 1892 (Engl. Libr.).

J1 = — The Jungle Book 1897. (Engl. L.)
L = — The Light that Failed. (Engl. L.)
MOP = — Mine Own People. (Engl. L.)
P = — Puck of Pook's Hill. T.
S = — Stalky & Co. T.
ST = — Soldiers Three. T.


Landor C = Walter S. Landor, Imaginary Conversations, ed. Have-

lock Ellis. L 1886.

P = — Pericles and Aspasia, ed. id. L. n.d.

Lang C = Andrew Lang, Custom and Myth. L 1893.

T = — Tennyson. 1904.

Lat = Latin.


Le Gallienne Y = Richard Le Gallienne, Young Lives. L.

Lewes H = George H. Lewes, History of Philosophy. L 1893.


C = — The War of the Classes. N. Y. 1905.


Lowell = James R. Lowell, Poetical Works in one vol. L 1892 (MM).

St = — My Study Windows. L n.d. (Scot.)
Lubbock P = John Lubbock, The Pleasures of Life. L (6d ed.).
Lyly C = John Lyly, Campaspe, in Manly, Specimens of the
Pre-Shakesperian Drama. Boston 1900 (Page).
Macaulay B = Thomas B. Macaulay, Biographical Essays. T.
E = Essays, Critical and Historical. T.
H = History of England. T.
MacCarthy = Justin MacCarthy, A History of Our Own Times.
N. Y. 1880.
Macdonald F, see Franklin.
Maclaren A = Ian Maclaren [John Watson], The Days of Auld
Langsyne. L 1896.
Mal = Malory.
Malet C = Lucas Malet [Mary Harrison], Sir Richard Calmady.
L 1901.
Malory = Thomas Malory, Morte D'Arthur, ed. O. Sommer. L 1889.
Marlowe F = Christopher Marlowe, Dr. Faustus.
J = The Jew of Malta.
T = Tamburlaine.
All in Breymann & Wagner's ed. Heilbronn 1885 ff.
Marlowe H = Christopher Marlowe, Hero and Leander; in Tucker
The name of Marlowe often abbreviated Ml or Marl.
E = The Everlasting Mercy. L 1912.
W = The Widow in the Bye-Street. L 1912.
N. Y. 1909.
F = His Father's Son. N. Y. 1896.
Maurier T = George Du Maurier, Trilby. L 1894.
ME = Middle English.
Mered E = George Meredith, The Egoist. L 1892.
H = Evan Harrington. L 1889.
R = The Ordeal of Richard Feverel. L 1895.
T = The Tragic Comedians. L 1893.
Merm. = The Mermaid Series of the Old Dramatists.
Merriman S = H. Seton Merriman [H. S. Scott], The Sowers.
L 1905.
V = The Vultures. L 1902.
Ml, see Milton.
Abbreviations and List of Books.

Poetical Works from H. C. Beeching’s ed. Oxf. 1900: C = Comus; PL = Paradise Lost; PR = Paradise Regained; S = Sonnets; SA = Samson Agonistes. Other titles occasionally abbreviated.

Ml, see Marlowe.

ModE = Modern English.

More U = Thomas More, Utopia, Robinson’s transl. ed. by J. H. Lupton, Oxf. 1895 (A = Arber’s reprint of 2d ed.).


E = — The Earthly Paradise. L 1890.
N = — News from Nowhere. L 1905.

Mulock H = Dinah Mulock (Mrs. Craik), John Halifax Gentleman. T.


Norris O = Frank Norris, The Octopus. L 1908 (Nelson).
P = — The Pit. L 1908 (ib.).
S = — Shanghaied. L (ib.).


OE = Old English.

OF = Old French.

Orr L = Mrs Orr, Life of Robert Browning. L 1891.

Otway = Thomas Otway, The Orphan and Venice Preserved, ed. McClumpha. Boston (1904?).

Palm P = Birger Palm. The Place of the Adjective Attribute. Lund 1911.

Pater P = Walter Pater, Imaginary Portraits. L 1887.
R = — The Renaissance. L 1912.

Payn S = James Payn, Sunny Stories. L.

PE = Present English.


Peele D = George Peele, David and Bethsabe, in Manly’s Specimens of Pre-Sh. Drama II (page).

Abbreviations and List of Books.

M = — The Mother. L 1906.
PhSt = Phonetische Studien. Marburg.
M = — The Magistrate. L 1897.
Q = — The Gay Lord Quex. L 1900.
S = — The Second Mrs. Tanqueray. L 1895.
pi = plural.
Poe S = — Selections. L (1887?, Cassell’s Red Libr.).
prep = preposition.
ptc = participle.
Q = quarto.
(q) = quoted second-hand.
Quincey = Thomas De Quincey, Confessions of an Opium-Eater, etc. L 1901 (MM).
Quiller-Couch M = Arthur T. Quiller-Couch, Major Vigoureux. L 1907.
S = — Style. L 1904.
Sh = — Shakespeare. L 1907.
Read K = Opie Read, A Kentucky Colonel.
Rehearsal = George Villiers, The Rehearsal. (Arber.)
G = — Name of Garland. T.
L = — Lost Property. L 1902.
N = — Nearly Five Million. L 1907.
S = — A Son of the State. L (6d ed.).
Ritchie M = Anne Thackeray Ritchie, Chapters from some Memoirs. T 1896.
Roister = [Udall], Ralph Roister Doister. (Arber.)
Rossetti = Dante G. Rossetti, Poetical Works in one vol L 1893.
RoR = Review of Reviews (generally quoted as NP).
Royce R = Josiah Royce, Race Questions. N. Y. 1908.
F = — Fors Clavigera, Readings. L 1902.
P = — Praeterita. L 1907.
S = — Sesame and Lilies. L 1904.
Sel = — Selections, 2 vol. L 1893.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviations</th>
<th>Books</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>T</strong></td>
<td>Time and Tide. L 1904.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>U</strong></td>
<td>Unto This Last. L 1895.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sb</td>
<td>substantive.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sc</td>
<td>Scotch.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schreiner <strong>T</strong></td>
<td>Olive Schreiner, Trooper P. Halket. L 1897.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iv</td>
<td>Ivanhoe (Everyman).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>Poetical Works. (Globe ed.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>Lectures and Essays. L 1895.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sg</td>
<td>singular.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sh</td>
<td>William Shakespeare. Abbreviations of Plays, etc., as in Schmidt's Shakespeare-Lexikon (As = As You Like It. R2 = Richard the Second. H4A = First Part of Henry the Fourth. Tp = Tempest, etc.) Lines numbered as in the Globe ed. Spelling as in the Folio of 1623.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shaw 1</td>
<td>G. Bernard Shaw, Plays. Unpleasant. L 1898.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Plays. Pleasant. L 1898.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>John Bull's Other Island. L 1907.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>Cashel Byron's Profession. L 1901.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>The Doctor's Dilemma. L 1911.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>Fabianism. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibsen</td>
<td>The Quintessence of Ibsenism. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Man and Superman. L 1903.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>Three Plays for Puritans. L 1901.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>[Prose], Essays and Letters. L (Camelot).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sheridan</td>
<td>Richard B. Sheridan, Dramatic Works. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sidney <strong>A</strong></td>
<td>Philip Sidney, Apologie for Poetry. (Arber).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smedley <strong>F</strong></td>
<td>Frank Smedley, Frank Fairleigh. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spencer <strong>A</strong></td>
<td>Herbert Spencer, Autobiography. L 1904.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Essays. L 1883.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ed</td>
<td>On Education. L 1882.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>Facts and Comments. L.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Man versus the State. L 1884.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spenser <strong>FQ</strong></td>
<td>Edmund Spenser, Faery Queen, in Globe ed.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Abbreviations and List of Books. XXV

St£ = Standard English.
Steel F = Flora A. Steel, On the Face of the Waters. L.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Publisher</th>
<th>Year</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>The Black Arrow</td>
<td>L 1904</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>Catriona</td>
<td>L</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>The Dynamiter</td>
<td>L 1895</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JH</td>
<td>Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde</td>
<td>T 1886</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JHF</td>
<td>Dr. Jekyll, etc., and Other Fables</td>
<td>L 1896</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K</td>
<td>Kidnapped</td>
<td>L 1886</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>The Merry Men</td>
<td>L 1896</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MB</td>
<td>Men and Books</td>
<td>L 1901</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP</td>
<td>Memories and Portraits</td>
<td>L 1900</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T</td>
<td>Treasure Island</td>
<td>T</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U</td>
<td>Underwoods</td>
<td>L 1894</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>Virginibus Puerisque</td>
<td>L 1894</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Sterne = Laurence Sterne, Works. L 1885 (Nimmo).
Stockton R = Francis R. Stockton, Rudder Grange (6d ed.).
Stoffel Int = Cornelis Stoffel, Intensives and Downtoners. Heidelberg 1901.


F = — Episodes. L 1895.


NEG = — A New English Grammar. Oxf. 1892,98.
P = — A Primer of Spoken English. Oxf. 1890.
S = — The Practical Study of Languages. L 1899.


P = — Polite Conversation, ed. Saintsbury. 1892.


Swinburne A = Algernon Charles Swinburne, Atalanta in Calydon, etc. T.
### Abbreviations and List of Books

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Erechtheus. L 1876.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>Love's Cross Currents. T 1905.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SbS</td>
<td>Songs before Sunrise. L 1903.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T</td>
<td>Tristram of Lyonesse. L 1884.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tenn (or Tennyson)</td>
<td>Alfred Tennyson, Poetical Works in one vol. L 1894.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>Life and Letters. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Esmond. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>History of Sam. Titmarsh and The Great Hoggarty Diamond. L 1878.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N</td>
<td>The Newcomes. L 1901.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>The History of Pendennis. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>The Book of Snobs. L 1900.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sk</td>
<td>Sketches and Travels in London. L 1901.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>Vanity Fair. L 1890 (Minerva).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thenks</td>
<td>Thenks Awf'ly. Sketches in Cockney. L 1890.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trollope D</td>
<td>Anthony Trollope, The Duke's Children. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O</td>
<td>An Old Man's Love. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Twain H</td>
<td>Mark Twain [Samuel Clemens], Huckleberry Finn. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Life on the Mississippi. L 1887.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>US</td>
<td>United States of America.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vb</td>
<td>verb.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vg</td>
<td>vulgar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ward D</td>
<td>Mrs. Humphrey Ward, David Grieve. T 1892.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Eleanor. L 1900.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>Fenwick's Career. L 1906.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>The Marriage of Wm. Ashe. L (Nelson).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R</td>
<td>Robert Elsmere. T.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviations and List of Books.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F = — The Future in America. L 1907.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fm = — The First Men in the Moon. L (Nelson).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L = — Love and Mr. Lewisham. L 1900.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N = — The New Macchiavelli. L 1911.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T = — Twelve Stories and a Dream. L (6d ed.).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TM = — The Time Machine. L 1895.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White N = Percy White, The New Christians. T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H = — The Happy Prince. L 1889.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Im = — The Importance of Being Earnest. L n.d.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In = — Intentions. 1891 [Engl. Libr.].</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L = — Lord Arthur Saville's Crime. T.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P = — De Profundis. L 1905.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R = — The Ballad of Reading Gaol. L 1898.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S = — Sebastian Melmoth. L 1904.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkins P = Wilkins, Pericles, ed. by Mommsen. Oldenburg 1857.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P = — The Princess Passes. L (ib.).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wister G = Owen Wister, General Grant.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R = — Red Men and White. N. Y. 1895.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wordsworth = William Wordsworth, Poetical Works, ed. Hutchinson (The Oxf. ed.).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Sometimes from Macmillans one-vol. ed. L.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wordsworth P = William Wordsworth, The Prelude (Book and line).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yonge G = Charlotte M Yonge, A Book of Golden Deeds. L.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zangwill G = Israel Zangwill, The Grey Wig. L 1903.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chronological List

of the chief works quoted.

Chapter I
Introductory

1.1. Syntax, in the sense in which it is taken in this book, looks at grammatical facts from within, that is to say from the side of their meaning or signification. It is contrasted with Morphology, which looks at the same phenomena from without, from the side of their form. Morphology treats under one head the same change of form wherever it occurs, for instance the addition of -s in cats and eats in one place, and the vowel-mutation in geese and feed as compared with goose and food in another place, asking in each case only secondarily what the influence of these changes is on the meaning of the form. Syntax, on the other hand, starts from such grammatical sense-categories as number or tense, and groups together the various means of expressing plurality: -s in cats, mutation in geese, -en in oxen, etc.; then it deals with the meanings and uses or functions of plurality, which, of course, are the same in all plurals, no matter how formed. Under a different head the form eats is treated together with the other third person singulars of verbs (eateth, can, etc.). The full significance of this system will appear from the whole of this work; arguments in favour of this way of dealing with grammar will also be found in a forthcoming smaller work to be called "The Philosophy of Grammar". — Cf. below, p. 485 f.
The Three Ranks

1.21. When anyone wishes to call up a picture or an idea in the mind of another man he does not always find one single word that is sufficiently definite for his purposes. In most cases he has to piece together the picture or idea by means of several words. One word is defined (or modified) by another word, which in its turn may be defined (or modified) by a third word, etc. We are thus led to establish different ranks of words according to their mutual relations as defined or defining. In the combination extremely hot weather, weather may be called a primary word or a principal; hot, which defines weather, is a secondary word or an adjunct; and extremely, which defines hot, is a tertiary word or a subjunct. Though a tertiary word may be further defined by a (quaternary) word, and this again by a (quinary?) word, and so forth, it is of no use to distinguish more than the three orders mentioned, as there are no formal or other traits that distinguish words of these lower orders from tertiary words. Thus, in a certainly not very cleverly worded remark each of the words certainly, not, and very, though defining the following word, is in no way grammatically different from what it would be as a tertiary word, as in certainly a clever remark, not a clever remark, a very clever remark.

1.22. We thus get the following classification:

I. Primary words—Principals.
II. Secondary words—Adjuncts.
III. Tertiary words—Subjuncts.

Primary and secondary words are superior in relation to tertiary words; secondary and tertiary words are inferior in relation to primary words.

1.23. It is of course possible to have two or more coordinate adjuncts to the same principal; thus in that nice young lady both that, nice and young, equally define lady; compare also much (II) good (II) wine with very (III)
good (II) wine. Coordinate adjuncts may also be joined by means of connectives, as in a rainy and stormy afternoon | a brilliant, though lengthy novel. Where there is no connective the last adjunct often stands in a specially close connexion with the principal as forming one idea, one compound principal (young-lady). Sometimes also, the first of two adjuncts tends to be subordinate to the second and thus nearly becomes a subjunct, as in icy cold or burning hot (ch. XV).

1.24. The logical basis of this system of subordination is the greater or lesser degree of specialization. Primary words are more special (apply to a smaller number of individuals) than secondary words, and these in their turn are less general than tertiary words. Thus in a very poor widow, we see that widow is the most special idea; poor can be applied to many more men and things than the word widow, and very, which indicates only a high degree, can be applied to any idea that may be found in various degrees. It is very important to keep in view this principle, which is so often overlooked, namely that the word defined by another word, is in itself always more special than the word defining it, though the latter serves, of course, to render the former more special than it is in itself. Widow is more special than poor, though a poor widow is more special than a widow; poor is more special than very, though very poor is more special than poor.

1.25. It is a natural consequence of these definitions that individual names (proper names in the real sense of that word) can only be used as principals, and never as adjuncts and still less as subjuncts. The seeming exceptions as in a Reynolds picture, Gladstone bag, Japan tables, can easily be explained when we notice that the names in these combinations have shifted their signification; they no longer point out the individual person or country called Reynolds, Gladstone, Japan, but have the much more general signification "painted by
Reynolds”, “named after Gladstone”, “lacquered in the Japanese style”.

1.26. While there are thus some words that can only stand as principals as expressing highly specialized ideas, we have other words that may in different combinations be either primary or secondary words. Thus we may speak of conservative Liberals as well as of liberal Conservatives; but it is noticeable that as primary words (substantives) a Liberal and a Conservative have more specialized meanings (a man belonging to that definite political party) than when standing as secondary words or adjectives, in which case they indicate a much vaguer trend of the mind.

1.27. Further we have words of such very general signification that they can never be used as primary words; as the least specialized among adjuncts may be mentioned the articles, especially the indefinite article.

1.28. When an adjective is made into a substantive, its subjunct is shifted into an adjunct, as seen in these examples:

- absolutely novel | absolute novelty
- utterly dark | utter darkness
- awfully funny | awful fun
- perfectly strange | perfect stranger

III \(\rightarrow\) II

I \(\rightarrow\) II

Cf. on these shifted subjunct-adjuncts chapter XII.

Parts of Speech

1.31. In the examples hitherto chosen we have always seen substantives as principals, adjectives as adjuncts, and adverbs as subjuncts; and there certainly is some degree of correspondence between the three orders of subordination we have established and the three “parts of speech” mentioned. We might even define substantives as words standing habitually as principals, adjectives as words standing habitually as adjuncts, and adverbs as words
standing habitually as subjuncts. But the correspondence is not complete. While the distinction between primary, secondary, and tertiary is purely logical, the distinction between the three parts of speech is purely grammatical and as such may vary from one language to another. In some languages, such as Finnish, there is no formal distinction between substantives and adjectives, which thus form together the one part of speech called "nouns" (in the old historical sense of Latin nomen, still preserved in German). In English the two classes are kept apart with a fair degree of distinctness, especially by the formation of the plural. Poor, in the poor people as well as in the combination the poor, is an adjective, though in the former case it is an adjunct and in the latter a principal; but (the) blacks, though derived from the adjective black, shows by its plural ending -s that it has become a substantive as well as principal; in the combinations the black ones we have the adjective-adjunct black added to the substantive ones; see on these phenomena chapters IX, X and XI. The genitive case butcher's remains a substantive, though it is an adjunct in the combination the butcher's shop; but the same form is a principal when we say I bought it at the butcher's. This view will throw some light on the disputed question whether cannon in cannon ball is a substantive or an adjective, as shown in chapter XIII.

1.32. The formal difference between adjectives and adverbs in English is much less pronounced than that between substantives and adjectives, as neither adjectives nor adverbs have any inflexion (apart from comparison). Therefore we may hesitate whether then in the then government belongs to one or the other class, though there is no doubt that it is an adjunct. In such cases it will be the safer course to say that then is still an adverb; thus also here in this man here, as well as in the vulgar this 'ere man. Some forms, such as fast and early, must certainly be recognized as adjectives in some combinations, and adverbs in others, while there are a great many
forms in -ly which are always adverbs, such as necessarily; they can never be used as adjuncts. Words from which substantives in -ness and adverbs in -ly may be formed, always must rank as adjectives.

1.33. It will be seen that the distinction between different parts of speech always depends on formal criteria. The importance of this will also be seen below, when we come to deal with the mutual relations of adverbs, prepositions, and conjunctions. On the other hand, it must be recognized that such formal criteria are not always present with the same degree of clearness, and Modern English in many cases has obliterated distinctions that were formerly more evident. — Cf. further vol. VII.

**Verbs. Verbs**

1.41. If we compare the two combinations *the barking dog* and *the dog barks*, we find that the same two ideas are combined in different ways, though the logical subordination is the same. *Dog* in both cases is the primary word, and *barks* as well as *barking* is secondary to it. A tertiary word may be added in the same form in both cases: *the furiously barking dog* (*the dog barking furiously*) | *the dog barks furiously*. But though the two combinations have thus much in common, they are felt to be distinctly different: the group of words *the dog barks* is rounded off in a way that *the barking dog* is not. The former is a complete piece of information, while *the barking dog* makes us expect some continuation (like: *does not bite*). We express this peculiar kind of finish, which is found in one combination and lacking in the other, by saying that a combination containing a verb form like *barks* in our example is regularly capable of forming a sentence, while a combination containing no verb can only in exceptional cases form a sentence. This will be illustrated in a following chapter.

1.42. This sentence-building power is found in all real verb forms (often called finite verb forms), but not
in such forms as *barking* or *stolen* (participles) or in infinitives like *to bark, to steal*. Participles are really a kind of adjectives, and infinitives have something in common with substantives, though syntactically they retain many of the verbal characteristics. We shall therefore do well to restrict the name of *verb* to those forms that have the eminently verbal power of forming sentences, and to apply the name of *verbid* to participles and infinitives.

1.43. The primary word with which a verb is intimately connected as a kind of adjunct, is called the **subject** of the verb. — Cf. Appendix below, p. 486.

1.44. In the old Arian (Indo-Germanic) languages, as well as in some languages belonging to other groups, the verb form, besides expressing the verbal idea of some activity or condition, united or incorporated a great many subordinate ideas, such as grammatical person (i.e. the distinction between [1] the actual speaker, [2] the person or persons addressed, and [3] what is neither speaker nor spoken to), number of subject, modality, tense (in the widest signification of that term, including time, duration, "perfectivity" and other "aspects"). Very often such a verb form was sufficient in itself to express a whole composite thought; what could not be incorporated into the verb form, stood more or less isolated outside the sentence proper, in what may be called **extraposition**. In course of time, the tendency has been to strip the verbal idea or root idea of these accessory notions; but though in a form like *must* there are no longer any indications of person, number, tense, or mood, most other verb forms still retain some or all of these accessory ideas, and we must therefore devote separate chapters to person, tense, and mood in connexion with our treatment of the verbs, while number in the verb is best treated together with number in the substantives, see chapters II—VI.
1.45. When a verb is made into a substantive, we have the same kind of shifting as above (1.28), for instance:

- describes accurately | accurate description
- visits frequently | frequent visits
- reads carefully | careful reader

**Predicatives**

1.51. As we have seen, what is added to a verb to define or modify it is generally in the form of a subjunct. But some verbs on account of their signification are especially adapted to connect two ideas in such a way that the second becomes a kind of adjunct to the first (the subject). The most typical instance is the verb *is*; while in the combination the red rose, red is the immediate adjunct to rose, in the combination the rose is red we have red joined to rose by means of is. Such mediate adjuncts are called **predicatives**. The only difference between the two combinations is that the red rose forms no sentence while the rose is red does.

1.52. Some other verbs that are not so colourless as *is*, admit of the same construction, as he gets angry, turns red, falls sick. The predicative necessarily stands in the same logical relation to the subject as the adjunct to its principal, that is, it is more general (less special or individual) than the subject. Thus it is possible to say: *An owl is a bird*, but not: *A bird (subject) is an owl* (predicative). If we say, *A strange bird is the owl*, the latter is just as much the subject as with the usual word order. In comparatively few cases the two may be equally, or very nearly equally, special, and then one may hesitate which to reckon as the subject and which as the predicative. In other cases it is almost immaterial whether an addition be treated as a mediate adjunct to the subject or as a subjunct to the verbal idea, as in *the rose smells sweet* (predicative adjective) or *smells sweetly* (adverbial subjunct).
Objects

1.61. Some words of the secondary and tertiary classes indicate a relation between two or more persons or things and therefore may take an object beside the superior word to which they are attached. Such an object is always a primary word, but it may be more special as well as more general than the first principal. Thus, both sentences: An owl sees a bird, and A bird sees an owl, are perfectly legitimate and natural.

1.62. There are comparatively few adjectives that can take an object, as like in He is like his brother, and worth in A book, worth two shillings.

1.63. The number of verbs, on the other hand, that take or may take an object, is very considerable indeed. They are called transitive verbs, and such verbs as takes and plays are said to be used transitively in such sentences as He takes his hat, or He plays football, while they are said to be used intransitively in He takes after his father, and He never plays.

1.64. In a great many cases the same idea may be expressed in two different ways, called the active and the passive. By this means two principals may change places, so that what is the object in the active is made the subject in the passive; what is the subject in the active, is in Modern English passive sentences generally added by means of by (the "converted subject"); for instance: Cats eat rats (active) = rats are eaten by cats (passive). It will be seen that the passive verb in English always has an auxiliary verb (is, sometimes gets, etc.).

1.65. On the different nature of the relation between the verb and its object, and especially on the "object of result" as in I make (bore, dig) a hole, I may refer to vol. III.

1.66. Some verbs may take two objects, as offered in John offered the lady a chair. Here a chair is called the direct object, and the lady the indirect object; the
latter is equivalent to the expression to the lady. In the passive there is nowadays (see ch. XIX) a tendency to get rid of the restriction by which only the direct object could be turned into the subject, thus The lady was offered a seat is found by the side of A seat was offered (to) the lady.

1.67. A different phenomenon is found in such sentences as They called their boy Tom | he made his wife happy | he acknowledged himself beaten. Here we have not two different objects, one direct and one indirect; neither would it do to consider only the first as the real object: the meaning would be quite different if we said only: They called their boy | he made his wife | he acknowledged himself. In each of these sentences we have really one complex object, made up of two parts standing in the relation of a principal and its predicate (see vol. III ch. 11 ff.). From a logical point of view, the first, or subject part, is necessarily more special than the second part, and therefore is the only one that can be made into a subject if we turn the sentence into the passive: Their boy was called Tom | his wife was made happy. (The third sentence does not admit of being turned into the passive form.)

A special subdivision of the complex object is the ‘accusative with infinitive’ as in We saw John come | He made John come (caused John to come). The same general remarks that were made on complex objects also apply to these cases; for further details and on the use of to in the passive (John was seen to come), see vol. V.

1.68. A great many adverbs also are capable of taking an object. The relation between in as used in the sentence Mary was in and the same word in the sentence Mary was in the house, or between after in Jill came tumbling after and Jill came tumbling after Jack is exactly the same as that between an intransitive and a transitive verb; only the same terms are not generally used in grammar in these cases. The ordinary terms
are adverb for in and after in the first sentences, and preposition for the same words in the second sentence, and these are generally reckoned as two different "parts of speech". As, however, there are no formal distinctions at all, we should deviate from the principle indicated above if we were to look upon adverbs and prepositions as two classes of words, though these two names are so firmly established that it will be practically convenient to retain them. — Cf. PhilGr p. 87 ff. (Particles).

Pronouns

1.71. Pronouns constitute a separate "part of speech" which presents many peculiar features. It is not easy to give one comprehensive definition of the meanings covered by these words and their relations to other classes. A distinguishing trait of many of them, such as I, you, it, this, is that they will be understood differently according to the situation in which they are spoken. I and you might be called variable individual names, as I means in each case the speaker, whoever that may happen to be; and you in the same way refers to the person or persons addressed in each case, etc. But the same variability according to circumstances cannot be predicated of none (no, nobody), and hardly of the interrogative who and what; and yet these words are always reckoned as pronouns. Whether such words as same, such, all, are to be called pronouns or not, is to some extent a matter of taste and of no great importance.

1.72. Some pronouns can only be employed as principals, for instance I, you, he, who. These cannot be called substantives, as their inflexion is different from that of all substantives. Other pronouns may be used without change of form as principals and as adjuncts; thus what (What happened? What house) and that. Others again have different forms for the two employments, compare e.g. mine with my house, ours with our house, none (nobody, nothing) with no house (ch. XVI).
1.73. In general the forms of pronouns show a great many irregularities; the formation of the plural for example in *I: we, he: they*; again, instead of a genitive in -s of the personal pronouns we have the possessive pronouns, as *my, mine* corresponding to *I; your, yours* corresponding to *you*. Some pronouns have two cases which are not distinguished in the other classes of words: *I, he, she, who* being the nominative, and *me, him, her, whom* the accusative, which is used especially, but not exclusively, as the object of verbs and adverbs. Some pronouns distinguish genders and have either a twofold division as the interrogative *who: what*, compare also *anybody: anything*, or else a threefold division as in *he: she: it*. The functions of all these various forms will be dealt with in separate chapters.

1.74. Corresponding to these pronouns and formed etymologically from the same stems we have a set of adverbs such as *then, there, when, where, thus, so*. As the rest of the adverbs they have no change of form; and if irregularity of inflexion is made the criterion of pronouns, we cannot include them under pronouns. Their use, however, presents so many peculiarities that we may count them as a subclass by themselves and designate them as *pronominal adverbs*.

**Word groups. Clauses. Phrases**

1.81. A word group consisting of two or more words may in many instances play the same rôle as a single word. Thus the group *Sunday afternoon* is principal in the sentences *Sunday afternoon was fine* (subject) and *I spent Sunday afternoon* (object) *at home*; it is adjunct in *a Sunday afternoon lecture*, and subjunct in *I slept all Sunday afternoon*. Or we may take such a combination as *He lives on this side the river*; here the whole group consisting of the last five words is subjunct to *lives; on this side*, which consists of the adverb (prep.) *on* with its object *this* (adjunct) *side* (principal), forms a group adverb,
which here takes an object, the (adjunct) river (principal), and may therefore be called a group preposition.

1.82. Other examples of groups in various employments: After dinner is a subjunct in He smokes after dinner, but an adjunct in His after dinner pipe. The infinitive with to is a principal in To see (subject) is to believe (predicative); it is an adjunct in The life to come, and a subjunct in He came to see his uncle.

1.83. Our very old friend, which consists of a principal (friend) with two adjuncts (our, old), one of which has a subjunct (very), is turned into a group adjunct by being put in the genitive: Our very old friend's daughter. In a similar way we have The King of Persia's daughter, where the four first words form a genitival group adjunct to daughter, while in the group The King of Persia, King as principal is determined by two adjuncts, the definite article (determining pronominal adjective) the and the group of Persia. In this way it will be easy to give a natural and consistent analysis of the various combinations actually occurring in our language.

1.84. A special case of great importance is presented by those groups that are generally called clauses. If we define a clause as a member of a sentence which has in itself the form of a sentence, we get the following gradation of clauses parallel to that presented by single words or by other groups.

I. Clause principals.

That he will come is certain (cp. His coming is c.).
Who steals my purse steals trash (cp. The thief steals ...).
What you say is quite true (cp. Your assertion ...).
I do not know where I was born (cp. ... my own birthplace).
I expect (that) he will arrive at 6 (cp. ... his arrival).
We talked of what he would do (cp. ... of his plans).
In the first three sentences the clause is the subject, in the three last the object, either of the verb or of the preposition of.

II. Clause adjuncts.
I like a boy who speaks the truth (cp. ... a truthful boy).
This is the land where I was born (cp. my native land).

III. Clause subjuncts.
It is a custom where I was born (cp. there).
When he comes, I must go (cp. then).
If he comes I must go (cp. in that case).
As this is so, there is no harm done (cp. accordingly).
Lend me your knife, that I may cut this string (cp. to cut this with).

1.85. The reader is specially warned not to confound the term "clause principal" as here used with the term "principal clause" found in many grammars. The latter means that part of the sentence which remains if all (dependent) clauses are taken away. I know the man who told you this; here I know the man is called the principal clause, etc. But though it must be admitted that in some instances the "dependent clauses" may be left out without any material detriment to the meaning, there seems to be no reason for a special term for what remains after it has been stripped of those elements. An adjective or an adverb may also often be left out, and yet we want no name for the residue. If we take away the clause where I was born from the three sentences given above, what remains is (1) I do not know, (2) This is the land, (3) It is a custom; but there is just as little reason for treating these as a separate grammatical category as if they had originated from leaving out the underlined parts of the sentences (1) I do not know my birthplace, (2) This is my native land, (3) It is a custom at home. The grammatical unit is the whole sentence in.
1.85—1.87. Word groups. Clauses. Phrases. cluding all that the speaker or writer has brought to­
gether to express his thought; and it is of subordinate
importance that some parts of the sentence may be in
the form of "sentences" or "clauses".

1.86. The term "conjunction" is regularly used of
such words as because, that, after, when they serve to in­
troduce a clause and connect it with the rest of the sen­
tence, and we may retain that term, though we cannot
count conjunctions as a special "part of speech", but
must look upon them as adverbs in a special function,
namely that of having a clause as their object. We do
not call *believe* one part of speech when it has no object,
another when it has a word as object, and a third when it
has a clause as its object; neither should we do so
with *after*, as the cases are really parallel; compare for
instance:

(1) I believe in a Supreme Being | Jill came tum­
bling after.

(2) I believe your words | Jill came tumbling after
Jack.

(3) I believe that you are right | he came after we
had left.

Compare also: (They have lived happily) ever since |
ever since their marriage | ever since they were married.

1.87. A phrase is a combination of words which
together form a sense unit, though they need not always
come in immediate juxtaposition. Thus the words *puts off*,
which make up a phrase, the sense of which ('postpones')
cannot be inferred from that of the words taken sepa­
rately, may be separated, e.g. by it: he *puts it off*. The verb
phrase *will take* admits of such a word as *not* between
*will* and *take*, etc.
Chapter II

Number

2.1. In English only two numbers are distinguished, singular (to denote one-ness) and plural (to denote more-than-one-ness). The few survivals of a dual number will be discussed in 7.7.

The two numbers are distinguished in substantives, pronouns and verbs, but not as a rule in adjectives and never in adverbs.

The only instances in which one might feel inclined to talk of plurals of adverbs are twice, thrice (and why not more than once, now and then, sometimes, often, always?). These may be considered a kind of plural of once; here and there is a kind of indefinite plural of at one place (but neither of here nor of there).

2.2. The formal means by which the plural is distinguished from the singular are the following.

2.21. In Substantives

(1) The regular s-ending, that is
 [iz] after a sibilant [z, s, ʒ, ʃ] as in roses, princes, bridges, dishes;
 [z] after a voiced non-sibilant, as in ideas, kings;
 [s] after a voiceless non-sibilant, as in hats, heaths.

(2) The regular s-ending with change in the kernel, as in houses [hauziz] from house [haus], wives from wife, paths [pa ðz] from path [pa'p], staves [steivz] from staff [sta'f], now also stave and pl staffs.

(3) The irregular s-ending as in pence [pens] from penny [peni].

On these three see Morphology, s-ending.

(4) The addition of -en, in oxen; this is combined with change of the kernel in children [tʃildrən] from child [tʃaɪld] and brethren [breðrin] from brother [braðə]. See Morphology, -n-ending.
(5) Change of the kernel without any ending, as in *men* from *man*, *women* [wimən] from *woman* [wumən]. See Morphology, Mutation.

(6) One of the un-English plural-endings used in certain foreign words, see here below 2.6.

On the formation of the plural in compound substantives, in which sometimes the first, sometimes the last, and sometimes both components are inflected, see below 2.3—2.5.

A kind of substitutive plural is found in *Messrs N*, rarely written in full *Messieurs N*, pronounced [mesəz, mesɛz], plural of *Mr. N* [mista], and *Mesdames N*, pronounced in the French way, pl of *Mrs. N* (and *Miss N*), both used in business style; further in Gentlemen in written address, pl of *Sir*, though (Dear) *Sirs* is also written; in speech *Sirs* is no longer said, cf. MI T 3609 Wel, sirs | By 566 Well, sirs. Cf. also 4.91 on *people* as a substitutive plural of *person*.

Some substantives do not show by their form whether the singular or the plural is meant; these will be treated here ch. III.

In the genitive the distinction between singular and plural is in most words only graphical and recent, compare *prince's* : *princes'*, *king's* : *kings'*, *count's* : *counts'*, *lady's* : *ladies'*.

On the use of the apostrophe, see Morphology, -s-ending. A real distinction is found only in those cases in which the plural is not formed regularly, as in *wife's*: *wives'*, *child's*: *children's*, *man's*: *men's*, and in some compounds, for instance *sister-in-law's*: *sisters-in-law's*, but forms of the latter kind are generally avoided.

**2.22. In Adjectives**

The only adjectives in which a distinction between the two numbers exists or has existed in the Modern English period are those mentioned in 2.7. Cf. also the pronominal adjectives *that* : *those* and *this* : *these*, and the vulgar *them*: I shall never go down *them stairs* again.
We have a kind of substitutive plural, when such long sermons is generally used as the pl of so long a sermon in preference to so long sermons; in the sg generally such a long sermon.

Such numerical adjectives as four and forty, etc., are of course always plural. So is also the adjective divers which is only used as adjunct to plural words, while its doublet diverse may be used with a singular. Several generally is used to qualify a plural word, though sometimes it may be found with a singular:

Sh Cæs III. 2.246 he giues to every severall man, seuentyn fiue drachmaes | Rehearsal 77 you have a severall design for every scene | Ru Sel 1.399 in each severall profession | ib. 1.410 every severall mind needs different books.

Both of course is plural (dual), see 7.7. But all (and whole) may be used with sg and pl substantives: all the money | all the men | one whole year | two whole lambs. Also the whole circumstances = all the circumstances’.

2.23. In Pronouns

The irregularity of pronominal inflexion makes it necessary to enumerate here all the forms:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I, me</td>
<td>we, us</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(thou, thee) you</td>
<td>(ye) you</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>he, him</td>
<td>they, them</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>she, her</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>it</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>myself (ourself)</td>
<td>ourselves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(thysel) yourself</td>
<td>yourselves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>himself</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>herself</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>itself</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>this</td>
<td>these</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>that</td>
<td>those</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

With regard to the last forms it should, however,
be noted that although *those trees* is the regular plural of *that tree*, there is no exact correspondence between them as principals before a relative pronoun, as the sg of *those who* (*those that*) is really *he who* and *she who* (the old pl they who being obsolete), while *that* is only used before a rel. pron. as a neuter: *that which*. Thus also to *those present* we have no corresponding personal singular, as *that present* cannot be used for ‘the person present’.

Some pronouns are the same in both numbers, e. g. *the, who, what* (cf. 5.5); others are used only in the sg, as *each, an (a), or only in the pl, as both.*

All these forms will be dealt with in the Morphology; in this volume there will only be occasion to speak separately about *thou, thee, ye, you*, 2.8.

**In Verbs**

2.241. A distinction between the two numbers is only made in the present tense, and only in the third person, which in the sg has the regular s ending, namely [iz] after a sibilant, as in *praises, kisses, manages, wishes*;

[z] after a voiced non-sibilant, as in *goes, sings*;

[s] after a voiceless non-sibilant, as in *rests, coughs*;

while the pl has no ending and is therefore identical with the form used in the first person singular: (*I, we, you, they*) *praise, kiss, manage, wish; go, sing; rest, cough.*

Irregular forms with change in the kernel are *has* [hæz] from *have* [hæv], *says* [sez] from *say* [sei], *does* [dəz] from *do* [duː], as also (*I am, (thou) art, (he) is corresponding to the pl are.* Cf. 2.243.

On the s-ending see Morphology, where will also be discussed the obsolete singular endings -*st and -t* in the second person (*thou goest, shalt, etc.*) and -*th* in the third person (*he goeth*).

2.242. With regard to the verb forms it is important to remember that the forms in -*s and in -*th* (including is, *was, hath, doth*) were very frequently used in E1E as
20

Number.

[2.242—2.32.

plurals. This usage begins about 1540 and declines about 1640. It belonged to the (standard) conversational language and is accordingly found very frequently in plays and letters, also in prose fiction, while it is very rare in higher literary or scientific prose. Among dramatists Ben Jonson is the only one who makes little use of it. Though the forms in -s originated in the North, the syntactical usage may very well have started in the South; after 1640 it lives on in vulgar or dialectal speech. (This is chiefly a summary of Knecht, K, p. 49—152). In the following chapters these plurals in -s (-th) have not been considered, as they have had little influence on the development of standard PE.

2.243. The two numbers are identical in all preterits: (he they) went, spoke, etc., the only exception being were (indicative) corresponding to the sg was (obsolete second person wast, wert). In consequence of this no numerical distinction is made in the present tense if this was originally a preterit, as in the old perfecto-present verbs (can, may, etc.) and in must and ought which have more recently developed present-tense signification. On these forms as well as on need(s) see vol. VI (Index).

Plurals of compounds

2.31. In the vast majority of compounds the final element only takes the plural inflexion as the one that represents the central idea; this is quite independent of the spelling as “one word” or “two words”. Thus gentlemen | steel pens | boy-and-girl loves | greengages | greenbacks | greengrocers | womanhaters, etc.

2.32. Thus also in the colloquial combinations of a proper name as first-word and child, girl, sister, etc. as last-word:

Those Johnson children | the four Smith girls | GE M 1.82 all the Dodson sisters | ib. 176 the Tulliver children | Trollope D 2.232 the Fitz Howard young ladies | Doyle
2.32—2.34. Appositional Compounds.

S 1.11 the Atkinson brothers | Hardy T 519 the d'Urberville knights and dames slept on. (Cf. Thack V 292 all the Jenkins people).

Appositional Compounds

2.33. In appositional compounds the same rule generally obtains, that only the last part is inflected in the plural:

- lady friends
- girl graduates
- boy messengers
- Bellamy L 93 parents desiring boy rather than girl children
- Ridge L 260 two small girl strangers.
- fellow travellers
- AV Matth 18.28 and 31 his fellow-servants.

Fielding T 4.181 these soldier fellows.

Sh H5 1.2.122 Your brother kings and monarchs of the earth | Carlyle R 1.287 a million brother Englishmen

Darwin L 2.26 a few brother naturalists

Wells T 102 certain grocer cousins

Swift J 71 Stratford and my other friend merchants [now rather merchant friends]

Mc Carthy 2.184 respectable Mussulman inhabitants of Damascus.

Lamb E 1.181 the Robin Redbreasts | Carlyle S 138 boa-constrictors (also Stevenson B 68).

Tennyson L 1.14 daily something-nothings | Sheridan 296 noun-substantives (NED nouns substantives 1530, noun-substantives 1779, 1832, nouns substantive 1843).

2.34. But when man or woman is the first-word of an appositional compound, both elements are inflected, the reason being apparently that the pl here does not end in -s and thus is not liable to be misheard as a genitive case, which would be possible if we formed the pl ladies friends:

More U 285 the men priestes | Sh Macb I. 7.72 Bring forth men-children onely | AV Gen 32.5 men servants and
women servants  Luke 12.45  Franklin A 44 two women friends  Scott A 1.345 men and women singers  Wells F 52 an army of men cooks  Hope Q 164 We conspire like Fenians or Women Suffragists  Ruskin Sel 2.431 men-saints  women-saints.

Note especially the frequent contrast: men-servants and maid-servants (Defoe P 43, Thack N 120, Kingsley H 227, Kipl L 33) and the different treatment in women writers = lady writers, women artists = lady artists, etc.

Thus we have also frequently men-folk (Hardy T 102, Mered E 144, Kipl J 1.84, 2.16, Zangwill G 357, Barrie M 58 etc.; Fielding T 1.192 (dialect) men voke, 3.26 men-folks) and women-folk (Hardy F 284, Stevenson Catr 68, Zangwill G 370, Kipl J 2.184, Harraden F 237, Doyle S 4.40, Norris O 233, Herrick M 50, etc.); rarer women people Norris O 207; scornfully men-things Caine C 218; in Scotch Barrie W 45 us women-bodies.

This use of women as first-word is transferred to womenkind (Sh Per IV. 6.159 wemenkinde, Beaumont 1.106, Trelawney 20, Darwin L 3.40, Stevenson Catr 18, Zangwill G 319, Lang Essays in Little 203) by the side of the more usual womankind (e.g. Sh Shr IV. 2.14, Beaumont 1.115, Scott A 1.90, etc. etc.).

The unchanged man or woman in such compounds is rare:


2.35. If the first-word is in itself a compound of -man (other than woman), there is some uncertainty in the plural, owing no doubt to the identity in sound of gentleman and gentlemen [dʒentlmen], etc., in conversational pronunciation:

I have found gentlemen before farmers (Fielding T 4.237, Collier Engl 324), commoners (Swift PC 32, Collingwood Ru 59), volunteers' (Scott A 1.94), students (Di D 373), screws (Mered E 54), acquaintance (ib. 74), cricketers (ib.
2.35—2.37. Compound Titles.

162), pensioners (Thack P 1.249), sidesmen (Caine C 28), ushers (Swift J 376, Morley Spect XV), painters (Thack N 472), highwaymen (Holmes A 326), riders, passengers, friends.

But gentleman before the plurals commoners (Harrison Ru 34), sharpers (Collier Engl 324), friends (Harraden F 201).

Similarly journeymen carpenters (Gosse F 139), but journeyman-carpenters (Hardy L 92), journeyman shoemakers (Di N 458), journeyman plasterers (Ellis EEP 4.1163).

Clergyman-poets (Tennyson L 4.12).

2.36. With child also we find some vacillation:
NP '07 child visitors to the Zoo | NP '10 child-geniuses; children-lovers in Thack. V 371 seems to mean 'lovers of children'.

2.37. "In groups consisting of two titles, says Sweet NEG § 1019, both elements are inflected, as in lords-lieutenants, lords-justices, knights-templars."
This rule, however, is not universally observed. One Englishman whom I asked, insisted on Lord Chancellors, another hesitated between Lords Chancellor and Lord Chancellors, but neither mentioned the double plural inflexion.

Examples from literature:

Lord Cardinals (Ml F 1616.915, 1006, 1044) | Lorde-presidentes (Latimer, Specimens III. 21.244) | Lord Mayors (Mered E 326) | Lords-justices (McCarthy 2.430) | Lord-Lieutenants (Hope Ch 94).

Knights Templars (Thack N 262, Hawth S 264, Wells U 159) | Knights Hospitallers (Scott Iv 70, Hales Longer Poems 296) | knights challengers (Scott Iv 92) | Knights Companions (Defoe G 28).

sir squires (Scott Iv 127) | Sir Knights (ib. 172) — not thus used now.

Mr. Speakers (Holmes A 135).
Lieutenant-Colonels (Thack S 19, 176) | lieutenant-generals (Thack E 2.291) | Lieutenant-Governors (Kipl J 2.38).

major-generals (Thack E 2.291, Shaw 2.30), major generals (Macaulay H 1.134, Shaw P XIX).—Cf. 2.41 and p. 487.

Title and Name

2.38. In groups consisting of a title + a proper name there has been for the last two centuries a tendency to give the plural inflexion to the latter. This is mentioned by Elphinston 1765 vol. 1.230: “several Mr. Johns (for Mester Johns), various Master-Jacky’s, the Mr. Wests and the Mrs. Wests, the Mr. and Mrs. Wests, the Master-Wests and the Miss-Wests, both the Lord-Stranges, etc.”

Examples of both constructions:

Mr. [Mister]: Austen M 41 the Mr. Bertrams | Hope C 178 a thousand Mr. Taylors. Thus also Austen E 96, 97, Di N 554, Thack V 375, etc. Misters before a name seems never to have been used; in commercial language Messrs [mesǝz, meʃǝz, meʃǝz] is used instead: Messrs Jackson = colloquially the Mr. Jacksons.

Master: Di N (several times) the Master Crummleses, once (599) with double plural the Masters Crummleses.

Mrs.: here the plural [misisiz, misiziz] is naturally avoided for the sake of euphony; McCarthy 2.651 hundreds of Mrs. Tullivers all over England.

Miss: Ever since the first appearance of this shortened form of Mistress (Mrs.) there has been some hesitation in the plural; but “such combinations as the Misses Smith, the brothers Smith now sound pedantic, the former being also liable to cause confusion with Mrs. [misiz], and in colloquial language it is usual to say the Miss Smiths” (Sweet NEG § 1020). The difference between pedantic and natural grammar is well brought out in the following quotation (from Yates, Flügel’s Dict.) “the Miss Inderwicks, as the girls called them, or the Misses Inderwick, as they called themselves.”
I have taken the superfluous pains to note down a number of passages in literature, in which both types occur; I have found the type the Misses N. in Fielding, Thack, Carlyle, Di, GE, Mrs Ward, Ridge, and the type the Miss Ns in Fielding, Goldsmith, Richardson, Miss Austen, Byron (DJ 13.85), Coleridge, Thack, Di, GE, Trollope, Anstey, Mrs. Ward, H. James. — Cf. p. 487.

Examples with other titles:

Sh Wiv I. 2.2 twenty Sir John Falstaffs | ib. IV. 5.71 Three Doctor Faustasses | Stevenson V 96 there are not many Doctor Johnsons | Franklin 172 the two Doctors Bond | Trollope D 3.98 Major Tiftos are cheap | Swift J 154 [note of editor] There were several Colonel Fieldings in the first half of the 18th cent. | ib. 158 I saw two Lady Bettys there | By DJ 11.80 the Lady Carolines | Ru Sel 2.431 Gonerils, Regans, and Lady Macbeths | Carlyle H 129 I would ride into Leipzig, though it rained Duke-Georges for nine days running | ib. 141 Regent-Murrays | ib. 261 King-Henrys, Queen-Elizabeths.

2.39. The brothers Smith is no parallel case, as brother is no title; therefore s is never added to the name: Thack V 77 the two brothers Crawley | Mered E 463 the brothers Cogglesby, etc. Colloq. the Smith brothers (2.32).

Substantive and Adjective

2.41. Compounds with post-adjunct adjectives are chiefly French, and we sometimes find the French inflexion of both substantive and adjective (cf. Progress § 141, below 2.76). But generally only one s is found; in the older, and still to some extent in modern, literary language the sb took the s, while the tendency, especially in conversation, is now towards inflecting the groups as wholes and thus to add s to the adjective. This tendency is strengthened by the fact that to the modern linguistic feeling the final element may often stand as a substantive rather than as an adjective (patent, general,
plural).—Carlyle's (F 2.97) *fifty Leo Tenths* is the plural of a proper name (4.43).

*letters patents* † (Sh R2 II. 1.202, II. 3.130, Jack Straw III. 1.90, 94, also Pope); *letters patent* (Hope C 168, many ex. in NED); *letter patents* does not seem to be found.

*knight-errant* (Mal 134 knyftes errante | Butler H 117 | Scott Iv 181 | Mrs. Browning A 236 | Kingsley Y 87 | Ru C 180 with knights patient); knight-errants Farquhar B 323 | Di Do 31 | Doyle F 164, now the usual form. Damsels-errant nonce-word Tennyson 423.

Courts-martial still frequent in books and newspapers; court-martials (in NED from 1660, Steele 1712; also for instance Steele, Face of Wat. 25), the ordinary form in conversation. In the Daily News Sept. 14. '06 I noted court-martials in the leader, but courts-martial twice on p. 7.

Weale publyques (†) More U 30.

Heirs-apparent Thack V 382; heir-apparens Austen M 425.


Lords Appealants Sh R2 IV. 1.104 | lords-paramount M'Carthy 2.43.

Cousins germans † (Ch., Hall 1649); cousins-german the prevalent form; cousin-german pretty common in 15th to 18th c., see NED, which has it also from Southey; see also Sh Wiv IV. 5.79 three Cozen-Jermans.

Accounts current Ru U 139 | prices current Bennett W 2.129.

femae covert NED, from 1818; femme couerts ib. from Butler Hud.

brides-elect Wagner Manners 96.

crown-imperials (a plant) Ward F 453.

genitive plurals in preference to genitives plural | Ridge B 199 please don't count the first person singulars in my letter | indicative presents: — Cf. Appendix below, p. 487.
Type handful

2.42. A special class comprises compounds with full. The older construction in which the sb was inflected and full was added as an adjective (followed by of) has generally given way to the modern one, in which the whole group is apprehended as one name of measure. This is quite natural, as a person may have three handfuls of peas, though he has only two hands, and several basketfuls of fruit even if he possesses not a single basket himself. (German has: ganze händevoll, while Danish says hele handfulde).

Examples of both constructions:

- bag: bagsful Mered T 102 | bagfuls NED from Kane 1856.
- book: Ward E 414 I can give you books-full of them.
- box: Thack S 119 whole boxfuls of pills.
- bucket: Conway C 187 bucketsfull of tea.
- city: Wells T 22 cityfuls of people.
- column: Page J 112 columns-full (in newspaper).
- cup: Ru U 117 by handfuls and cupfuls.
- donkey: Thack N 313 two donkeysful of children.
- hand: handfuls common.
- pail: Sh Tp II. 2.20 by pail-fulls.
- pew: Bennett W 1.110 other pew-fulls.
- thimble: Thack S 76 by thimblefuls.
- vial: vialfuls Ru P 1.335.

For compounds with -worth see 7.31. — Cf. Appendix p. 487.

Type break-down

2.43. Substantives formed (without ending) from a verb-phrase consisting of verb and adverb (prep.) some-
times take the plural ending in the first and sometimes in the second element. — Cf. Appendix below, p. 487.

(answer-back: Ridge N 137 servants with their answers back and evenings out.)

break away: breaks away: Times in NED.
cut off: London W 23 the cut-offs around which the sled had to go (Amr).
draw back: always drawbacks.
go between: always go-between.
go down: obsolete go-downs (‘gulps’, see NED).
hand out: Adie A 50 hand-outs (meaning?).
hang by: hang-by’s, hangbyes BJo 1.46 and 73 (=< hangers-on), obsolete.
hold up: Herrick M 228 (and common in U. S.) the hold-ups.
kick up: Fludyer 104 kick-ups.
lean to: NED 1638 lean-toos.
lock out: Review of R. Jan. ’06.70 locks-out; lock-outs more common, thus Times ’06, London C 21, NP often.
make up: GE Life 2.189 the Zouaves, with their wondrous make-ups as women; also NP ’11.
(sally out: Defoe P 77 make sallies out).
set back: Wyatt, ed. of Cymb. 123 to mend .. slowly and with apparent sets-back; NP ’09 the same set-backs, the same difficulties; also NP ’11 and 12, Wells N 502.
set down: Austen P 17 and GE A 162 set-downs (‘rebukes’).
set off: Brontë P 134 foils .. as set-offs for her own endowments.
set to: NP several sets-to; Amr NP ’09 this world’s hair-pulling set-tos (‘fights’).
2.43,—2.451. Type breakwater.

shake down (‘bad bed’): always shake-downs (Caine S 2.67, etc.) or shakedowns.

shake up: giving our ship several shakes-up into the wind (Brynildsen’s Dict.).

stand fast: Mered E 215 those veteran old standfasts.

start up: Beaumont 2.397 lest the wet Soke through your startups (‘kind of boots’).

stop over: stop-overs common U. S. (‘breaks of railway journey’).

take in: take-ins and takes in (NED).

take off: Mitford (NED) take-offs.

try-back: Boothby Dr. Nic. 292 try-backs.

try-down: Benson B 50 try-downs.

turn out: Steele Face of W 58 turn-outs | NP’94 and ’10 turnouts.

turn over: an Englishman answered: “turnovers, I suppose, but one would avoid using it in the pl.”

write-up: Amr NP’12 newspaper write-ups.

2.44. In some of these compounds it is perhaps more natural to take the first element as containing the past participle than the common form (inf.) of the verb, thus in

cast-away: Sh R3 II. 2.6 castaways | Mrs. Browning A 177, Doyle St 164, etc. castaways.

run-away: Sh As II. 2.21 runaways | now frequently runaways.

We have certainly the participle in dug-outs (‘canoes’ or ‘rough dwellings’).


Type breakwater

2.451. These compounds of a verb + its object always form the plural by adding s to the whole word, the two tendencies to inflect the substantival part and to
inflect the last part giving here the same result. Thus
breakfasts . breakstones . breakwaters . cure-alls NP '11 . cut-
throats Sh Macb III. 4.16, etc. . ande-faults Sh H5 V 2.295 .
hold-alls . know-nothings . pickpockets . pick-purses Sh LL IV.

Hangman belongs to this class (one who hangs a
man) though now it is apprehended as a man (subject)
who hangs (8.64). The pl is hangmen, Sh Cor I. 5.7,
II. 1.103.

Note the difficulty when the final element in such com-
ounds does not form its pl in -s, as seen in a letter from.
Ingleby (ES 12.150): I did coin two [words]! i.e., in MS; but
one I expunged before sending it off — that was scare-child
a nurse's bogie. It seems a good word; yet, when I came to
test it, it failed. Try the plural: who could bear the sound of
scare-childs?

2.452. The latter part of a compound of this type
may be a pl form, and yet the whole a sg substantive;
thus a sawbones (e.g. Stevenson JHF 7) | a 'scape-gallows
(Di N 544; but cf. on gallows 5.712) | Hay B 139 the
shake-hands was disposed of | [Herrick M 19 a cross-roads;
generally a cross-road, where cross of course may be adj.]
Thus also a sweepstakes Beaconsf L 118 a most exciting
sweepstakes | Holmes A 106 a slashing sweepstakes. The
form sweepstake, which is also found, is originally incorrect.
Cf. Appendix below, p. 488.

2.46. I have two examples of plurals of words
made up of vb + object + adverb, besides the familiar
forgetmenots:

Shaw Church 3 pick-me-ups (also as a title of
a weekly) | Wells A 238 the English bookshop, with
its gaudy reach-me-downs of gilded and embossed cover.

Other phrase compounds

2.47. Other substantives containing verb phrases:
(farewells) | ne'er-do-wells, NED 1845, also Hankin 1.132 |
fly-by-nights | NP 98 political fly-by-the-skies [not in dict.s] |
Parker R 155 merry-go-rounds | Bennett W 2.265 stay-at-
homes | Hardy F 138 pulls-all-together | Swift J 89 one of these odd-come-shortly's I'll consider | ib. 141 One of these odd-come-shortlies | NP 04 suppressing speakeasies [U. S. unlicensed inns'] | Mered R 431 spite o' the might 'a been's | Kipl L 229 everlasting consideration of might-have-beens | Ridge G 227 an old lady who gave proud information that she belonged to the has-beens | Butler N 184 moral try-your-strengths | The "Shall-Nots" of the Bible [title of book 1887].


2.48. Not to be distinguished from these compounds are the plurals of whole utterances (sentences or parts of sentences) treated as quotation-words (cf. 8.2). Examples are not needed in great number:

Defoe R 2.43 the expense of ten thousand said I's, and said he's, and he told me's, and I told him's, and the like | GE A 202 the pupils had said their "Good-nights" | NP '12 if all the 'if onlys' could be realized | Hughes T 2.170 all the "Thou shalt not's" which the law wrote up | Byron DJ 13.91 Proud of his "Hear him's!" | Thack V 295 to talk of burning IOU's was child's play | GE A 77 hand-shakings and "How are you's" | Ward D 2.70 He could not remember that she had said any "thank you's" since she came | NP One "I'm sorry for you!" weighs more than ten "I told you so's!" | Bennett B 16 "I am afraid." "I don't want any 'I'm afraids'."

Type afternoon

2.49. Substantives consisting of a preposition and its object take s finally:
afternoons | at-homes, NED from 1745, Ward R 3.209 four “At homes” | Caine C 201 their “At Homes” | Shaw C 205 four at-homes [thus spelt differently] | Carlyle R 2.330 these perpetual ‘not-at-home’s’ of Irving | Hardy F 83 Not-at-homes were hardly naturalized in Weatherbury | NP ’04, etc., the out-of-works | GE A 382 long to­morrors of activity | Carlyle S 39, etc., overalls.

Cf. also XIXth Cent. ’90.458 Those ‘nearly to nothings’ of which Sir Frederick Bramwell spoke recently.

A case analogous to those mentioned in 2.452, where the object was in the pl, is the sb between-decks; this is used as a pl by Dana 1840 (NED) these between-decks were.

**Type looker-on**

2.51. Words of this type (verbal noun in -er + adverb) always have s added to the first element:

Piers Pl A II. 47 (NED) comers aboute | Ascham S 72 breeders and bringers vp of the worthiest men | Ml H 1.106 the standers by; also Sh Cymb II. 1.12, R3 I. 2.162, I. 3.210, Spect 5 a | Sh Wint V. 1.29, Incertaine lookers on | Alls I. 1.132 blowers vp | ib. I. 2.48 goers backward | Troil III. 2.208 all pittiful goers betweene | Beaumont 1.98 Not a bed Ladies? Y’are good sitters up | Fielding-T 2.45 setters-on | Fielding 3.451 his whippers-in | Lamb E 2.213 purposeless visitants; droppers in, as they are called | Hardy F 366 screened from the view of passers along the road | Galsworthy M 135 goers out | hangers-on | passers-by.

**Type going-on**

2.52. The same is true of verbal nouns in -ing + adv.: Sh H5 IV. 1.260 what are thy commings in?; also GE M 1.131 | Meas III. 2.154 his owne bringings forth | Swift T 54 greater layings out | Wordsw P 1.142 goadings on | Austen M 41 his usual goings on; also GE M 1.341, Caine C 8, etc. | Quinoey 32 the daily callings-over | Carlyle H 14 all rushings down | Mrs Browning A 47 facile
settings up Of minnow gods | Di N 646 the faintings and
the comings-to | Stevenson C 73 carryings on | Shaw C 18
knockings down || Caine E 164 in regard to my poor doings,
or tryings-to-do.

Type son-in-law

2.53. In groups of sb + prep + sb generally the
first sb takes the plural inflexion:
sons-in-law | maids-of-honour | coats-of-arms (sg coat-of-
arms) | Thack V 312 all the maids-of-all-work) three quarters
of an hour | men-of-war | McCarthy 2.471 tenants-at-will.

But here also we find some results of the tendency
to treat such groups as inseparable units, taking -s finally.
(Cf. Spanish hidalgos instead of the earlier hijos de algo,
Portuguese fidalgos). This is particularly natural when
the word is no more analyzed into its original components,
e.g. slugabeds (Mered E 24), where a originally stood for
the prep. on. Other examples are:
will-o'-the wisps Doyle F 39, NP '93, Wells T 40,
Jackson, Shaw 144; but Tennys 51 wills-o'-the-wisp | Thack
V 54 the cold-round-of-beefs inside; but GE S 33 the
rounds of beef | Stevenson V [p.?] so many Joan-of-Arc's |
Brontë P 107 a march full of Jack-o'-lanthorns | Lowell
324 on Fourth-of-Julys | Parker R 207 "Stand off, Jack-
in-boxes!" [two constables], but Butler Essays [p.?] a couple
of Jacks-in-the-box | Zangwill G 191 Men are dog-in-the-
mangers [also dogs-in-the-manger].

Cat o' mountain (pl NED 1432 cattes of the mowntayne and 1842 (Lytton) cats-a-mountain) is often felt as
a single word and spelt catamountain; pl 1650 catamountaines; the shorter form catamount always seems to be
treated in this way; there are three quotations from
19th c. in NED for catamounts.

This is the rule in some dialects also for the -in-
law combinations: father-in-laws, daughter-in-laws, Darling-
ton, Folk Speech of South Cheshire 36. — Cf. p. 488.

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. 11.
A special case, in which both substantives may be inflected, is seen in Shaw J 43 hotels at which he spends his Fridays-to-Tuesdays.

2.54. Sometimes the preposition is left out, and then s is added to the whole compound:

Hardy T 514 People marry sister-laws continually about Marlott | Hardy W 244 it was begun by my father and his, who were brother-laws [dialectal] | Shaw C 203 it was hard to spend quarterhours with him; cf. Hardy W 231 this quarter-hour [cf. 12.9].

Type good-for-nothing

2.55. A substantive made up of a adjective + prep. + subst. sometimes is inflected as a whole: good-for-nothings (Spencer Man v. State 18, Ridge G 81, etc.). Thus also Beaumont 4.364 one of your London light o' loves (= 'loose women'), while Du Maurier, Trilby 142, writes lights o' love, Galsw Sw 218 lights-o'-love, and Mrs. Browning A 260 those light-of-love. — Cf. p. 488.

Four-in-hand ('carriage with four horses driven by one person') has a final -s (Disraeli NED), Caine C 375 carriages, four-in-hands | Rev. of R. Febr. '99.125 the Kaiser's greys are used mostly as "four-in-hands". But in Queen's London 127 The fours-in-hand assembled.

2.56. When two words are connected by means of a foreign preposition, we have some hesitation between the natural English auto-da-fés and the foreign autos-da-fe (NED); it is usual to write pl aides-de-camp (Thack. N 202, V. 351, Kingsley H 343, Caine E 123 etc.), but the s is not pronounced; the gen pl is written the aides-de-camp' quarters in Thack. E 2.20. Goldsm. 647 agreeable tête-à-têtes.

Type coach-and-six

2.57. Examples of plurals of words connected by means of and:

Doyle M 229 How many one and sixpences are necessary to make up fifteen pounds || Bennett A 86 I've no patience with six-and-eight-pences [i.e. solicitors' fees] |
Bennett W 1.99 you'll want more of *seven-and-three-quarters* and eights [numbers of gloves] than anything || Thack Lect. (ed. Regel) 31 the sound of *coaches and six* | Ru P 2.34 the convenience of English *carriages and four* | Di (cit. Flügel, look) looking *post-chaises-and-six* at Dolly | Hankin 3.152 I don't want your *carriages and pair* || Ward D 2.250 All the tones of the street, its white and greys | Doyle M 13 the affair ended in universal *whisky-and-sodas* | Galsworthy P 3.84 two whiskies and sodas | Chesterton F 108 endless *brandies and sodas* (the colloq. form) | Zangwill G 363 *brandies-and-soda* | Philips L 82 keeping himself up with unlimited *brandies and soda* || Sh H4A IV. 2.22 I prest me none but such tostes and butter. || [= effeminate fellows]

**Other compounds**

2.58. It is not easy to class the following examples of plurals of compounds:

Di Do 116 three unknown *something Else*s | Lowell 337 the American *everything Else*s | ib. 339 And so many *everythings-else* || Austen E 23 forming these schemes in the *in-betweens* || Egerton K 134 *none-so-pretty*s || Di Do 53 in the dullest of *No Thoroughfares* | ib. 136 backing out of *no thoroughfares* | Gissing G 215 her bandboxes, and her *what-nots* | *dry-as-dusts* (from Scott A).

**Foreign plurals**

2.6. Many foreign words, especially Latin and Greek, keep their original (nominative) plurals, though in the more familiar words there is a strong tendency to form a regular English plural. In some cases the traditional pronunciation of Latin involves changes in the kernel of the word. — Cf. Appendix below, p. 488.

2.61. -α (rarely -ε Greek) pl -ε (Lat.): *agape -ε*, also -αι, rarely -ες. *alga [ælɡa] -ε [ældʒiː]*. *antenna -ε* (GE S 86) -as. *formula -ε* (Spencer A 1.448) and, much more frequently -as (Carlyle H 137, Brontë P 265, Thack N 314, Caine C 341, Gissing B 219, Shaw J 256, James
A 1.69, Gummere Ballads often, Sinclair IR 84, etc.).
lacuna -æ (Zangw G 203) -as . larva -æ (Darwin, Romanes, 
Kipl S 73). minutæ [m(a)i'nju'ji:] rare in the sg. nebula 
-æ . penumbra -æ (Hardy F 309). stria -æ (Ru S 1.386). 
tenebræ (Beaconsf L 58) not used in sg. verruca -æ . uvula 
-æ, also -as (Shaw D *75). vertebra -æ (Spencer A 1.400). 
vesica -æ [vi'saisi].—Arena and idea have only -as. Thus 
also subpœna (in which -a is the Latin ablative -â) and 
the Italian sonata -as (Congr. 229) and vista -as. Cf. p. 488.
Cornucopia is the recognized form (Scott A 2.30, etc.) 
from a late Latin nom. instead of cornucopæ (-æ is the gen . sg); NED has the pl cornucopias 1670, cornucopias 1762.
2.62. -us pl -i (Lat., pron. [-a]): anthropophagus -i . 
cactus -i (Kipl J 43) -uses (Hardy F 4, Spencer A. 2.128). 
cirrus -i (Ru P 2.140, there also cirrostrati). colossus -i 
(GE Mm 128, 176) -uses. Columbus: Ritchie M 155 a thou-
sand Columbuses or Columbi, whatever the plural may 
be, cross the ocean. convolvulus -i -uses; Matthew Arnold 
274 uses convolvulus as pl. cumulus -i (Phillpotts M 358). 
focus -i (Archer Am 66) -uses . fungus [fAng^s] fungi 
[fAng^gai] (Hardy F 355, Holmes A 215, 287), -uses (Stev-
enson JHF 181). genius -i in the sense ‘spirits’ (Mac-
caulay E 4.68, Archer Am 7) -uses ‘men of genius’ (Spec-
tator 234 spelt Genius’s; Zangw G 93). hippocampus -i 
(Bridges E 14). hippopotamus -i (Poe 355, Haggard S 63) 
-uses . humerus -i (Ru U 4). incubus -i (By DJ 5.90). lite-
ratus -i. Magus -i. mythus -i (Coleridge) -uses (Carlryle H 18), 
generally myth, myths . narcissus -i (Shelley 655, Zangwill 
Cosmop. 1897.620) -uses; also narcissus as pl (Galsworthy 
C 75). nucleus -i. octopus -i (Review of R. March '06.255 
the Octopus of Octopi); NED gives only octopodes, a pe-
dantic form for which no quotation is found, and anglicized 
-uses (1884). polypus -i (Tennys. 6) -uses; NED has also 
polypodes (1635). radius -i, rarely -uses . ranunculus -i -uses. 
sarcophagus -i (Poe 348) -uses (Carlryle H 86). stimulus -i 
(Ellis M 340, Spencer A 2.45, Kidd Soc. Ev. 8). terminus 
-i (Bennett W 2.126) -uses . tumulus -i (Di Do 41). Cf. p. 488.
The following words seem only to have -uses: *bolus* . *bonus* . *callus* (-es Holmes A 156, 326) . *chorus* (-es Stevenson M 91) . *circus* . *crocus* .

It is only too natural that many people feel considerable difficulty in applying the Lat. ending -i correctly; Palmer, Folk-Etymology, quotes *ignorami* (The Standard, 1880) and *omnibi*. Aldrich Stillw. 73 has “that Shakford is what I call a born *genet*” as vg.

2.63. -us pl -us (Lat.); in pronunciation a difference is sometimes made from the traditional pronunciation of Latin quantity, sg [-as] pl [-ju's, -jus]: *apparatus* -us -uses (pl rare, the sg often used collectively) . *meatus*. Most of the words belonging to this class take -uses: censuses . prospectuses . sinuses.

Words, in which -us is not the Lat. nominative ending, take -es: rebuses . omnibuses. Cf. also Ruskin U 131 the plus quantities or,—if I may be allowed to coin an awkward plural—the *pluses* . . . the *minuses* (constantly used in schools).

2.64. -o pl -i (Italian, pron. [-i]): *banditto* -i; this latter form used as a sg Macaulay E 4.273 a banditti of bailiff’s followers; also *bandit* -s . *palazzo* -i (Allan W 142). *solo* -i -os (Congrege 229, Zangwill Cosmop. ’97.613) . *soprano* -i -os . *virtuoso* -i -os. Cf. also Shelley Pr 275 two *alto relievos*, Ru Sel 1.269 *bassi-relievi* (but 1.376 *bas-reliefs*). Mrs Browning A 249, 256 has the pl *persiani*.

-e pl -i (Italian, pron. [-i], pl thus in sound = sg): dilettante -i . *gondoliere* -i (Shl 207), generally *gondolier* [gon-da’lia] -s . *lazzarone* -i.

Number. [2.651—2.658.

field M 272) -ums (ib.) maximum -a (Ru U 89) memorandum -a (Di Do 185, Shaw D 53) -ums (Defoe R 2.35, P 51, Keats 5.60, Galsw C 270; now usual) minimum -a (Ru U 89) pendulum -a (rare) -ums (Stevenson D 256) phenomenon -a, rarely -ons (Di N 309) ovum -a (Defoe P 99) serum -a (Masefield M 272) symposium -a (Wells V 138). Cf. p. 488.

The following words seem to have only s-plurals: chrysanthemum -s (Phillpotts M 136) decorum -s (Goldsmith 621, Austen P 192; Fox 1.238 Wilh. Meister abounds with indecorums). geranium -s (Hardy F 4) gymnasium -s lexxicon -s. magnum (Hope C 78 champagne in magnums). millennium -s. museum -s nostrum -s (NP '11). premium -s (Spencer A 1.450).


2.653. These a-plurals are liable to be confused with the a-singualrs, and new plurals in -æ are sometimes formed. Thus instead of the unfamiliar animalculum the word animalcula is used as a sg; pl animalculæ is pretty frequent (Norris O 634, Wells N 300, Page J 114, Review of R. Febr. '05.200). apocrypha pl -as is now the ordinary word. bronchia pl -æ by the side of -a as a pl -a. candelabra sg (Merriman V 50, Caine P 24), pl -as (Scott I 76). data often sg in the sense 'information' (Krapp, Mod. Engl. 296; Ridge L 204 she discovered much data about the university). errata 'printer's error' pl -as -aes in 17th and 18th c.; now in a different sense an errata 'a list of printers' errors'. lustra pl -as. observanda's pl (Swift T 84) phenomena -as see NED. saturnalia (Scott A 2.1 an universal saturnalia seems to be proclaimed). stamina now frequent as a sg in the sense 'power, vitality'. strata -as. — Cf. Appendix p. 488.

-ís pl -es (Lat.) “in careful speaking we distinguish the pl [pə'renpisi'z] from the sg [pə'renpi'sis], but in ordinary speech the -es is shortened to [-is] so that no distinction is made between sg and pl in the more familiar words.” (Sweet NEG § 1008). analysis analyses (Kingsley H 333). axis axes. basis bases. crisis crises, rarely criseses (Tennyson L 1.256). hypothesis -ses. ignis fatuus ignes fatuï (Byron 992). metamorphosis -ses. metropolis probably only -ises (Slosson, Am. Univ. 443). nemesis nemeses (Moulton, Sh as Artist 47). oasis oases. pelvis pelves (Ellis M 72). thesis theses.

2.67. Other learned plurals in -es:

Antipodes [a'ntipodi'z] properly is a pl only, but is sometimes used as a sg: Shelley Pr 285 she is the antipodes of enthusiasm. Formerly also pronounced ['aenti-poudz], whence a sg antipode is still in use in the transferred sense as in Shelley. Boanerges also is a pl, which is often used as a sg with a new pl boanerges(s)es. Inversely the sg forceps is sometimes used as a pl, Sterne 77 a pair of forceps, Kipl S 246 those forceps (not in NED).—Naiad besides the more popular pl naiads (Sh, etc.) has the learned form naiades (Spenser, Milton, Shelley).

2.68. French plurals: adieu adieux (GE M 204). beau beaux [bouz], thus phonetically with the English ending, spelt beaus Spect 182. flambeau -x. portmanteau -s -x (Gosse Father and Son 193). tableau -s -x.—Sioux is written the same in both numbers; in the sg it is pronounced [su', sju'], in the pl either the same or with [-z]. Browning 1.600 writes bals-paré, not quite French.—Messieurs, abbreviated Messrs, has no sg in English (cf. 2.21 and 2.38); Milton Pr 308 writes contemptuously: the monsieurs of Paris. Mounseer -s once common.

2.69. Hebrew plurals in -im: cherub cherubim, also, and more naturally cherubs; sometimes a distinction is made: -im angels, -s images or models of a cherub; Sh has sg cherub and cherubin, pl only cherubins; Bacon pl cherubim and cherubins; Peele D 450 pl cherubins, Bunyan G 147 and Kipl S 26 pl cherubins. Sometimes cherubim is made a sg: Spectator 170 | Di D 286 a conventional cherubim | Di N 562 a cherubim. Seraph -im -s; Peele D 486 seraphins, Bunyan G 147 Seraphims. Milton A33 has the plural Philistims. — Cf. Appendix p. 488.

Number in Adjectives

2.71. Some quantitative words are different when used with sg and pl substantives:
little bread: few loaves (but see 2.72)
less courage: fewer pins (cf. Numbers quoted 2.74).
much money: many books (but see 2.73)
more leisure: mo reasons (see 2.74)
time enough: words enow (see 2.75).

2.72. In a different sense little can be freely used with a pl: little children (as a pl of a little child) = 'small children' referring to size, not to number as few children does; cf. the comparative lesser: the lesser lights = 'the smaller lights', different from less light = 'a smaller quantity of light'. See Morphology

2.73. The word many, which from a purely abstract logical point of view would seem to be exclusively plural, presents some peculiar features with relation to number.

(1) Many has from old Germanic times been frequently used with a singular subst.; cf. G manches jahr, manch ein weib, Dan mangt (et) år, mangen en kvinde. The use without the indefinite article (as in OE, Oros. 20 ðær biþ swyðe manig burh, and ME, AR 64 to moni mon, oðer to moni wummon) became extinct in the 16th c., and now we have only the combination with an, as already in AR 62 to moni on ancre and Ch 2266 ful many another man hath founden many a woman ful good. Thus in Sh Merch II. 7.67 many a man his life hath sold, and very frequently in PE. Formerly also in rare instances with a pl verb: Ch B 1932 Ful many maide bright in bour Thay mourne for him par amour | NED 1475 Many a page Have become men by mariage. — Cf. Appendix p. 488.

Many one (Ch A 3153 and E 1989 with vb in pl, Caxton R 61, Latimer in Specimens III, 21.164) is obsolete except in Scotch: Scott Iv 142 there is many one of them upon the amble.

But many a one is still used: Sh Cor V. 6.153 hee Hath widdowed and vnchilded many a one | Sh Cy V. 5.71 many a bold one || Thack N 666 who has not looked on many such a one.

(2) Many is used predicatively (only with inversion) with a sg subject:
many is the time I have told him.
On a (great) many, and a few see 4.97.

2.74. Mo (moe) originally was the adverb (OE mā, the Arian ending -is having disappeared), while more (OE māra) was the adjective. But the former form was often used with a gen. pl, and thus in ME mo comes to be used as a pl, and more as a sg: AR 200 monie mo hweolpes | Ch C 6 No children hadde he mo in al his lyf | ib. C 94 Though ye han children, be it oon or mo (but in the sense 'greater' more could be used with pl as in Ch C 53) | Caxton R 7 many mo tymes | Malory, see Baldwin § 48 | More U 234 lawes whiche be in numbre mo than be able to be readde | ib. 239 mo .. cerymonies | Sh Meas L 3.48 Moe reasons for this action At our more leysure shall I render you | ib. III. 140 moe thousand deaths | ib. R3 IV. 4.199 and 504, IV. 5.14 | AV Numbers 33.54 To the moe ye shall giue the more inheritance, and to the feweer yee shall giue the lesse inheritance | ib. Ps 139.18 they are moe in number then the sand. But about the year 1600 the distinction was already becoming obsolete; cf. Sh Ado II. 3.72 Sing no more ditties, sing no moe; Milton never uses the form mo, and apart from an occasional occurrence in poetry, mo has now completely disappeared.

2.75. The distinction between sg enough and pl enow (with the voiced sound on account of the ME plural ending -e) is expressly taught by Wallis 1653 p. 65 Inough (singulare) sat multum, sonatur inuff; at inough (plurale) sat multa, sonatur enow, and by Strong 1699 p. 51 I had Content enough, an Pence enow to pay for what I did myself allow. The distinction is still retained in Sc dial, see Murray D 175 Aneuwch o' syller bryngs aneuw o' freinds, Ellis V 753 (Perth), EDD; but in other dialects enow is used indiscriminately for sg or pl (EDD). George Eliot seems to observe the distinction in her dialect dialogues, see for instance A 410 Methodists enow |
412 folks enow | 431 times enow, but 411 victual enough... provide enough and to spare | M 1.35 there's fools enoo—an' rogues enoo.

Literary quotations in which the distinction is observed:
Ml J 1094 Jewes enow | Straw I. 1.99 men inow | Sh Mcb II. 3.7 napkins enow (Sh-lex has nine further quotations) | ib. II. 3.11 treason enough. | Butler Fem. Mon. 1634 (I slightly change the quasi-phonetic spelling) 36 hiv's enow | 37 big enough, stif enough | 48 hunni enough | Mi Lyc 114 anow of such as (pl) | Mi PL 2.504 hellish foes anow | Mi A 12 letters anow | Fielding T 1.71 sluts enow | Sterne 60 the dangers are enow | Scott A 1.140 beds enow | Scott Iv 346 enow of men | By 581 Have I not cares enow, and pangs enow.

But pretty early we find enow used with sg words, thus Ch B 3958, E 1213 (in G 861 we have ynoth sg riming with rogh 'rough', OE rôh sg, but some MSS have wrongly ynowe : rowe) | Mi C ed. 1673 have I said anow? And 19th c. poets simply use enow as a variant of enough, as Morris E 115 they were small enow | ib. 116 hard enow (riming with [ou]-words, though the legitimate pronunciation is [au]) | Buchanan J 9 light enew (riming with threw).

On the other hand enough is used with pl substantives: Ml T 1335 garrisons enough | Straw II. 3.38 mouthes inough | Sh Meas V. 1.350 bolts enough; thus also in the following places (not collected in the Sh-lex): Ado III. 4.48, Wint IV. 4.579, Mcb IV. 3.73, John IV. 3.138. Though Milton never uses enough with pl words, the usage becomes firmly established from the 17th c., and now enough is the only recognized form for both numbers.

2.76. In ME we have a few instances of French adjectives taking the (French) plural ending s; in Ch we have places delitables, thinges espirituels (Ten Brink § 243), the goddes celestials (HF 460), thus only when the adjective is placed after its substantive. In Malory 88 we have the most valyaunts men. To French law language are due
heirs males (Bacon, now heirs male), letters patents and the other compounds mentioned 2.41, and finally by these presents (Ml F 544, Caine C 163, still in official use), where we should perhaps consider presents as a sb. On the Middle Scotch pl of adjectives in -is, see Murray Sc 57.

You

2.81. The original inflexion of the second person pronoun was

**singular:** nominative thou — accusative thee

**plural:** ye — you.

But though these forms still survive in poetry and are familiar to everyone through the Bible, their function has been greatly changed since ME times, both as regards their case value (cf. Progress ch. VII and vol. VII) and as regards their numerical value, which is the only thing that concerns us here. — Cf. also Appendix p. 488.

2.82. In the first place, French politeness introduced in the ME period the use of the plural ye, you as a courteous form of addressing a single person. Thus we get the inflexion:

**singular:** thou thee or ye you

**plural:** ye you.

In the sg, however, the form ye was much less used than you. More U has often you (you) and only rarely (26) ye in speaking to one person. The distinction between the two forms of addressing one person corresponded pretty nearly to that of the French tu and vous; but it was looser, as very frequently one person addressed the same other person now with thou and now with you (ye), according as the mood or the tone of the conversation changed ever so little. Thus in Malory 67 ye are a merueillous man; but I merueyUe moche, of thy wordes | ib. 69 Sythen I haue made you knygte thou must yeue me a gyfte . . . thou shalt promyse me by the feythe of thy body whan thou hast justed, with the knyght, that ryght so ye shal come | ib. 94 Fair lady, why haue ye broken my
promyse, for *thou* promysest me to mete me . . . and I maye curse *the* that euer *ye* gaf me this swerd | ib. 132, etc. | Sh H4A II. 3.99 Do *ye* not love me? Do *ye* not indeed? Well, do not then. For since *you* loue me not I will not loue *my* selfe. Do *you* not loue me? Nay, tell me, if *thou* speak’st in iest or no | Goldsmith 663 Kate, art *thou* not ashamed to deceive *your* father so? | Fielding 3.478 I have a violent affection for *thee*, my dear Struddle, if *you* will follow my advice | Scott Iv 83 (arch.) I trow *you* might as well have told his favourite boar of *thy* vigils.

2.83. *Thou* and *thee* went out of use in standard speech in the 18th c. In dialects, however, the forms survived (Di N 781 uses *thee* in the pl in Yorkshire talk; see also Joseph Wright’s EDG), and Friends (Quakers) kept or keep up the old forms in speech from religious reasons, using, however, as a rule, *thee* in both cases and in both numbers (and with the verb in the form of the 3d person). Carlyle in his letters very often uses *thou, thee* to his wife by the side of *you*, which probably was the only form he actually used in conversation.

2.84. While in poetry the form *you* is often avoided, in speech the form *ye* has practically disappeared, although still found in many dialects (Carlyle and his wife are mentioned as often using this form, see Fox 2.123, Ritchie M 163). Cf. the interesting passage Benson D 219 “He discoursed agriculture and farming with tenants, to whom he always said *thank ye* instead of *thank you*, in order that they might feel quite at their ease.” In the West of Ireland, according to an observation made by my colleague Holger Pedersen, one person is addressed as *you* (possessive *your*) and more than one as *ye* (possessive *yeer*). According to Joyce, Ir. 88, the Irish use *you* as a sg and *ye* as a pl, both as a nominative and as an objective, but besides they have created new forms for the plural, such as *yous, yez, yiz*. I find *yous* in Synge, Playboy 73 Is it mad *yous* are? The same form
is said to occur in children's language in England; it is found also in vg American: Herrick M 11 I can make it hot for some of youse | Ade A 120 Won't one o' youse pay me?

2.85. Apart from these dialectal usages and from grammars, in which ye is employed in order to render the separate plural forms of other languages, Latin vos, German Ihr, etc., we have the following forms in present-day English (cf. vol. VII ch. 6):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>everyday</th>
<th>poetical</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>nom. sg you</td>
<td>thou</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>acc. sg you</td>
<td>thee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nom. pl you</td>
<td>ye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>acc. pl you</td>
<td>ye</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.86. In most cases no inconvenience is felt from the identity of the two numbers. A logical mind like John Stuart Mill, however, feels the ambiguity, as is seen in two letters, in Fox 2.275 You will certainly receive in due time what has been from the first destined for you. I mean you in the plural number, for I never separate you in fact or in thought [you = the Fox family] | ib. 2.278 thanks for the votes which your (plural) persevering kindness has got for the little girl.

In the 'emphatic' pronouns with self the distinction is naturally made between yourself (to one person) and yourselves (to more than one): help yourself (yourselves) | you should do it yourself (yourselves). Sometimes yourselves may be used instead of you simply to avoid ambiguity with regard to number: Argyll in Tennyson L 2.218 How are you standing this tropical heat, and Mrs. Tennyson? [i. e. and how is she standing it] Let us have a good account of yourselves.

2.87. In ordinary speech, the pl is often expressed by means of the addition of some pl word like people, fellows, chaps, boys, girls, children — an addition which may be compared with the addition of some restrictive word to we (4.54). Examples (I have only recent ones, except
the first): Fielding T 3.21 Sure you People that keep Inns imagine your Betters are like yourselves | Di Do 172 I don’t know what it is you people see in Joe | Norris Oct 95 that will interest you people.

Herrick M 323 if you folks were honest | ib. 339 if you folks are so obstinate.

Stevenson T 230 when you fellows are in court for piracy, I’ll save you all I can | Hope Ch 8 look here, you fellows | Wilde W 37 Excuse me, you fellows | Haggard S 95 Have you fellows got your revolvers? Because, if so, you had better see that they are loaded | Herrick M 323 any of you fellows.

Stevenson T 231 any of you gentlemen | id. Dy 264 if any of you gentry lose your money | Haggard S [p. ?] if both you gentlemen are going you will want somebody to look after you | Hope M 83 What are you gentlemen up to? | Kipl S 66 you chaps had better clear out.

It will be apparent from some of the examples that the addition is not required in repetitions.

2.88. In some dialects (E. Anglia) you together is used as a kind of pl of you (NED, together 2e); and in the southern states of North America you all (stressed ['ju:'əl]) is very frequently said in addressing more than one, in such a way that all is no longer felt in its original sense (you all is thus different from all of you). Thus a mother will say to her children: “If you all don’t make less noise, I’ll send you to bed” and a teacher to his pupils: “You all haven’t studied this lesson,” a customer to a clerk: “Do you all [you men who compose the firm, or you fellows behind the counter] keep fresh eggs here?” See an interesting article by C. Alphonso Smith, in “Uncle Remus’s Magazine,” July 1907, who repudiates the idea prevalent in the northern states that this you all is used where only one person is implied. (The last example shows that one person may be addressed, if the remark refers to other people beside himself). Mr. Smith mentions the genitive you all’s or yo all’s, and
connects the idiom with Elizabethan and other English quotations, in which you all is used without the idea of all being emphatic. Payne gives as the Alabama form yall (from ye all). Cf. also London F 92 where has you-all ben this summer? Never you mind where we-all’s ben | ib. 94 I tell you-alls.

As for you uns, see 10.66.

2.89. While the verb is ordinarily put in the pl form with you (you are, go, etc.) even when a single person is meant, a differentiation was formerly made between you was sg (in addressing one person) and you were pl (in addressing more than one), on the analogy of he was, they were. My oldest example of you was is from Bunyan G 120; it is found once in Pope (Concordance VII) and occasionally in Swift, but is very frequent in other 18th c. writers (Defoe G 49, 51, Fielding 3.533, 564, 607, Sheridan, Goldsmith, etc.; some quotations Storm EPh 745). Boswell in the second edition of his Life of Dr. Johnson corrected his own you was into you were. Miss Austen makes a half-educated lady say you was (S 134, 149, 237); Scott’s Antiquary once indulges in the same form (2.16), though usually saying you were. Byron DJ 4.88 has You was not. Since that time it is distinctly vulgar, and is found frequently in novels, etc., to characterize the speech of low class people: Di Do 33, 45, Thack N 53 (but H 63 in the mouth of a person who does not otherwise speak vulgarly), GE S 37, 124, Barrie T 143, Henley B 37, Ridge G 211, L 80, 90, S 7, Jerome T 8, Wells T 30, Shaw C 24, 192, 2.94, Hankin 3.49, Ade A 54, 133. Cf. especially Ridge G 169 you’ve grown a bit taller than what you was when you were ‘ere | Ridge L 181 I like you best as you was. “Were,” suggested Lucas, “were.” “As you were, then.” Probably the distinction between a sg you was and a pl you were is not kept up in vulgar PE, which has also was, after we and they (this vg pl was is found as early as Bunyan G 105, 106, 109, 114).
Chapter III

The Unchanged Plural

3.11. In a great many substantives the pl is either always or in certain combinations identical in form with the sg. Some of these belong to the morphological part of grammar and will be treated there, thus the E1E plurals sense, corpse, voice, princess, hose, merchandize, etc., further the colloquial identification of gentleman and gentlemen [dʒentlˌmən]. On species etc. see here 2.66; on you 2.8. But in this chapter we shall deal with such unchanged plurals as have syntactical importance; very frequently we have doublets like fish and fishes, dozen and dozens, but on the whole there is a good deal of uncertainty in the use of the forms.

3.12. This unchanged plural is found especially in words denoting various animals and in names of measures of various kinds. It is a complicated phenomenon, the sources of which are:

(1) the OE pl forms without any s. This was found in neuters, which had either no ending (swine OE swīn, deer OE deor, sheep OE scēap, horse OE hors, year OE gēar, pound OE pānd) or the ending -u (head OE pl heafdu, hundred OE pl hundreu), rarely in masculines and feminines (month in twelvemonth, OE pl mōnap, night in sevennight, fortnight, OE pl niht, score late OE pl score from ON).

(2) the OE gen. pl in -a; this was used after the higher numerals (OE twentig fōta twenty foot), and with adjectives denoting measure (OE eorþwāl eahþa fōta brāð | twegea mila hēah | þrīttiges mila lang). After the disappearance of the weak vowel, which in ME had become -e, the form would be identical with the singular. It should be noted that the words belonging to the class we are here considering, especially names of measures, etc., are used more often with numerals than most other substantives.
(3) the adjunct use of the s-less form, as in a twelve stone man, a five-pound note, etc., see 7.1. This is historically to a great extent a kind of subdivision of (2), in so far as the old genitive plural occurs there.

(4) the use of the sg when the word may be considered as a mass-word (cf. below 5.2). To eat fish would be said in contrast to flesh (meat, lamb, etc.); snipe in he shoots snipe would be comparable to game, etc. Further the use of these forms with a numerical adjective (many fish, twenty snipe) would not be very different from the similar use with other singular forms which is found with collectives (many people, twenty clergy, see 4.8).

(5) See Appendix p. 489.

3.13. It is not sufficient to take only the first of these explanations (as Sweet does, NEG § 994, 1966): the analogy of the old s-less plurals could not have extended so far without being assisted by the other motives to use the same form for both numbers. Why should this analogy be so powerful, if we see, on the other hand, the old s-less plurals disappear from neuters that do not belong to the categories here dealt with? (Chaucer: bones, londes, wordes, shippes, knees, etc.). Number (2) makes us understand why the s-less form is used so often after numerals, number (4) why it is often used when the animals, etc., are viewed more or less like a mass, while the s-form is used as an 'individual' plural; and the cooperation of all four helps us to understand the essentially vague character of the phenomenon, which in no period has had quite fixed limits.

3.14. It must be noted that a closely similar use of original sg forms is found in German (e.g. zwei fuss, drei mark, 400 mann, see Wilmanns, Deutsche Grammatik III, p. 450 ff., and the literature there quoted) and in Scandinavian (e.g. to fod, tre mark, 400 mand; fisk, sten; the explanation in Falk and Torp, Dansk-norskens syntax p. 59 is not quite satisfactory). It should also be remembered that some languages (e.g. Magyar) have the
rule that after numerals the indication of plural is omitted in the noun as being superfluous.

3.15. In the following lists the letter O added to a substantive indicates that it belonged in OE to one of the classes that had no s in the nom. pl.

I take first names of animals, subdivided not after the fashion of scientific zoology, but according to a more popular classification into animals living on the ground, in the air, or in the water; then names of measures of various kind, and finally words belonging to neither of these classes.

I have purposely left the whole of this chapter unaltered as I wrote it in 1910, in spite of the full and very able treatment of the subject found in Professor Eilert Ekwall's book *On the Origin and History of the Unchanged Plural in English* (Lund 1912). Professor Ekwall has very diligently gone through a great variety of sources not utilized by me, books of travel and of natural history, etc., and thus has been able to collect many more examples than I can offer, and also in many cases to assign a comparatively early date to the unchanged plurals.

**Animals**

3.21. With regard to animals we have the curious restriction that—apart, of course, from the OE plurals *swine* and *sheep* — the unchanged pl is "confined to the names of wild animals" and "used only when the animals are hunted because of their usefulness to man, or are taken in considerable numbers, but not when they are killed only in self-defence or as vermin" (Sweet, NEGr § 1967f.). Hence, according to Sweet, *fowls* = poultry, but *to shoot wildfowl; “duck in to shoot duck would imply that they were wild ducks”*. This, however, is stated too absolutely (cf. some of the examples below) and indicates a tendency rather than a strict rule. It should also be observed that it is not quite correct to speak here of "collective singulars", not even if we use the word *collective* loosely (as is frequently done) so as to include 'mass-words' like *iron, powder* (4.8 and 5.2). In
five snipe or a few antelope (or twenty sail, Sweet § 1970), we have neither a “collective” word nor a “singular”, but a real (individualizing) plural, though the form be identical with the singular, exactly as (to take an example from another sphere) cut in “I cut my finger yesterday” is in the past tense though the form is identical with the present.

3.22. The starting-point may have been the sg of mass. This genuine singular is seen in the following quotations (I italicize the words that show the word to be taken as sg):

Ch Parl 337 water-foul sat lowest in the dale; And foul that liveth by seed sat on the grene | ib. 603 | Caxton R 49 wododekkis [wooddekkis] and moche other wilde foule | Defoe R 23 he commanded that as soon as I had got some fish I should bring it home | ib. 98 I frequently caught fish enough, as much as I car’d to eat; all which I dry’d in the sun, and eat them dry. But the last sentence shows the transition to the plural construction, found ib. 24 when I had fish on my hook, I would not pull them up.

3.23. Deer (O) now both as sg and as pl; thus also reindeer: Longfellow 552 I own six hundred reindeer, with sheep and swine beside. Dr. Murray once told me that he had often heard deers.

Sheep (O) now both sg and pl; sheeps is found once in Sh LL II. 219 (pun with ships).

Horse (O) see 3.71.

Swine (O), formerly used in the sg, e.g. Sh Ven 616 | LL 1IV. 291 | Mi Co 53 a groveling swine. Now this is rare and literary: Ruskin Sel 2.196 a jewel of gold in a swine’s snout (from Proverbs 11.22) | Browning 1.428 like a fresh-singed swine. Swine is now used as a (collective) plural; throw pearls before swine | keep swine, etc., the sg being hog or pig; after numerals, too, these words are used: these three pigs, not these three swine. But as a term of abuse swine is still used as a sg: B Jonson
Animals.

3.23—3.31. Animals. 53

3.80 Forbear, foul ravisher! libidinous swine | Doyle M 32 You swine you | Kipling S 56 that little swine Manders minor | Vachell H 161 B. was a swine. And in this sense even a pl swines is sometimes found (quotation in Brynildsen’s Dict.).

3.24. “While this usage is freely extended to unfamiliar foreign animals, as in a few antelope(s), herds of buffalo(es) and giraffe, to hunt pig (implying wild boars), it is never used with such words as lion, wolf, badger, weasel; but it is admissible with bear, because this animal is hunted for its flesh”. (Sweet, NEGr § 1969).

Examples: Doyle S 1.171 a herd of buffalo | Kipl M 192 between the heads of sambhur, nilghai, maikhor | Kipl J 2.94 let the deer and the pig and the nilghai look to it | ib. 2.98 drove upon drove of buck fled | ib. 2.216ff. dhole and dholes | NP 06 The gift by the Government of Nepal to the Prince of Wales consists of two nilgai, ... three sambhar, two ogrial, ... three bhurrel, two thar, ... | London W 48 moose (pl) | Wells T 22 a line of dark bulks—wild hog perhaps | Morris Austral E 231 kangaroo pl by the side of -s | NP '11 a herd of five giraffe.

It is strange to find mouse: Masefield E 59 little baskets full of mouse. — Cf. Appendix p. 489.

3.31. Examples of fowl, which is nowadays much rarer than fowls:

More U 158 all maner of iiiii-footed beastes and wilde foule that be mans meate | AV Gen 1.26 let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the foule of the aire, and over the cattell | Sh Cy I 4.97 strange fowle light vpon neighbouring ponds | Bacon A 36.10 lakes, wherof we have use for the fish and fowle | Johnson R 113 as vultures descend upon domestic fowl | Lamb E 1.168 those Virgilian fowl.

Examples of fowls:

Caxton R 54 ther were many fowles and byrdes also | More U 294 fetheres of fowles | Sh Err II. 1.18 The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowles | ib. II. 1.23 of
more preheminence then fish and fowles | ib. III. 1.49
Ay, when fowles haue no feathers, and fish haue no fins | Defoe R 61 abundance of fowls | Johnson R 51 the heavier domestic fowls | Thack N 407 carving roast fowls | GE A 7 some speckled fowls | Browning 1.411* like fowls in a farm-yard.

3.32. Compounds of fowl now have only the form without -s, except peafowl(s); formerly -fowls was also used:

Defoe R 214 several tame sea-fowls | Scott A 1.110 unnumbered sea-fowl | Hawth S 197 these small sea-fowl | Arnold Poems I. 149 where in and out the screaming sea-fowl fly | ib. 189 where seafowl scream | Buley Australian Life 14 Flocks of wild swan and ducks feed in it undisturbed, and even shyer water fowl | Merriman S 241 the dabchicks and waterfowl did not cease their chatter | Kipl J 2.180 snares for wild-fowl | Stevenson M 5 moorfowl.

3.33. Other names of birds:

Black Ph 368 There are plover calling and whirling over the marshy levels. There are black cock and grey hen dusting themselves in the road... a brace of wild duck go swiftly past | Caine P 27 an island inhabited by ten thousand eider duck | Phillipotts M 28 two snipe | ib. 261 a brace of golden plover | Haggard S 115 Geese, cranes, ducks, teal, coot, snipe, and plover swarmed all around us | ib. 116 hundreds of snipe | London A 89 to shoot wild duck and wild pigeons for the table. — Cf. p. 489.

3.34. From the very rich collection of quotations given by Sattler, ESt 12.376, I extract the following list of the plural forms there found: the addition of (s) as in partridge(s) means that both partridge and partridges occur; if no (s) is added, Sattler has only one form: black-cock, blue-wings, bustard, capercailzie, coot, cranes, curlew(s), dikkop, duck(s), dunlins, flamingoes, floriken, francolin, (wild) goose, and geese, grouse, heron, koran, lapwings, larks, mallards, partridge(s), peacock and peafowl, pelicans, petrel.
3.34—3.42. Animals.

pheasant(s) . pigeons . plover(s) . prairie-chicken . ptarmigan . quail(s) . ruff . sandlarks . skylark . snipe(s) . spoonbills . swans . teal(s) . tern . turkey(s) . waterhens . widgeon(s) . wildfowl . wood-cock(s).

3.41. With regard to fish, a distinction is sometimes made between fish ‘collectively’ and fishes individually, as seen in the proverbs: “There are as good fish in the sea as ever came out of it” (found for instance in Zangwill G 197) and “Fishes are cast away that are cast into dry ponds”. But the distinction is not made by every one. (For examples, see also sub fowl.)

Examples of fish:
Swift J 57 I have other fish to fry | Franklin 43 when the fish were opened, I saw smaller fish taken out of their stomachs | Shelley 138 The fish were poisoned in the streams | Ru T & T 120 the natural history of sea fish and sea birds | Hughes T 23 they had caught three or four coarse fish | Holmes A 311 Memory is a net; one finds it full of fish when he takes it from the brook | Mered E 203 men are queer fish.

Examples of fishes:
AV Matth 16.37 seuen loaues and a few little fishes | Wordsw P 4.261 weeds, fishes, flowers | Hallam (quoted Sattler) the greater fishes swallowing up the lesser.

It must be noted that fish from F. fiche ‘piece of bone to keep account in games’ has been by popular etymology attached to the zoological fish (“sometimes made in the form of a fish”) and therefore has the pl fish besides fishes: Austen P 107 she talked incessantly of lottery tickets, of the fish she had lost and the fish she had won. — Cf. Appendix p. 489.

3.42. Compounds of fish:
Di D 29 her brother dealt in lobsters, crabs and crawfish | Di X 38 the very gold and silver fish, though members of a dull race | Norris O 403 watching the goldfish | ib. 404 Hilma looked at the goldfishes | ib. 407 a globe of goldfish | Di D 96 the shellfish (pl) | Tenn L 1.253
two starfish | Di D 35 some stranded starfish | Norris S 105
At long intervals flying-fish skittered over the water.

3.43. Other kinds of "fishes":
Sh H4A II. 4.395 as cheape as stinking mackrell | Sh Lr III. 6.33 two white herring | Spect 166 how the perch bite | Lamb E 1.24 [we were] wanton like young dace in the streams | Thack N 686 the negotiation about the three mackerel | Holmes A 45 Mary's lake, full of flashing pickerel | Phillpotts M 299 a few salmon | Kipl J 2.175 three big seal | Ru F 19 a dozen of the fatted trout I ever saw | Phillpotts M 66 dozens of good trout | Norris S 105 Turtle were everywhere | ib. 119 The shark were plentiful ... certain of these shark [here they are mentioned as something fished for; but p. 158, where they are spoken of as something to fear, we find The sharks!] | ib. 138 They fish for shrimp.

3.44. From Sattler's article (ESt 12.377ff.) I subjoin a list of the forms found by him (as above 3.34):
allice . anchovies . barbel(s) . bass . bleak(s) . bloaters . bream . brill . burbot . carp(s) . char . cheven . chub . clams . cochles . cod . coleyfish . congers . conger-eel(s) . crabs . crayfish . cuddies . dabs . dace . dogfish . dorces . dories . eels . escallops . fire-flaws . flat-fish . flounders . gobies . grayling . green . grigs . grilse . god-fish(es) . gudgeon(s) . gurnards or gurnets . haddock(s) . hake . halibut(s) . herring(s) . homelings . humber . jack . kippers . lampreys . latchets . ling . lobsters . lumps . lythe . mackerel . menhaden . minnow(s) . mullet . murrel . mussels . parr . perch(es) . periwinkles . pike . pilchards . plaice . porgies . popes . porgies . pouting . redherrings . rock . rock coddling(s) . rokers . ruffs . rufft . saithe . salmon(s) only once with s, very often without . sardines . seer . shad(s) . shark(s) . shrimps . skate . sneer-dabs . smelts . smolts . soles . sprats . squid . sticklebacks . sturgeon . sythe . tench . thornbacks . trout(s) . turbot(s) . turtle . vendace . weaver(s) . whales . whelks . whitebait . whiting . whitches . willis.

3.45. When different species (or subspecies, varieties) of birds or fishes are meant, the s-plural is em-
ployed: there are said to be a dozen different *salmons* in Norway | the *plovers* of North America.

**Words indicating number**

**3.51.** Names indicating number, from *pair* to *million*, are often used in the pl without -s, but only after numerals (cf. Sattler ESt 16.42):

*Pair*: the *s*-plural seems to be gaining ground. Dr. Craigie once wrote to me: "Six *pairs* of gloves is the only expression among educated speakers. The other [*pair*] is distinctly provincial, though it would not excite attention if anyone chose to use it; to some it would probably suggest commercial language", and similarly another correspondent says: "In ordinary language six *pairs* is more usual; we expect to hear six *pair* from a shop assistant". But the reverse opinion was expressed by Professor Keane, who wrote to me: "we say six *pair*, but the trade always six *pairs*, both are right". Quotations for both forms show *pairs* in most recent writers:

Ch Parl 238 of doves . . many a hundred *paire* | Sh Gent II. 4.95 Loue hath twenty *paire* of eyes | Swift T 121 two *pair* of compasses | Defoe R 228 three or four *pair* of shoes | Gibbon M 38 so many *pair* of wings | By DJ 4.110 few *pair* | Thack N 259 two *pair* of eyes | Di X 28 three or four and twenty *pair* of partners | Di D 168 a great many coats and *pairs* of trousers | Di Do 392 two *pairs* of women's eyes | Kipl L 129 the two *pairs* of shoulders | Ridge G 53 a dozen *pairs* six and three-quarters [= *pairs* of gloves] | Wells T 69 two *pairs* of white flannel trousers | Wells V 148 a dozen *pairs* of stockings | Zangwill G 256 He bought her six *pairs* of tan kid | ib. 303 three more *pairs* of gloves | Hewlett Q 72 half a dozen *pairs* of eyes | Norris P 152 gloves . . . how many *pairs* | ib. 156 nine *pair*. — Cf. p. 489.

*Couple*: Malory 65 the questyng of *XXX coupyl* houndes | Austen P 406 three *couple* of ducks just fit to be killed | Austen S 170 Lady M had given a small dance
of eight or nine *couple* (thus extremely frequent in that writer) | Thack N 264 two *couple* of waltzers | 1875 (NED) The Lancers must be danced by four *couples*.

**Brace:** Austen M 159 [pheasants] we brought home six *brace* between us | Kingsley H 269 four or five *brace* of greyhounds. Never *braces* in this sense.


**Leash** (a set of three): 1792 (NED) ninety-nine *leash* of languages.

**Warp** (dial. 'a set of four'): quotations for the unchanged pl from Scott and others in EDD.

**3.52.** *Dozen* (NED treats the pl *dozen* as if it were quite recent; the only examples are from 1835 and 1839):

Greene F 5.8 four or five *dozen* geese | MI J 1904 fifty *dozen* | Sh Hml III. 2.167 thirtie *dozen* moones | Sh H4B V. 1.71 foure *dozen* of such bearded hermites staues, as Master Shallow | Defoe R 224 about two *dozen* of my small loaves | ib. 158 three *dozen* of shirts | Swift J 83 I made two or three *dozen* of bows | Sterne 84 ten *dozen* of hornets | By DJ 5.152 four *dozen* sons | Thack N 88 one of two dozen purchased . . . | Stevenson D 164 she presented him with a couple of *dozen* of wine | Ru P 2.120 two *dozen* of stone houses. — Cf. Appendix p. 489.

**Score:** Malory 85 with a iii *score* horses | MI J 94 *threescore* camels | Greene F 11.83 these *threescore* days | Sh Cy III. 2.69 How many *score* of miles | AV Ps 90.10 The dayes of our yeres are *threescore* yeeres and ten, and if by reason of strength they be *fourescore* yeeres . . . | Defoe R 100 *threescore* eggs | Carlyle S 83 striplings of *threescore-and-ten* | Thack S 126 with who knows how many *score* more | Parker R 303 a few *score* of books | Ward E 147 a few *score* of heads | Hope R 245.

**Quire and ream** generally have s.
3.52—3.55. Words indicating number.

**Gross** (twelve dozen): examples (five g., two g., a few gross) in ESt 16.50. The pl *groses*, which is not mentioned in grammars and dictionaries, is found Dickens D 3 some *grosses* of prophetic pins.

3.53. **Hundred** (O): two hundred times | Bennett W 2.60 a couple of hundred [= ... hundred pounds sterling].

**Thousand** (O): More U 219 manye *thousande* of copyes | Sh Merch III. 2.301 six *thousand* | Thack P 3.367 with a couple of *thousand* a-year. Very rarely as in Sh Cymb I. 4.138 ten *thousands* duckets.

**Million**: Carlyle S 182 in two hours ... in two *million* | Di Do 407 twenty *million* times | Stacpoole, Cottage 19: *millions* do not confer power ... but a man of genius, with seven *million* in cash and credit ... | Wells TM 139 thirty *million* years. — Cf. Appendix p. 489.

**Billion**.


3.54. With these words must be classed a few others, which mean units:

**Head** (O; examples in NED from 1513 on): Darwin B 109 I killed seventy-five *head* of game | Harraden D 104 he had worked his herd up to about four thousand *head* | Caine P 30 five thousand *head* of sheep | NP 300 *head* of asparagus.

**Poll** (= *head*) †, NED ex. from 1494—1601 Sh All IV. 3.190 The muster file amounts not to fifteene thousand pole.

**Stand of arms** = 'a musket or rifle with its usual appendages, as a bayonet, cartridge-box': 100 stand of arms | Macaulay: Fifty stand of colours. — Cf. p. 490.

Cf. possibly also *pile* in Sh All IV. 5.103, and *tire* 'row, rank', see NED 1569, 1625, 1632, 1686.

3.55. If these substantives are used without any numeral, the ordinary pl is employed: dozens (hundreds, thousands) of times | the sheep died by scores | NP *wealth is
reckoned by heads of cattle, etc. After the indefinite numerical adjectives many, few, both forms are found. Cf. also 5.11.

Measures of time.

3.61. Year (O), the pl years is at least as old as Ch (B 463 yeres and dayes, but 499 thre yeer and more); Mal yere and yeres after numerals, in other cases yeres; Sh years more often than year, which is found particularly in the language of low persons (Sh-lex.); both forms together in Meas II. 1.274 (Elbow) Seuen yeere, and a halfe sir. (Escalus) . . . you say seauen yeares together | Defoe R 46 eight year | Di N 446 (vg) Four-and-forty year | Mered R 415 (vg) twelve year. In educated speech now always years.

As for the use in four-year-old, etc., see 7.15.

Month (O), now always pl months, except in a twelve-month (5.172). In OE both plurals are seen in Chron. 871, where MS A has ymb ii monap, and MS E: ymb twægen monðas.

Night (O), now always pl nights, except in fortnight and the obsolete sennight (sevennight), which are new singulars (5.172). Malory 143 has a vij nyghte, but 137 these thre nyghtes.

Week and hour seem vulgarly to have also plurals without s: GE A 241 a five week | Shaw 2.128 a couple-o-hour.

Measures of length

3.62. Foot (Ch, see MP 3.420, I 6, 8, 9, Fame 1335): More U 130 twenty fote brode | MI F 221 within fortie foote of the place | Sh John IV. 2.100 three foot of it | Bacon A 18.26 not past fourty foote from the ground | Defoe R 12 there was four foot water in the hold | Fielding T 3.144 one that is six foot under ground | By DJ 7.37 six foot high | Austen M 90 he was not five foot nine. I should not wonder if he was not more than five foot
eight | Di D 118 he was five foot nine and a half | Jerome T 7 the figure rose to its full height of five foot one.— On foot in a different sense see 3.7.

Fathom (cf. Ch MP 3.422, Ros 1393): Sh As IV. 1.210 how many fathome deep I am in loue | Sh Alls IV. 1.63 How deepe? Thirty fadome | Defoe R 149 forty five fathom | Scott A 1.74 to drink healths five fathom deep | Shaw P 160 fifty fathom | Haggard S 63 within ten or a dozen fathoms of the boat | London A 197 eleven fadom.

Mile (cf. Ch Fame 1979; G 555 fyve myle, but G 561 miles three): Caxton R 17 wel a ij or iij myle; thus also 85 | Malory 49 x myle oute of London; thus also 65, 95, 125, etc. | More U 252 500 myles | Sh mile pl 6 times, miles oftener | Sh R3 IV. 4.461 so many mile (Fol. miles) | Beaum & Fl 1.287 (Merm) A hundred mile a day is nothing with me | Defoe R 167 about three mile | ib. 214 about two mile towards the end of the island | Thack P 44 Came the nine mile in two-and-forty minutes | Di D 283 five mile round | GE A 417 (vg) thirty mile off | Shaw P 265 (vg) Matter o two mawl [= mile].

Nowadays, feet, fathoms, miles are always said in educated speech, though the pl foot is perhaps a little less vulgar than mile, especially when followed by a number indicating the inches (five foot ten). Ells and yards never occur without the -s; and inches is used universally, though I have found one instance of inch: Masefield C 217 sliding down a mud-bank with eighteen inch on top (a sea-captain speaking). — Cf. Appendix p. 490.

**Measures of weight**

3.63. Pound O (also in the meaning 'pound sterling'): [Ch pound, e.g. F 683, G 1361, 1364] Roister very often pound(e) after numerals, also 32 ten thousand poundes, cf. 72, and without a numeral 14 besides poundes of gold | Sh pound more frequent than pounds after a numeral, without a numeral pounds | AV only pound | Bunyan G 34 pound | Farquhar B 319 pound, but 324, 328,
376 pounds | Swift J pounds often, hardly pound | Pope pound and pounds after numerals | Defoe R 199 six pound of gun-powder | ib. 325 two pound of excellent good tobacco | ib. 331 two hundred pounds sterling | Fielding T 1.64 ten pound | Austen M 114 twenty pounds | Thack N 41 three pound (schoolboy) | Di D 704 a hundred pound | Hope Ch 62 two pound ten | Hope F 21 I've won five pound of him | Shaw C 192 (vg) I lost a hundred pound.—Pound is now decidedly vulgar (in the last quotation but one an aristocrat is speaking) except when followed by a numeral (shillings) as in two pound ten; cf. for a five-pound note 7.12.

Stone; pl generally unchanged, but Sattler has a few examples of stones (ESt 16.49): Thack V 369 Jack . . . weighs five stone | Thack P 1.191 I have known a twelve stone man go down to nine stone five | Shaw J 240 thirteen stone four (vg).

Hundredweight, pl unchanged, though -s also occurs. Weight probably is to be considered as a kind of sub-junct (two hundred [pounds] weight), cf. the old spelling: 2 or 300 weight of iron (Defoe R 99). A modern example: Quiller M 131 from two to three hundredweight.

Pennyweight(s).

Tun, ton pl now generally -s; but Ml J 980 a hundred tun of wine | Farquhar B 316 ten tun of ale | Spect 17 fifteen persons weighed above three tun | ib. 118 fifty tun of tobacco | Defoe R 2.137 two ton of iron | Kipl L 125 fifteen ton of coal. — Cf. Appendix p. 490.

Ounce, dram, grain and other weights always have the pl in -s.

Words indicating money

3.64. Pound, see 3.63.

Mark: Caxton R 20,41 a thousand marke. Thus also twice in Sh, who has generally marks. In modern usage always marks (in speaking of German coin).
3.64—3.71. Other Unchanged Plurals. 63


Bob (slang = 'shilling') always pl unchanged, e.g. Di D 312, X 40.

Quid (slang = 'pound'), pl unchanged Kipl L 153 | Shaw Pur 264 | Vachell H 198.

3.65. A few isolated examples of unchanged plurals in similar words:

BJo 3.27 it doubles the twelve caract [= carat] | AV Judges 14.12 thirtie change of garments; but Gen 45.22 fiue changes of raiment. — Cf. p. 490.

Besides measures mentioned above, Elphinstone 1765 (i. 228) gives also as unchanged in the plural: chaldron (cf. NED 1664). bushel. last (cf. NED 1583, 1712). coil (of ropes). load (cf. NED 1533).

For horsepower and pennyworth see 7.3.

Other Unchanged Plurals

3.7. The following instances present somewhat complicated features, and one may in some cases hesitate whether to place them here or with sg words of mass (5.2).

3.71. Horse is an old neuter, and as such had its plural unchanged (OE and Ch hors); this is retained to some extent in ModE. Malory has hors (157) and horses (111); Greene F 5.5 has post-horse pl, Shakespeare has the pl horse some ten times (e.g. Gent III. 1.265 a teeme of horse shall not plucke that from me); the form is even found in Byron (Maz 17 a thousand horse—and none to ride!). But the analogical form horses, which is found as early as the 13th c. and which was the usual form with Sh, is now the only one in use in speaking of the animal. Horse, however, is used in the sense 'horse soldiers, cavalry', also with a numeral. The present distinction is seen clearly in the Macaulay quotation below.
Hall (1548, NED) king Henry with a _fewe horse_ | (Sh)

Edw3 II. 2.31 I haue . . . leuied _those horse and foote_. Then let _those foote_ trudge hence upon _those horse_ | Sh R3 V.

3.294 My foreward Consisting equally of _horse and foot_ | Sh All IV. 3.170 Fiue or six _thousand horse_ | Mi SA 1618

Both _horse and foot_ before him and behind | Macaulay H 2.177 The royal troops fired such a volley of musketry as sent the rebel _horse_ flying in all directions . . . their _horses_ were unused, not only to stand fire, but to obey the rein. A few minutes after the Duke's _horse_ had dispersed themselves, his infantry came up running fast . . . The Life Guards scattered in an instant some of Grey's _horse_, who had attempted to rally.

3.72. _Foot_ is used in the signification 'foot soldiers, infantry', also with a numeral:

Sh H4B II. 1.186 _Fifteene hundred foot_, fiue hundred horse Are march'd up | Fielding T 2.135 two companies of _foot_ | Macaulay H 2.161 The _foot_ were divided into six regiments | ib. 2.175 The _foot_ were led by Monmouth himself. The _horse_ were confided to Grey | ib. 177 the King's _foot_ were hastily forming in order of battle.

3.73. _Craft_ from the meaning 'skill, trade acquires also that of 'boat(s), vessel(s)'; apparently (see NED) at first in _small craft_ = boats of small craft, i.e. small trading vessels; then _craft_ collectively = vessels, and at last also individually in the same sense, with a sg = 'boat, vessel', from which a new pl _crafts_ is occasionally formed (NED examples in s from 1775 and 1871):

Macdonald F 281 three or four such tiny _craft_ | Doyle G 33 two great ugly lugger-like _craft_ . . . the three _craft_ | Shaw P 215 waters crowded with other _craft_.

3.74. The explanation of these combinations is perhaps to be sought in some such conversations as these: "How many people have they?" "4000." "What kind?" "Foot"—then condensed: "4000 foot". Or "how many vessels?" "Twenty". "Small craft or large ships?"—then condensed: "twenty small craft". Cf. also Di T 1.271
the guard, horse and foot [≡ horse g. and foot g.] surrounded him. In the case of horse and foot, the old use of these forms in the plural (in other senses, 3.62, 3.71) may of course have been a concurring motive for the use of these forms after numerals.

3.75. Cannon has the pl cannons, often in Sh, now not so frequent (Sattler, ESt 12.370f. has six instances from recent NP); besides cannon is used as a sg of mass, and now also as the pl of cannon, with a numeral:

Sh John II. 382 let France and England mount Their battering cannon charged to the mouthes | Defoe R 212 like pieces of cannon | ib. 215 I loaded all my cannon, as I called them | Franklin 132 some old cannon . . . these not being sufficient | By DJ 7.12 two-and-thirty cannon | Macaulay H 1.231 cannon were planted round Whitehall | Kipl J 1.223 the screw-guns are tiny little cannon made in two pieces | (NP q) The three old British cannon sunk off Plozisel were recovered during the recent low tides. The Mayor has asked government permission to place these cannons at the front of the monument. But gun, rifle, musket, pistol are never used collectively or unchanged in the plural.

3.76. Sail besides the meaning 'single piece of canvas' with the ordinary pl sails has the signification 'mass of sails, all the sails of a vessel': she carries much sail | under sail, under all sail | Macaulay (NED) the Dutch armament had run full sail down the Channel | Fox M 1.133 a ship in full sail. (Note that the quantity of sail a ship carries is dependent not only on the number of sails, but also on their superficies, whether reefed, etc.) | Defoe R 2.205 we set sail.

Finally, sail is used (cf. foot, etc.) with a numeral = so many sailing-vessels: a fleet of thirty sail. The oldest quotation for this pl sail is from 1458. Also ten sail of ships | Quiller-Couch M 5 two hundred sail of coasters. (Formerly also sails in this sense, see NED 4a quotations 1436, 1480, 1568, 1649.)
Kind, etc

3.81. With words signifying sort we often find seeming irregularities of number. Some of these may be explained by old s-less plurals, as in kin = OE cynn (not found in this usage in ModE, though common in earlier times) and kind = OE (ge)cynd(e) neuter and fem. All manner might be explained as a sg combination (all = ‘every’), though I am more inclined to take it from the very first as pl, as maner(e) is found very early in the pl (AR 10 two manere of men | 50 þre manere crevices, etc. | Ch HF 1197, 1219 etc. | Caxton R 82 thre maner colours | frequent in Malory) whatever may be the explanation of that form. In that kind of thing we may have a survival of the old s-less pl of thing. The old construction without of has now completely disappeared. The usual construction is now to keep kind, sort (and manner) unchanged, and to use before them the sg form (that, this) if the word following of is (apparently or really) sg, but the pl (those, these) if it is pl in form. But the irregular constructions are by many considered “grammatically incorrect” and therefore avoided in careful literary language, which prefers e.g. books of that kind to the colloquial those kind of books. In the latter, the popular feeling treats kind of, sort of as one word, which here is an adjunct, while in I kind of admire (vg) it is a subjunct.

3.82. Examples with manner:

More U 158 all maner of thynges | Sh H6A I. 3.74 all manner of men | Bacon A 41.26 all manner of reflexions | Mi A 19 by reading all manner of tractats | Carlyle S 4 fish in all manner of waters, with all manner of nets | Ru Sel 1.10 all manner of strange shapes | Gissing B 182 all manner of benefits.

Many other examples with all from Caxton, Malory, Dickens, MacCarthy, Black, Kipling, Mark Twain, Norris, Doyle, Swinburne, Holmes, etc. The only modern
examples without all that I have noted, are Ruskin Sel 2.219 how many manner of eyes are there? | Mill in Fox 1.164 to imagine what manner of persons they might be.

Manners, in the sense of ‘kinds’ is rare, see NED 1400, 1651, and 1674.

The sb after manner (of) may, though not so often, be in the sg: Malory 96 ther was daunsynge and mysntalsysye and alle maner of Joye | AV Matth 10.1 all maner of sickenesse, and all maner of disease | Austen P 188 wish him all manner of evil | Fox 1.50 he does papa all manner of honour.

In the following example, the sg manner induces the following sg: Norris O 141 all manner and description of flowers.

3.83. Examples with kind:

(1) these, those: Sh Lear II. 2.107 these kind of knaues | Tw N I.5.95 these set kinde of fooles | Swift J 150 if you read those kind of things | Goldsm 652 these kind of things | Austen S 246 The impertinence of these kind of scrutinies | Sw Elb 9.8 dijz kaind av tuwlz.

That kind of thing: Trollope D 1.50, 214, 2.42, 3.98. This kind of things (rare): Gissing R 248 (followed by: is mere futile effort).

(2) other adjectives: Sh As II. 3.10 some kinde of men | Shr I. 1.247 in all kind of. companies | Spect 14 Respect to all kind of superiours | Austen S 250 They are very well-behaved, good kind of girls | Ru Sel 1.47 such kind of duties.

Examples of kinds in similar constructions: Sh (only once) Tp III. 1.2 some kindes of basenesse | Defoe R 3 all kind [NB] of vertues and all kinds of enjoyment | Sterne 12a in these kinds of fancies of his | Austen S 286 I know so little of these kinds of forms | Holmes A 187 these kinds of exercise || Ru Sel 1.410 not only for art’s sake, but for all kinds of sake. — Cf. p. 490.

3.84. With sort Shakespeare has only the regular construction (Macb I. 7.33 all sorts of people), which is
also frequent in the 19th c. (Beaconsf L 463 did all sorts of things), but from the 18th c. those sort of is found very often indeed:

(1) these, those: Spect 124 Will Honeycomb is one of those sort of men who are very often absent | Swift J 19 it is by these sort of ways that fools get preferment | Fielding 3.527 these sort of great personages | Austen E 164 at those sort of discoveries | Di N 206 These sort of people are glad to sleep anywhere | Hewlett O 442 These sort of speeches | Wells T 116 these ingenious sort of men | Other ex. in Trollope, Fox, Mered., Haggard, Benson, Norris, etc.

That sort of thing is found, for instance, Beaconsf L 201 | Thack P 1.133, 223, 243 | GE Mm 208 | Trollope D 1.149 | Harraden F 116 | Swinburne L 114 | MacCarthy 2.5 | Hope In 269 | White N 163.

This sort of thing in By DJ 1.212 | Di Ch 122 | Di D 45 | Wells T 37.

Those sort of things By DJ 14.66.

(2) other adjectives: Fielding T 3.169 they are very honest sort of people | Austen E 22 the friends . . . though very good sort of people | Harraden D 73 they are rough, ignorant sort of creatures. — Cf. Appendix p. 490.

3.85. As this usage cannot well be separated from the loose insertion of sort (kind) of before a singular (with or without the indefinite article), I mention this phenomenon here, though it is really no example of the 'unchanged plural'.

Fielding T 1.175 a loose kind of a fellow | ib. 4.280 a very good sort of a man | Sterne 11b your knowledge of my character and of what kind of a mortal I am | Austen M 38 Mr R is a very good sort of young man | Austen P 22 Lady Lucas was a very good kind of woman | Keats Agnes 27 In sort of wakeful swoon, perplex'd she lay | Beaconsf L 354 a kind of cousin of the Queen | GE M 1.76 quite a gentleman sort o' man | Thack S 151 this sort of man is scarcely found anywhere but in Clubs |

Austey V 171 He led a nightmare sort of existence
Black Pr 1.77 Ingram was a very good sort of fellow.

Hence, through sort of (a) fellow, sort by itself comes
to mean ‘fellow’ in colloquial language:

Cambridge Tr 125 Toyler isn’t a bad sort after all
Ward D 2.69 Dora L. was a real good sort.

Some Cases of Doubtful Number

3.91. I see survivals of the old unchanged neuter
pl word in phrases like send him word (e.g. Sh Cæs III.
2.95) and by word of mouth (e.g. Di Do 301); but now
of course this is felt to be a sg form:

Bac A 32.4 There is word come to the governour
Defoe R 2.65 he brings word that . . . | GE A 280 I might
write her word after a while, how we went on | Di Do
354 word was left about some alterations in her room |
ib. 355 she gave the word to go on | Hardy W 114 did
your mistress leave word where she was going?

3.92. Knee is sometimes used so as to suggest
rather the plural signification (nearly = ‘lap’); this may
be a survival of the old neuter pl cnēow: Lyly C 323
Thankes to your Maiestie on bended knee | Sh Cæs II.
2.54 upon my knee | ib. II. 2.80 | Di Ol 422 these joyous
little faces that clustered round her knēe.

3.93. When bone is used in the sense ‘all the
bones of the body’ we may think of a survival of the
old unchanged pl (OE bān), but the usage may also be
partly due to the frequent collocation with the mass-word
flesh: AV 2Sam 19.13 Art thou not of my bone, and of
my flesh? But ib. 19.12 Yee are my bones and my
flesh | what is bred in the bone will out in the flesh (in
Heywood: It will not out of the fleshe that is bred in
the bone) | Mi PL 8.493 I now see Bone of my bone,
flesh of my flesh (but Gen. 2.23 bone of my bones) |
Thack N 132 he was but skin and bone when he died.
(Now also skin and bones) | GE A 31 Nature knits us togeth-
er by bone and muscle.
Chapter IV

The Meaning of Singular and Plural

Preliminary Survey

4.11. After thus having disposed of the more formal questions connected with the two numbers, we approach the question of the function or use of singular and plural in substantives, by which various nuances of the idea of number are expressed. In the first place we have those plurals which may be called the normal or ordinary plurals, as horses in three horses meaning (one) horse + (a second) horse + (a third) horse. Here we have several individual objects of the same kind. This class presents very few difficulties, though there are some cases in which the choice of singular or plural may be doubtful, see 4.2. — Cf. vol. VII Index s. v. Number.

What objects can be counted together, depends on the classification expressed linguistically. In many cases the classification is so natural that it is practically identical in most languages; but there are in some cases differences called forth by varieties in linguistic structure. Thus in English there is no difficulty in saying “Tom and Mary are cousins”, as cousin means both a male and a female cousin; Danish has different words, and therefore must say “T. og M. er fætter og kusine”, and it is impossible exactly to translate five cousins into Danish. On the other hand English has no comprehensive term for what the Germans call geschwister, Dan. søskende. Sometimes, however, a numeral is placed before such a collocation as brothers and sisters: they have ten brothers and sisters (Taine, Notes 69), which may be = 2 brothers + 8 sisters or any other combination. Thus also J. Strange Winter, First Book 244 a very large family—about ten girls and
boys | seven sons and daughters | we have twenty cocks and hens (= Dan. tyve hons) | fifteen ladies and gentlemen = x ladies + (15 − x) gentlemen.

We may address an assembly as Ladies and Gentlemen! even if there is among them only one lady (or only one gentleman). This use of the plural goes back to primitive ages, see a learned article by H. Möller in Zs. f. deutsche Wortforschung IV 95 ff.

To these normal plurals we must also refer plurals of proper names, though in certain respects they approach the fourth class (differentiation), see 4.4.

4.12. Second, the plural denotes several individual objects not exactly of the same kind, though similar, as in the sixties = 60 + 61 + 62 . . . . This category will be treated in 4.5; I term it "plural of approximation".

4.13. Third, we have what might be called the plural of social inequality, by which one person either speaks of himself or addresses another person in the plural. We thus have in the first person the ‘plural of majesty’, by which kings and similarly exalted persons say we instead of I. The verbal form used with this we is the plural, but in the 'emphatic' pronoun with self a distinction is made between the normal plural ourselves and the half-singular ourself. Thus frequently in Sh, e.g. Hml I. 2.122 Be as our selfe in Denmarke | Mcb III. 1.46 We will keepe our selfe till supper time alone. (In R2 III. 2.127, where modern editions have ourselves, the folio has our selfe; but in R2 I. 1.16, Fl has our selues). Outside the plural of majesty, Sh has twice our selfe (Meas. II. 2.126, LL IV. 3.314) 'in general maxims' (Sh-lex.).

When journalists use we instead of I ('the editorial we'), they use it as a real plural, with ourselves.

In the second person the plural of social inequality becomes a plural of politeness or deference: ye, you instead of thou, thee; this has now become universal without regard to social position, see 2.8.
The use of *us* instead of *me* in Scotland and Ireland (Murray D 188, Joyce Jr 81) and also in familiar speech elsewhere may have some connexion with the plural of social inequality, though its origin is not clear to me.

4.14. In the fourth place, the plural may be more or less differentiated in sense from the singular, as in *draughts* (the game). See 4.6.

4.15. In the fifth place, a plural may denote a composite object, as in *scissors*, which is not = one scissor + another scissor ..., or + something else. The sg here does not exist, or exists in a different signification, in which case the word properly belongs to the preceding class. See 4.7.

Not unfrequently it is a matter of choice whether an object is to be considered single, requiring the singular number, or composite, requiring the plural. Thus English and French have the pl *scissors, ciseaux*, where Danish has the sg *sax*. Even in the same language we may sometimes find varying appreciations. Thus what to one Englishman is a *pair of moustaches*, to another is a *moustache*; the NED defines a *moustache* as (a) the hair on both sides of the upper lip, (b) the hair covering either side of the upper lip: a little gentleman with a dyed moustache (a); he twirled first one moustache and then the other (b). In former times *mustachio(s)* with numerous more or less fantastic spellings; also Marlowe J IV 1744 *a muschatoes*.

4.16. A sixth class consists of words which at the same time are in one respect singulars as denoting units, in another respect plurals as denoting more than one thing or person. These words are the so-called collectives (4.8 and 9), and together with them we shall consider other ways of expressing higher units comprising several distinct objects, see 5.1.

4.17. Next, we have what are here called mass-words, such as *gold, bitter, milk* (material mass-words), and *pride, truth* (immaterial mass-words). Here such
notions as singular and plural are strictly speaking inapplicable; hence some mass-words are formally singular, as those mentioned above, others formally plural, as dregs, measles. Various interesting features concerning the numerical use of these words will be mentioned in 5.2.

4.18. To denote a whole class, sometimes the sg (man is mortal) and sometimes the pl (men were deceivers ever) is used, as will be seen in 5.4.

4.19. Finally we shall deal with the use in some cases of a common or neutral number, and with some peculiarities in the employment of numbers which it has not been possible to include in any of the preceding classes, see 5.5ff. — Cf. Appendix p. 490.

The Normal Plural

4.21. As already stated, the normal meaning of the plural number is that of designating several individual objects included (linguistically) under the same kind; the plurality may, or may not, be indicated by means of qualifying adjuncts: three horses | many children | London and New York are big cities | those are photos of my daughters, etc.

4.22. A substantive with two or more adjectives (or other adjuncts) joined by and and indicating each a separate thing or individual is fairly regularly put in the plural: the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries [= the 18th century and the 19th century] | the English and French nations | the Old and New Worlds | the East and West Coasts of Africa | Chesterton F 217 the second and third fingers | NP '11 the Labour and Irish parties | NP '11 at the corner of Wall and Nassau Streets | Dobson F 28 the Haymarket and Drury Lane companies | Zangwill G 131 between the first and second calls | Thack P 31 between the ages of sixteen and eighteen.

In German and Danish the sg is here used: das achtzehnte und neunzehnte jahrhundert | det attende og nittende århundrede. The use in English of the (logical)
plural is facilitated by the fact that the definite article is the same in both numbers, and that the same is true of the adjectives, too, so that no conflict is felt as would be the case if we had in G. *das achtzehnte und neunzehnte jahrhunderte*. Cf. below 4.25 on substantives with the indefinite article, where for the same reason the sg is used.

4.23. The plural form is also found in some cases, where the adjectives are joined by means of other words than *and*:

Emerson Hist. E. Lang. 203 until the last of the sixteenth or beginning of the seventeenth centuries | Wilde In 198 the history of England from the fourteenth to the sixteenth centuries | Chesterton F 110 collect the youth of the neighbourhood up to the *ages* of ten or twelve.

4.24. The sg form, however, is by no means rare, especially when more stress is laid on the separation than on the joining of the two individuals of the same species; thus regularly when we speak of a distinction *between* X and Y (in which case, indeed, we might say that we have an *and* different from the usual additive *and*): Wilde P 69 the real distinction between the classical and romantic *movement* | Macaulay E 4.41 the difference between Asiatic and European *morality* | ib. 4.19 hesitating between a military and a commercial *life* | Stevenson MP 3 In French colonies . . . there is . . . a lively contact between the dominant and the dominated *race* | Coleridge Sh 233 a parallel between the ancient and modern *stage*, the stages [N.B.] of Greece and of England. — Cf. p. 490.

4.25. The sg is regularly found when the indefinite article is repeated with each adjunct:

Collingwood R 143 two styles essentially distinct . . . a speaking and a writing *style* | Kipl J 2.117 there were two, an upper and a lower *shoal* | Hardy F 382 anxiety recognizes a better and a worse *alternative*.

In such cases the type most often used is: a *grey horse* and a *black one*; with the sb taken to the first adj. and afterwards repeated by *one*. 
4.26. Other examples of the sg:

Bacon A 13.17 the canonicall bookes of the old and new testament | GE A 181 no better lyrics than he could find in the Old and New Version | Macaulay H 1.30 before the limits of legislative, executive, and judicial power have been traced with precision | Vachell H 250 His grandfathers on the maternal and paternal side | Bradley M 97 In the sixteenth and to a great extent in the seventeenth century | Seeley E 54 we see in the seventeenth and still more in the eighteenth century a period.—In the last two quotations the reason of the sg is the qualifying addition to the second adjective. — Cf. p. 491.

In many instances, obscurity can be avoided by the use of the sg in such collocations. The expression “in the third and fourth chapters” (Wells A 212) gives rise to no ambiguity because there is only one third chapter and one fourth chapter, but if in Macaulay H 1.3 “In this, and in the next chapter, I have seldom thought it necessary to cite authorities” the pl chapters had been similarly used, the reader would naturally have taken the words “next chapters” as applying to more than one chapter. Thackeray writes, N 81, “the old and young gentlemen beguiled their way”, and only the context shows us that this is = the old gentleman and the young one; but in V 70 he is careful to use the sg form to avoid misunderstandings: “The elder and younger son of the house of Crawley were never at home together”. (Note here the pl of the verb, as also in the following quotation).

The sg may sometimes be necessary or desirable to avoid certain disturbing associations, as in the following sentences, where lives, spirits, and middle-ages would be easily mis-interpreted: Shaw 2. XI Public and private life become daily more theatrical | Collingwood R 163 he had to discuss the Mediaeval and Renaissance spirit | Archer A 61 both reputable and disreputable middle-age are amply represented || Ru P 1.113 He knew Latin,
German and French *grammar* (cf. ib. 114 spending his evenings in compiling French and German *grammars*).

4.27. The *sg* is always found in the case of a proper name common to two or more persons: *Mr. and Mrs. Brown, Professor and Miss Todd, Charles and Mary Lamb*, etc.

Cp. on the other hand, *the two Miss Johnsons = the two Misses Johnson* (see 2.38).

4.28. The *pl* form of a substantive is used after a compound numeral ending with *one* (cf. on the other hand the ‘attraction’ in German *tausend und eine nacht*):

*twenty-one years | the Thousand-and-one Nights* (an older construction is seen in Stevenson VP 137 a thousand times and one).

Thus also after *half* and other fractions: Darwin L 1.379 *two and a half hours* (= two hours and a half) | Kipl Phant. R. 3 *one man to take the work of two and a half men* | Frank Fairl. 1.57 *about fifteen-and-a-half hands high* | Hardy F 169 *three-and-a-half pounds* | Zangwill G 65 *two strides of one and a half feet* | Ridpath, Hist. U. S. 557 *three and a third square miles* | NP '88 *once in every sixteen and a fraction words* . . . . one first personal pronoun in every twelve and a fraction words. || NP 11 over one million and a half women (*half = half a million*).

**Characteristics of Several Individuals**

4.31. “*We had made up our minds not to make this history public during our joint lives*” (Haggard She 3). In such cases it is usual to employ the plural of a substantive to indicate that each of the persons mentioned had his own mind, his own life, etc.:

Fielding T 1.39 *persons of different sexes* | Spencer Ed 6 *we have but span-long lives* | Sweet E 15 *our ancestors must have had good digestions* | their hearts leaped to their *mouths* | Di Do 477 *new horses being put on against their wills* | Anstey V 77 *they whispered under their breaths* | Stevenson M 284 *they were both counting*
their pulses | Shaw 2.15 we laughed at the other side of our mouths | Wells U 321 when we flatten down our little fingers on our palms, the fourth digit comes down halfway | people of limited incomes (sg one person's income = his annual receipts).

4.321. The pl may even be used where it cannot be easily justified from a logical point of view: Thackeray Ballads 80 The ladies took the hint, And all day were scraping lint, as became their softer genders [their gender, or sex, was the same]. See, however, my Progr. p. 290 note, and below, p. 491.

4.322. This pl was formerly frequent in cases where now the sg would generally be used:

Sh Merch III. 1.43 more [difference] betweene your bloods [the blood of Shylock and of Jessica] then there is betweene red wine and rennish | Sh R2 III. 3.107 by the royalties of both your bloods | Sh Hml I. 4.56 with thoughts beyond the reaches of our soules | Defoe P 84 innumerabble stories about the cruel behaviours and practices of nurses | Sh H8 III. 1.68 I thanke you both for your good wills | Defoe R 189 people who were here against their wills | Sh R2 IV. 1.316 so I were from your sights [see note in Clar. Pr. ed.] | Sh R3 IV. 1.25 bring me to their sights | GE A 292 she'll never go out of our sights | Sh Wint I. 1.23 they were trayn'd together in their childhoods; cf. ib. II. 1.110, Ado II. 1.397, Cor. III. 17, H6C IV. 1.45.

4.323. With leave usage is unsettled, though nowadays leave is always preferred, possibly on account of the ambiguity of leaves (pl of leaf):

Ml F(1616) 1778 wee'l take our leaues | Swift 3.290 the friends took their leaves | Di N 453 Nicholas and Tim took their leaves together | ib. 409 we will take our leaves | ib. 535 at length the two gentlemen took their leave.

4.324. Sake after a plural genitive is generally put in the plural:

Sh Wiv IV. 5.110 I haue suffer'd more for their 
sakes. | Swift T 57 for their 
sakes | Di DC 34 for our 
own 
sakes.—But Sh LL IV. 3.359 for mens sake ... or 
womens sake.

Similarly Sh Alls III. 1.22 for your 
auailes they fell | 
Hughes T 74 for all of your 
benefits.

4.33. With such words as life and death, the sg 
and pl often express different ideas: their married life 
was 
a singularly happy one (in speaking of a married couple)— 
their married lives were led under totally different 
circum-
stances (in speaking of two brothers):

Sh As II. 1.15 this our life, exempt from publike 
haunt, Finds tongues in trees | Sh Cäs II. 2.32 cowards 
dye many times before their deaths [now rather sg?] | 
Sh H5 II. 2.178 Get you therefore hence, Poore misery-
able wretches, to your death [they are going to die to-
gether] | GE A 254 he knew little of the life of men in 
the past [= manner of living; lives would be = bio-
ographies] | Kipl J 2.118 many people are otherwise. 
Their life is on the land | Defoe P 56 to the saving of 
their lives, and restoring their health | Haggard S 73 an 
undertaking which could only end in our deaths in this 
ghastly land | Shaw C 133 Such a party might be formed 
a week after our marriage—will, I think, be formed a 
long time before our deaths | Doyle S 3.88 our whole 
lives are at stake in this. — Cf. Appendix p. 491.

Cf. also MI T 2331 Their faiths, their honors, and 
their religion [they had the same religion] | Caine E 176 
ladies in light dresses, soldiers in uniform [the ladies’ 
dresses were different, but the uniforms alike; cf. "they 
all arrived in evening dress"].

But the distinction is not always observed, as seen 
in the following examples:

Caxton R 24 the kynge shal take alle your liuys 
fro yow | ib. 45 though it sholde touche their lyf | ib. 87 
as they that were aferd of their lyf | Sh R2 III. 1.7 
I will vnfold some causes of your deaths | ib. III. 2.156
sad stories of the death of kings | Sh Merch I. 2.31 holy men at their death haue good inspirations | Caine S 2.128 who could say that the spirits of the dead did not haunt the scenes of their lives and death? | More U. has the sg life on p. 225, 253, but lives 224 without any clear distinction. Perhaps deaths is sometimes avoided for phonetic reasons [ps].

4.34. Healths is found in the pl in speaking of toasts in honour of more than one person:
Hughes T 1.69 drinking the healths of those who are going to leave | Beaconsf L 252 his proposition of the ladies’ healths.
But in colloquial English, most people would here say health to avoid the sound group [lps]; and outside of that phrase, health is certainly preferred even in speaking of several persons: Macaulay E 4.295 their health gave way.

4.35. In some set phrases the sg is invariably used even with reference to a plural subject. A typical instance is women with child as the plural of a woman with child = ‘a pregnant woman’ (with child is an adjunct and as such invariable), while women with children would mean ‘women together with children’ or ‘mothers of families’:
More U 162 as many tymes happeneth to women with chylde (also 202) | Sh John III. 1.89 let wiues with childe Pray that their burthens may not fall this day | Fielding 3.385 timorous women with child | Defoe R 2.215 three sows big with pig || Haggard S 52 the three of us baled away for dear life | ib. 177 the Arabs took their women to wife | Matthews F 61 afraid they might catch their death of cold | Macaulay H 2.159 they lost heart when the critical time drew near | most men have an eye for beauty in women | women generally have a better ear for music than men. — Cf. Appendix p. 491.

4.36. In nexus tertiaries, the sg is used even in speaking of several subjects: Three men came marching
along, pipe in mouth and sword in hand = with (or having) pipes in their mouths and swords in their hands.

4.37. The following examples show the sg without any apparent reason:

Sh H5 V. 2.295 the libertie that followes our places stoppes the mouth of all finde-faults | Mi SA 192 in prosperous days [friends] swarm, but in adverse withdraw their head | Defoe P 41 to know their fortune, or, as it is vulgarly expressed, to have their fortunes told them | GE A 357 the all-conquering feeling in the mind both of father and son | Stevenson D 30 their whole soul was fixed on the dead carcass | Barrie T 166 we are simple creatures, and yearn to be loved for our face | Haggard S 302 what I do wonder at is that we escaped at all with our reason [= mentally sane; reasons might be misunderstood].

4.381. When exchange (change) means ‘interchange, give and receive reciprocally’, the object is put in the pl:

Shall we exchange seats? | Sh As I. 3.93 Wilt thou change fathers? I will giue thee mine | Gissing B 245 she found herself changing places with the daughter | Goldsm 617 you’re so plaguy shy, that one would think you had changed sexes | I changed hats with him.

But otherwise the sg may (or must) be used, as in they changed colour.

4.382. In some set phrases the pl also denotes reciprocity, as cross swords with, touch glasses with, shake hands with someone: he shook hands with her (as both their right hands are shaken); but of course also: he shook her by the hand (sg).

Plurals of Proper Names

4.4. When a plural is formed from a proper name, this evidently by that very fact loses its strict character of a proper name. As such it ‘denotes’ one single individual and (to the hearer who understands the name, i.e. who knows what individual is referred to) it
'connotes' all those characteristics by which that individual is recognized. In this complete sense a plural is unthinkable. If in the course of a conversation I mention John, I want to call up the image of one definite individual, and in that sense there is only one "John" in existence in spite of the fact that there are several other individuals bearing that name. But each of these is a John, and in that sense ('an individual called John') a plural is perfectly natural. If the John mentioned is characterized by one quality (sagacity, or meanness, or whatever it may be) and if those I am talking to know this as well as I do, I may be easily understood if I say in referring to his younger brother Tom, "he will be another John some day"—and in that sense too a plural may be formed (4.43). In all cases except that mentioned in 4.42 we may thus have a singular with the indefinite article in the same sense; the change in signification is thus already found in one application of the 'proper name' in the sg, and (always with 4.42 as an exception) the plural is a 'normal plural' in the sense defined 4.11. It will therefore be evident that the superscription of this section is not strictly correct; but it is clear enough to serve its purpose. — Cf. PhilGr p. 69.

4.41. The plural of a personal name may in the first place denote two or more individuals bearing the same name (either accidentally, or by reason of their belonging to the same family):

In the party there were three Johns and four Marys | the Stuarts | Di N 594 There can't be two Vincent Crummleses [= two persons of that name].

4.42. But ib. 603 we have the same pl used in a second sense: he took farewell of the Vincent Crummleses [= the family whose head was Mr. V. C.].

The transition between (1) and (2) is seen when only the family name is mentioned, as in Fox 2.55 the Carlyles had been to see it [= Mr. and Mrs. C.]. But as the wife is often called by her husband's Christian
name plus family name (Mrs. Henry Spinker), we have really the first category in Di D 346 Immense deference was shown to the Henry Spinkers, male and female. And it is only when the John Philpesses comprise the children as well as the parents that we have a clear instance of (2) and may refer it to the plural of approximation (4.5).

It is noteworthy that the ending s might here really (apart from the spelling which may be arbitrary) just as well be the genitive as the plural ending. This is shown by other languages; in German s is used in the same meaning (for instance Schnitzler, Weg ins freie 25, wo die Rosners wohnten ... Rosners waren zu hause); this evidently is the genitive ending (see Wilmanns, Deutsche Gr. III, p. 401) though it may (in North Germany) be often felt to be the Low German plural ending; see Polle, Wie denkt das volk über die sprache 74, who relates a case in which a party were mentioned as "Schulzes sind dagewesen" though the party comprised not a single Schulze, but only distant relations of other names staying with the Schulze family. In Danish Hansens means the Hansen family, but this genitive case may be preceded by an adjective in the plural, as in J. Fibiger Levnet 198 Da jeg kom tilbage, var de gamle Suhrs døde. For the corresponding phenomena in Swedish cf. Sprak och Stil VII 127 and 243. In French the plural article is used: les Paul ont été ici = M. Paul et Mme Paul (et leurs enfants).

Note that in the genitive plural the definite article is the only mark of plurality in the spoken language:

Austen M 41 The Miss Bertrams' admiration of Mr. C. | ib. 185 the first fortnight after the Miss Bertrams' going away | Hardy L 134 the great interest of the Jolliffes' married life | ib. 147 the asylum of the Lesters' house | Aldrich S 257 I spent the evening at the Slocums'.

4.43. Third, the pl of a proper name may mean: people like N., as in:

Shakespeares and Leonardo da Vincis will always be rare
in any generation | Carlyle F 2.97 Benvenuto Cellini gives more insight into Italy than *fifty* Leo Tenths would do | Carlyle Fox 1.270 there are thoughts in Goethe which a *dozen* Wordsworths could not see into | Bennett B 121 The *Mr. Jacksons* of this world never die till they are hung | Gissing R 166 *Edisons* and *Marconis* may thrill the world with astounding novelties (cf. in the sg id. G 95 surely some *Edison* would make the true automaton) | Gibbon M 69 the marvellous tales which are so boldly attested by the Basils and Chrysostoms, the Austins and Jeroms (here probably in imitation of French *les Basiles*, etc.).

4.44. Fourth, a proper name may by metonymy stand for a work by N., as in *two Turners* = two pictures by Turner (sg *a Turner*). Thackeray seems to avoid this plural in the case of a name ending in *s*, as he writes (V 396) the magnificent *Vandykes*; the noble *Reynolds’ pictures*.

4.45. Plurals of geographical names may be employed in various corresponding senses:

McCarthy 2.414 no answer was made by either of the *Canadas* (= Upper Canada and Lower Canada; now no more used) | there are just a *few Manchesters* throughout the world | NP (NED) a Conference of all the *Englands* over sea | most big cities have their *Whitechapels* | many people who have had their *Austerlitzes*, dread their *Waterloos*.—*The Hebrides* and other geographical names mentioned 4.74 are not cases in point, as they are not plurals of proper names, but plural proper names.

Plural of Approximation

4.51. *The sixties* (cf. 4.12) has two meanings, first the years from 60 to 69 inclusive in any century; thus Seeley E 249 the seventies and the eighties of the eighteenth century | Stedman Oxford 152 in the “Seventies” [i.e. 1870, etc.] | in the early forties = early in the forties. Second it may mean the age of any individual person, when he is sixty, 61, etc., as in Wells U 316 responsible action is begun
in the **early** twenties . . . Men marry before the middle thirties | Children's Birthday Book 182 While I am in the ones, I can frolic all the day; but when I'm in the tens, I must get up with the lark . . . When I'm in the twenties, I'll be like sister Joe . . . When I'm in the thirties, I'll be just like Mama.

**4.52.** The most important instance of this plural is found in the pronouns of the first and second persons: *we* = *I* + one or more *not-I*s. The pl *you* (*ye*) may mean *thou* + *thou* + *thou* (various individuals addressed at the same time), or else *thou* + one or more other people not addressed at the moment; for the expressions *you people*, *you boys*, *you all*, to supply the want of a separate pl form of *you* see 2.87.

A 'normal' plural of *I* is only thinkable, when *I* is taken as a quotation-word (cf. 3.2), as in Kipl L 66 he told the tale, the *I*—*I*—*I*s flashing through the record as telegraph-poles fly past the traveller; cf. also the philosophical plural *egos* or *me's*, rarer *I's*, and the jocular verse: Here am I, my name is Forbes, Me the Master quite absorbs, Me and many other *me's*, In his great Thucydides.

**4.53.** It will be seen that the rule (given for instance in Latin grammars) that when two subjects are of different persons, the verb is in "the first person rather than the second, and in the second rather than the third" (si tu et Tullia valetis, ego et Cicero valemus, Allen and Greenough, Lat. Gr. § 317) is really superfluous, as a self-evident consequence of the definition that "the first person plural is the first person singular plus some one else, etc." In English grammar the rule is even more superfluous, because no persons are distinguished in the plural of English verbs.

When a body of men, in response to "Who will join me?", answer "We all will", their collective answers may be said to be an ordinary plural (class 1) of *I* (= many *I*s), though each individual "we will" means really nothing more than "I will, and B and C . . . will, too" in conformity with the above definition. Similarly in a collective document: "We, the undersigned citizens of the city of . . ."
4.54. The plural *we* is essentially vague and in no wise indicates whom the speaker wants to include besides himself. Not even the distinction made in a great many African and other languages between one *we* meaning 'I and my own people, but not you', and another *we* meaning 'I + you (sg or pl)' is made in our class of languages. But very often the resulting ambiguity is remedied by an appositive addition; the same speaker may according to circumstances say *we* brothers, *we* doctors, *we* Yorkshiremen, *we* Europeans, *we* gentlemen, etc. Cf. also GE M 2.201 *we* people who have not been galloping. — Cf. for 4.51 ff. PhilGr p. 191 ff.

4.55. Other examples of the pl of approximation are the Vincent Crummleses, etc. 4.42. In other languages we have still other examples, as when Latin *patres* many mean *pater + mater*, Italian *zii = zio + zia*, Span. *hermanos = hermano(s) + hermana(s)*, etc.

The Differentiated Plural

4.61. In many cases the plural has a meaning which is more or less different from that of 'the same word' in the singular. Very often the pl form, besides this specific signification, may also retain the exact meaning of the sg. To show how difficult it is sometimes to draw the line between this class and the normal plural, I shall here give first some instances which seem to me to be 'normal'.

When *teas* means 'different kinds or varieties of tea' (cf. the difference between *much wine* and *many wines*), we have really a special signification of the word *tea*, which is found also in the sg as in "This is a different tea from the one we usually buy." (Thus correspondingly with many mass-words, 5.2). Still another signification of the substantives is seen in the waiter's *two teas and three coffees = two portions (cups) of tea*, etc.; here also we may have a singular *one tea*. Thus in Thack. H 17 two more tumblers, two more hot *waters*, and two more
goes of gin | Wells T 45 I'd had a bottle of champagne and perhaps two or three whiskies (cf. whisky-and-sodas, brandies-and-soda 2.57).

In Hope D 55 "Last night I met her at a dance. I had five dances with her", we have not a special signification of the grammatical category "plural", but the first dance is different from the second, viz. = 'ball'.

Thus also course in Thack N 604 during the whole course, or courses of the dinner.

Memory has three different meanings: (a) the faculty: my father's memory was excellent — he had an excellent m. | liars must have good memories | Wilde In 78 modern memoirs are generally written by people who have entirely lost their memories, — (b) what is remembered, repute: my father's memory is respected by all who knew him, — (c) an act or instance of remembrance: Shelley 613 Twining memories of old time.

4.62. But in the following instances we have a more specific differentiation of the plural (only rough definitions of the various significations are attempted):
advice 'counsel'; advices 'information', or 'sources of information': BJo 3.37 I had my advices here | By 586 my advices bring sure tidings | Caine E 482 their advices from official sources leave no doubt | McCarthy 2.51 the advices which some English journals showered upon the Government (to 5.34?).

air 'of the atmosphere'; airs 'haughty demeanour': give oneself airs.

argument. — See Appendix below, p. 491.

ash; ashes the usual form. Ash occurs as far back as the 13th c.; it is now used in scientific language (also in compounds like potash, bone-ash, volcanic ash) and in poetry (as in Kipl J 2.61 flat black ash by the altarstone), but in colloquial language only in the meaning 'ash of a cigar' as in Stevenson D 132 | Hope D 54 | Merriman S 65 Paul flicked the ash off his cigar.

attention 'power or fact of attending'; attentions; pay
The Differentiated Plural.

4.62. The Differentiated Plural.

at{}tentions to a lady, ‘court her’. Hope D 38 Didn’t you notice his attentions to anyone? In the latter signification, however, the sg may also be used.

ban ‘proclamation †, curse’; banns (note the different spelling) ‘notice of marriage’: to forbid the banns.

bearing various significations, esp. ‘carriage, behaviour’; bearings ‘position of a ship, etc.’: take one’s bearings.

bitter ‘ale’; bitters (see 5.751).

colour ‘tint’; colours ‘flag’.

compass ‘range’; compasses ‘instrument for describing circles’.

confidence ‘trust’; confidences ‘private communications’: Trollope D 1.24 then gradually there came confidences, — and at last absolute confidence.

custom; customs ‘duties’.

damage ‘injury’; damages ‘compensation for injury’.

decency ‘proper behaviour’; decencies ‘established acts of decorum’.

draught; draughts ‘game’.

force ‘strength’; forces ‘army’.

grace ‘attractiveness’, etc., graces ‘favour, good opinion’, as in Austen P 90 he was now high in her good graces.

heaven generally means ‘the region of God and the blessed’; heavens is poetical and generally means the physical sky, a meaning which is rarer in the sg; cf. Wordsworth P 3.161 to the broad ocean and the azure heavens | ib. 6.634 the unfettered cloud and region of the Heavens | Stevenson M 245 the arch of the blue heavens.

honour; honours at cards: honours easy; also take honours at a University (distinction at examination), and do the honours at an entertainment.

light; pl lights ‘understanding’: Henderson Sc. Lit. 60 Wyntoun was, according to his lights, a conscientious chronicler | Shaw C 209.


look ‘act of seeing’; looks ‘aspect’ (though the look of him = his looks): Di D 272 a second lady, with some
appearance of good looks | Stevenson JHF 60 when Utter-
son remarked on his ill looks | Herrick M 28 by the
looks of it, mother was right | Le Gallienne Young
Lives 69 Where in the world did you all get that grand
look of yours from — I don't mean your good looks
merely, but that look of distinction?

love, loves 'amours': Parker R 17 he had had acquain-
tances, but never friendships, and never loves or love |
Browning 2.199 For lo, advancing Hymen and his pomp!
Discedunt nunc amores, loves, farewell! Maneat amor,
let love, the sole, remain!

manner 'mode'; manners 'behaviour'. (Instead of the
different manners of doing this, say 'different ways').
moral 'of a story'; morals 'of an individual':

Seeley E 1 the history of England ought to end with
something that might be called a moral | Di N 3 Ralph
deduced from the tale the two great morals that... and
that... | Hawth S 289 Among many morals which press
upon us..., we put only this into a sentence: — Be
true! || Benson D 174 he'll corrupt my morals | Wells
U 205 the private morals of an adult citizen are no con-
cern for the State | Dickinson C 21 Your morals? Where
shall we find them?

number; numbers 'metre, poetry'. Sh Hml II. 2.120
I am ill at these numbers | Pope 274 I lisp'd in numbers,
for the numbers came.

order; orders 'state of clergyman': Gissing B 369 Peak
is about to take Orders. — Orders? For what? — Not
for wines. Peak is going to be ordained.

(organ; in the sense 'musical instrument' (a pair of)
organs was formerly in use, cf. Ch B 4041 the mery orgon
... that... gon; now an organ.)
pain; pains see 5.754.

part 'portion'; parts 'qualities', 'talent' as in Sh Alls
I. 2.21 thy fathers morall parts | Zangwill G 142 a man
of parts; or 'countries' as in Ritchie M 127 we had reached
foreign parts | Haggard's S 46.
physic 'medicine'; physics 'physical science'.

[power: Marriott Polit. Inst. 69 the legal powers of the Crown have been enormously extended by the rapid increase in the functions of government . . . But while the powers of the Crown have been increased, the power of the Crown has been rigorously curtailed | Wells T 8 an unreasonable disposition to imagine that when a man has powers he must necessarily have Power.]

premiss or premise ['premis] 'a statement from which an inference is drawn': Walker L 736 the premiss was right, but the conclusion was wrong; premises 'house with its ground', orig. in legal use 'the matters mentioned previously, the subject of a conveyance'.

[pretension: Swinb L 253 His father had twice his pretensions and less than half his pretension.—This may mean 'twice his solid claims and half his self-assertion.]

quarter 'fourth part'; quarters 'lodgings'; headquarters.

regard 'look, etc.'; regards 'greeting, in letter'; kind regards to John.

respect 'respectful feeling'; respects 'message, salutation': Austen P 123 'to pay my respects to him | Hope D 45.

return 'coming back'; returns 'official report, statistics'.
salt; salts 'smelling salts'.
sand; sands 'sandy tracts': Longfellow 3 Footprints on the sands of time. Quicksands Stevenson M 123.

scene; scenes 'stage', in the phrase behind the scenes.
sense 'common sense; one of the five senses'; senses also 'sensuality' (?): Defoe Pl 76 void of all sense, or at least government of her senses | Byron DJ 1.89 thus appeals To the good sense and senses of mankind | Crawford [q] It is a mistake to suppose that every one who has five senses has sense.
silk; silks 'silk garments'.

sky; skies esp. in the phrase praise (extol, exalt) to the skies, where it may have had the old meaning 'clouds', cf. Dan. have til skyerne, F aux nues. Di D 94 we exalted Steerforth to the skies | ib. 202 it lifted his mind . . . and
bore it into the skies | Shaw J 292 she has gone right up into the skies.


spectacle ‘sight’; spectacles ‘eye-glasses’.

spirit; spirits in two senses, as in Bell Essays and Postscr. 158 the custom of keeping up spirits by pouring spirits down.

trouble, as in an American story: I will see that you are well rewarded for your trouble [= ‘pains’] — yes, and your troubles [= ‘difficulties, embarrassment’].

vapour ‘steam’; vapours ‘fit of despondency’.

water; waters ‘springs’.

wit; wits originally ‘the five senses’ later ‘mind’ or ‘understanding’ as a whole: Caxton R 95 I had almost lost my fyue wyettes | Wilde W 12 as a concession to my poor wits | Di D 113 a weight that brooded on my wits, and blunted them | ib 235 Mr. Dick listening, with his poor wits calmly wandering God knows where.

work; works in various senses: ‘works of a watch’, cf. also fireworks. See also Stevenson A 64 all literary work, and chiefly works of art. Cf. on works sg 5.74.

writing ‘handwriting’; writings ‘written works’: his writing is legible, and his writings are quite readable.

Composite Objects, etc

4.7. Names of composite objects very often have a plural form, while the sg is not, or not often, used, at any rate in that sense; many words might with equal right be placed here and in 4.6. Cf. also plural mass-words 5.28.

4.71. Articles of dress, etc.

trousers with subspecies: drawers. breeches (5.792). knickerbockers or knickers. tights. pantaloons, and with more or less humorous synonyms: inexpressibles. unmentionables. unwisperables. indescribables, etc. Trouser sg is rare (Stevenson D 3 I have scarcely a decent trouser in my wardrobe).
4.71—4.74. Composite Objects, etc.

braces . suspenders.
spatterdashes.
stays . (bodice 5.712).
spectacles . (eye-glasses).
trappings.
academicals . regimentals . (widows') weeds.

4.72. Instruments or tools:
scissors (5.73) . shears . snuffers . pincers . tongs . tweezers.
forceps see 2.67.
bellows . gallows (5.712).
arms (arm sg is late and rare; weapon is the ordinary word).
fetters (sg fetter rare) . manacles (sg manacle rare).
compasses (4.62).
scales, the sg used of one of the dishes in which things are weighed, but also of the instrument as a whole. — On balance cf. below, p. 491.

4.73. To denote a single one of those objects that are composed of two equal or similar halves, the word pair is used: a pair of trousers, a pair of spectacles, a pair of scissors, a pair of tongs; etc. This affords the means of denoting several such objects: two pairs of trousers, three pairs of scissors, etc. But without this addition these words may stand for one or more objects: I wore blue trousers; all Danish soldiers wear blue trousers. In the latter sentence we may say that we have a plural (though undifferentiated) of the word as it appears in the former sentence.

4.74. Places, buildings, institutions, etc.:
archives, sg archive rare.
barracks, (5.741)
hustings, (ib).
shambles, (ib).

environs . outskirts . purlieus — all of them sometimes in the sg.
straits (the Straits of Gibraltar, etc.).
eaves, see 5.631.
stairs, generally pl, rare in the sg stair: Di N 729
he sat down upon a broken stair | Barrie MO 17 I would
call up the stair | Stevenson M 162 up a stone stair . .
and up more stairs again | ib. 170 a broad flight of marble
stairs . . several enclosed stairs led to the upper stor­
ey s | James S 102 She heard him on the stair | Chester­
ton F 213 a short winding stair; but ib. 241 down the
empty stairs. In the sg also in the original sense ‘step’
as Di T 1.276 dozing on the topmost stair. — See NED.

premises (4.62).
(head) quarters (4.62).

lodgings, generally in the pl, though the sg lodging
is by no means rare: Congreve 264 in the stage direction:
At Valentine’s Lodging, but 265 in the play: at his own
lodgings | Quincey 136 a decent lodging | Di D 143, 433,
579 lodging | Thack E 2.133 going to live in a lod­
ging | Stevenson D 110 lodgings, but 114 another lod­
ging, lodging also p. 116, 139, 140 | Caine M 340 in a
lodging | Gissing B 49 the lodging he had occupied | ib. 51
His lodgings were in an ugly street | ib. 54 it would have
led him to seek other lodgings | ib. 470 a cheap and
obscure lodging. — Always: board and lodging. — Lodgings
rare as a sg (5.741).

Here we may also mention such plural place-names
as the Hebrides | the West Indies (pl of the obsolete Indie,
Indie, now India) and the East Indies | the Bermudas | the
Netherlands | the Brazils (now usually Brazil sg). — But
most place-names with plural forms are now treated as
singles (5.742).

4.75. Parts of the body:
bowels . entrails . intestines . giblets . (posterior . genitals).
brains (5.752).
lights (the lungs) . withers:
gums (occasionally sg gum).
thews (orig meaning ‘manners, morals’, but from the
EIE period ‘sinews, muscular power’).
whiskers, sg whisker rare . (moustache see 4.15).
4.76. Doings, occupations (especially games):
nuptials (Sh often sg nuptial). obsequies. (funerals Sh in the sense of modern sg funeral).
billiards. bowls. dominoes. draughts. ninepins. quoits. skittles. (For chess see 5.711).
auspices.
matins (rarely sg as in Scott Poet. 310 No time for matin or for mass). vespers. — Cf. p. 492.
antics.
Here might be mentioned the words in -ics (5.775) theatricals.
annals (rare sg annal 'record for one year'). credentials. tidings.
Some verbal nouns in -ings scarcely occur except in the pl: doings. goings-on (apart from the employment in nexus clauses like on account of his doing that).

4.77. The word teens ( = 13, 14 up to 19) only occurs in the pl, as in Gissing B 167 she had long been out of her teens.

Collectives

4.811. A collective noun is defined in the NED as "a substantive which (in the singular) denotes a collection or number of individuals." We may accept this definition (though it does not always agree with the practice followed in that dictionary), and give as examples a library = 'collection of books', a train (railway-carriages), a forest (trees), a nation (men and women), an army (soldiers). All of these may be used with such words as one (one library, etc.), or that; and we may use them in the plural: libraries, trains, etc.

4.812. But other collectives cannot be thus used, e.g. cattle (= collection of oxen, etc.) or vermin (= small destructive animals). These latter approach mass-words (about which see 5.2); they take the verb in the pl as a matter of course:
Stevenson D 234 as the birds sing or cattle bellow | Kipl J 1.245 the cattle do not like it | Swift T 48 all other vermin were destroyed | -Kipl J 2.220 when the game are moving so well.

Examples with these, those (cf. 4.87): Norris P 339 those cattle (also Haggard S 306) | Fielding T 1.303 these vermin (also Doyle NP; Bookman 1911 p. 191).

Some of these words, however, were formerly used as singular words throughout: a game = a flock or herd, still sometimes in "a game of swans" (NED).

4.813. To return to the usual type of collectives. According as the idea of plurality is more or less prominent in the mind of the speaker, there is in all languages and at all times a tendency to forget the fact that collectives are grammatically singular, and we often find plural constructions, partial or total. It suffices here to remind the reader of the original collective (sg) character of the Arian (Greek and Latin) pl neutrers in -a (Latin opera, etc.), of the plural verb after F plupart (la plupart disent), and beaucoup (literally 'a fine stroke': beaucoup disent), etc. Two OE examples will suffice to show the antiquity of the tendency in English: Chron. 894 se dæl (sg) þæ þær aweg com (sg) wurdon (pl) on fleame generede (pl) | Apoll 26 seo (sg) burhwaru þa gelsæhton (pl) Strangulonem and his wif and læddon (pl) ut, etc. In ModE the tendency is perhaps stronger than in most other languages, because so few verb forms and hardly any adjective forms show any distinction at all between the two numbers. It should, however, be noticed that it is only with collectives denoting living beings that the pl construction is found: words like library or train never take the verb in the pl. And then also distance plays some part, the plural construction occurring more easily at some distance from the sg substantive (they in the next sentence, etc.) than in immediate contact with it.

4.814. In some cases the sg and pl conceptions are fairly distinct; with family, for instance, we may think
now of the group (of relatives) as one, opposed to other families (mine is an old family), and now less of the group than of the individuals composing it (my family are early risers).

Thus also clergy is either a body (of clergymen) or (a body of) clergymen, as in "whether it is better to have a clergy that marries than one that does not marry" on the one hand, and "the clergy were all opposed to the measure" on the other. But in other instances no such distinction is easily observabl

It is a matter of course that I give as examples of the two constructions only such as present some formal characteristic of either number. This is not always observed; in the NED, for instance, under clergy 2 a 'construed as collective plural', out of 11 quotations only one shows a formal pl (are).

4.821. The sg construction is seen in
Sh Hml II. 2.370 the nation holds it no sinne | Sh Oth I. 1.84 is all your familie within? | Pope Man 4.213 thy family is young | Notice (in NED) the public is expected to protect what is intended for the public enjoyment | Macaulay H 2.204 the government was dissatisfied with Kirke | NP '11 the Unionist party has a large task before it if it is to offer effective opposition | Bennett B 155 the yellow drawing-room, where Royalty receives its friends.

4.822. Examples of the verb in the pl:
Sh H6B IV. 2.13 The nobilitie thinke scorne to goe in leather aprons | Mcb IV. 3.141 There are a crew of wretched soules | Cor II. 2.136 the Senate, Coriolanus, are well pleasd’ to make thee Consull (examples of the pl are not very numerous in Sh) | Defoe G 26 the antient nobillity value themselves above the created nobillity | ib. 61 the clergy are richer | Di D 279 the family take breakfast at half-past nine | Brontë P 29 Are the police after you? | Ru S 6 unless I feel that my audience are either with me or against me .... I must know where they are | Wilde S 27 The public are to Kim non-existent | Scott A 2.1 he found that his womankind were not upon duty | Mac-
aulay H 2.172 In that village the Wiltshire militia were quartered | Roosevelt A 295 raw militia are utterly incompetent to make head against regular forces | Kipl J 2.14 below him were the vanguard of the deer | Ru S 1.249 the clergy were sincere | Caine C 373 the clergy are not your friends | Scott A 2.155 the Scottish peasantry are still infected with that rage for funeral ceremonial | Macaulay H 2.181 the peasantry were accustomed to serve in the militia | Kingsley H 260 the soldiery are scattered | Di T 1.51 other company were there.

4.823. The plural idea may be shown in various other ways than that of the plural verb, e.g. by all (cf. also they ...): Mi A 40 the Clergy themselves | Fielding 3.587 our crew were all dead drunk | Austen S 349 the family were again all restored to each other | Austen M 145 uninterrupted enjoyment to the party themselves | Caine M 80 the family were all at home | Mill L 8 Mankind are greater gainers by suffering each other to live as seems good to themselves | Bennett W 1.108 the choir knelt and covered their faces | ib. 2.161 the police themselves would not credit it | Zangwill G 184 the committee congratulated themselves.

4.83. A plural verb is common with words indicating number, part etc.: More U 248 the mooste part of them doo passe vs | Sh H4A IV. 3.27 the better part of ours are full of rest | Goldsm 628a the young couple, it seems, are just setting out for Scouland | Johnson R 69 of my companions, the greater part were in the grave | Austen M 80 here are the greatest number of our plants | Ru S 1.23 spaces of waste ground, of which part serve for military exercises | Ellis M 284 What proportion of women are ordinarily healthy? | Sinclair IR 116 there are any number of studies by independent investigators.

This usage is recognized with plenty = 'a large supply, a great number': there were plenty of pictures | Bennett W 2.265 There are plenty of other places. (A plenty is obsolete or American).
The exactly corresponding use of *abundance* is rarer; the NED exemplifies it from Barbour, T. Brown 1687 and Fielding. It is found also in Defoe R 2.112 *abundance were* kill’d and wounded | Stuart Mill in Fox 2.274 there *are abundance* of subjects on which I should like a little communion with you.

**4.841.** The verb in the plural number is also very frequent with words which do not in themselves denote a plurality of beings, but acquire that signification by metonymy: *the parish* (or *Asia*) = the inhabitants of the parish (or Asia), *the Quarterly* = the writers in the Quarterly Review, etc.:

Ml T 95 *all Asia Lament* to see the follie of their King | Lamb R 68 *all the village remember* the story | Scott A 2.224 *what say the rest of Fairport?* | GE M 2.222 all well drest *St. Oggs and its neighbourhood were* there | Hardy F 36 *all the parish notice* it | Pope Lock 1.91 when the *world imagine* women stray | Austen P 19 *All the world are good* | Stevenson M 249 *all the world imagine* they will be exceptional when they grow wealthy | By DJ 4.113 *Her cargo ... were landed* [viz. slaves] | Benson D 224 Half the *hotel were* scandalised at her | Kipl J 1.22 all the *jungle fear* Bagheera | AV Prov 31.21 *all her household are* cloathed with scarlet | Di Do 250 *even the household were* sorry | Kipl S 29 *my house never dream* of doing these things. | McCarthy 2.273 the *Government were* not able to resist this resolution | Goldsm 632b *our sex are like poor tradesmen,* that put all their best goods to be seen at the window | GE Mm 49 *Your sex are* not thinkers | Shelley 62 *Since kin were* cold | Ward M 202 *Aren't the true Church the people who are justified by the event?* | Caine C 367 to tell the *'quality' their fortunes* | McCarthy 2.518 the *court were* unanimous in finding England responsible | Doyle First 105 the Portsmouth *bench are* severe upon assaults | Shelley Pr 293 *the Quarterly are* going to review me | Kipl S 244 the *Sixth [form] can't protect 'emse1ves* | ib. 252 the *Sixth were* too taken aback.

*Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.*
Similarly each in the following quotation has the vb in the pl, because it stands for each class: Ru C 28 the busy rich people... the busy poor people... But each look for the faults of the other [NB not others]. This of course is different from the repetition of each by they in 5.58.

4.842. Often the plural construction is shown, not by the verb, but by some other word, for instance they:

Sh Hml III. 4.173 heaven [= the heavenly powers] hath pleas'd it so... That I must be their scourge and minister [other examples see Sh-lex. 528] | Sh H 5 III Prol. 26 Behold the ordinance [= the guns] on their carriages | Scott A 2.25 when the legislature abolished the laws against witchcraft, they had no hope of destroying the superstitious feelings of humanity | Benson D 26 London did not come and seek her at her own house, but preferred asking her to theirs | Kipl L 49 no man is strong enough to take liberties with his public, even though they be all you say they are.

4.85. When a relative pronoun is wanted to refer to a collective denoting human beings, which is used if the singular idea is present to the mind, and who if the plural idea is present, though sometimes with some degree of inconsistency:

Mi PL 4.733 a race To fill the Earth, who shall with us extol Thy goodness infinite | Swift J 80 desiring I would take some care of their poor town, who, he says, will lose their liberties... the town had behaved themselves so ill to me, so little regarded the advice I gave them, and disagreed so much among themselves, that I was resolved never to have more to do with them | Johnson R 60 a nation at once pastoral and warlike; who live without any settled... | Scott A 1.309 he joined the party, who were walking before them | ib. 1.315 you find me in society who are satisfied by the degree of information which I have thought it proper to communicate | ib. 1.318 he met me in society which of itself was a warrant to all the world | Scott Iv 288 that scum of mankind who are swarming...

Byron Ch H I. 16 a nation, who lick, yet loathe the hand that waves the sword | GE Mm 217 The Garth family, which was rather a large one, for Mary had four brothers and one sister, were very fond of their old house | Kipl L 52 he has caught the note that catches a public who think with their boots and read with their elbows | Lecky D 1.78 democratic equality among a population who were entirely unfit for it.

[Bacon A 19.12 Noah and his sounes, which was the chiefe family of the earth].

4.86. Pretty frequently a word of this class is construed with respect to one word as a sg and with respect to another in the same sentence as a pl. (I count whole as an indication of the sg construction):

More U 140 euery family maketh their owne | Sh John V. 3. 9 the great supply That was expected by the Dolphin heere, Are wrack'd | Coleridge P 96 nodding their heads before her goes the merry minstrelsy | Scott A 2.351 an army destroy their artillery | Fielding 3.597 the whole parish are alarmed with his bellowing | Scott A 2.73 the whole family were still on foot | GE Mm 217, above | GE A 233 there was a grand band hired from Rosseter, who, with their wonderful wind-instruments and puffed-out cheeks, were themselves a delightful show to the small boys | Norris O 647 our own dear Railroad openly acknowledges him as their candidate | Stevenson B 181 the whoU of the remainder ran for their lives | McCarthy 2.329 the public, as a whole, were not enthusiastic | Hope R 203 All that crowd of people know that the King is here.

This shows that the distinction sometimes made between a collective (construed as a sg) and a noun of multitude (construed as a pl) cannot be kept up, as the same word may be both within the same sentence.

4.87. Some collective nouns are often used with a plural adjective like these, thus even a word like crew (these crew = this crew), though family is never thus construed:
Scott L 579 *these gentry* never know | Lamb E 1.197 *these small gentry* (also Caine E 130 and Hewlett Q 34) | Carlyle R 1.83 *those old Seceder clergy* | Collingwood R 238 *these clergy* | Scott A 1.38 *these cursed womankind* always leave their tubs in the passage | Shelley 560 (185) one of *those deluded crew* | Kipl B 27 [vg] of *all them black-faced crew* | Hawth S 104 the hostile feelings with which the child regarded all *these offspring* of her own heart and mind. — Cf. Appendix p. 492.

This explains the more unusual *those* (which some editors emend into *that* or *this*) in Sh Tw I. 2.10 *those poor number* saved with you.

4.88. The next step is that some collectives may be qualified by *many* or *few* (cf. p. 492):

Kipling J 2.77 *I had too many cattle* | Macaulay E 4.48 *innumerable waggons, innumerable cattle*, remained | Finnegans, Famous Englishmen 2.197 *the few cattle* they possessed || Barrie M 268 *many gentry* | Kipl L 27 *the few—the very few—English cavalry* rode down the laggards.

4.89. And finally we have even a numeral before them: *twenty police* = a police force of twenty. With *cattle* this is found as far back as 1535 (twenty small *catell*, NED), but with other words it is more recent. Elphinstone (1765, I 226) says: "*many people ... Yet propriety can no more, however common be the practice, say two or three people, for two or three persons, than two or three cattle, for two or three beasts, etc. Nor do we ever hear of two or three company, for two or three guests; though often of many company for much company.*" (For *people* see 4.91).

With *police* and *cattle* this use of a "numeral plural" is extremely frequent in modern speech and newspapers; with *harlotry* and some of the other words it is very rare:

McCarthy 2.326 *about 80,000 cattle* had been attacked by the disease | Caine C,21 *a staff of six clergy* | ib. 266 *there were eighty clergy*. | Collier Engl 111 *the church with its twenty-eight thousand clergy* | Wister R 14 *the two In
dian police | NP 06 a fly which gives birth to a million offspring is doing nothing unusual | By 564 he loved his Queen—And thrice a thousand harlotry besides | Taine Notes on England 263 The two counsel turn their man inside out | Macaulay E 4.38 nine hundred English infantry | ib. 4.47 forty thousand infantry | Doyle NP '95 with five hundred infantry. — Cf. Appendix p. 492.

Farrow means ‘litter of pigs’, but is sometimes used with a numeral: Sh Mcb IV. 1.65 [sow] that hath eaten Her nine farrow; quoted in Byron DJ I. 2.

According to Sweet (NEGr § 1973), in twenty clergy walking in procession “the collective is preferred because it implies that it was not a fortuitous assemblage of clergymen, but that they walked in procession through being members of one organization.” Sweet says (§ 1972) that such groups as twenty people, these vermin, many cattle, etc., are ‘ungrammatical’, and (§ 116) that we have an ‘antigrammatical’ construction in the party were assembled; but this is really taking too narrow a view of what is “grammatical”. Grammar, as well as logic, must count with the fact that some words may in one respect, or originally, be singular and yet express a plural idea and therefore be treated as plurals.

Collectives. — Special Cases

4.911. People first like F peuple means ‘nation’ and as such is still used as a sb in the sg. The pl peoples (= ‘nations’) seems to have gone out of common use in the 16th c.; it is found twice in AV, but neither in Sh, Milton nor Pope; in 1830 it seems to have been strange and to require justification (see NED 1c), but Carlyle uses it often, and it is pretty frequent in recent books:

Morley (in NED): All our English-speaking peoples | Haggard S 62 the Persians and other peoples | Macdonald F 296 civilised peoples | Roosevelt A 290 the white peoples.

In this sense people, like family and other similar collectives, may take the vb in the pl, even if it is preceded by a:

Macaulay E 4.306 a people who have much in common with children | McCarthey 2.232 a people who, say
what they may, hate us as a nation. Cf. also Defoe G 64 the example of that stupid people, who, fond of their old follys, would . . .

A second signification, which is now the prevailing one, is 'men (human beings) in general' (F gens). In Ch it takes the vb in the sg in F 221 As lewed peple demeth, but in the pl ib. 252 Thus seyn the peple. Cf. AV 2 Sam 17.29 the people that were with him . . . the people is hungrie. Now it is always felt to be plural, as in Scott L 578 literary people, who walk with their noses in the air. It may really be described now as an irregular (substitutive 2.21) pl of person (the form persons is not very frequently used), see for instance Wilde S 77 it is equally true of what are called educated people. For an educated person's ideas of Art are drawn naturally from what Art has been.

In this sense it now also takes an adjective in the plural; instead of Malory's much people (121 moche peple | 123 how moche people ther was slayne; cf. ib. 130 soo was al the peple sory for hym; but also 122 a fewe peple) we have now many people; and the word is very frequently preceded by a numeral. It is found as early as Ch C. 260 a thousand peple. Further examples:

Defoe P 31 two people dying | ib. 98 a thousand people | Beaconsf L 159 three thousand people | Di D 158 twenty thousand people. Cf. 4.89.

Thus even with one or two, although of course it is not possible to say one people in the sense of 'one person': Di Do 123 one or two people might drop in | Hope R 35 There were one or two people in the hall | Wells L 44 one or two people had gone down the lane.

4.912. Folk is quite obsolete in the sense 'a nation'; it is now used exclusively in the sense 'men, people', construed as a pl. The new pl folks is used in the same sense; the oldest example in NED is from 1413, but it is found in Ch B 2498 (Harleian MS) alle straunge folkes (other MSS folk or folke); cf. also below. According to
NED folks “since 17th c. is the ordinary form, the sg [that is, the form folk, which I should not call a real singular] being arch. or dial.” I have quotations for folks from Udal (Roister 49), Marlowe (F 410), Sh, Swift, Defoe (R 2.23 his country-folks), Fielding, Austen, Lamb, Thackeray (very frequent), Kingsley, Whittier, Hawthorne, Merriman, Gosse Hope, Jackson, Herrick (the American), and for folk from Hardy, Hope, Collingwood, Edward Carpenter, Pett Ridge, O. W. Holmes. Fielding 8.419 and 430 has gentlefolks. In Mrs Ward F 192 Lord Findon says gentlefolk, and his daughter a good many gentlefolks. An American friend told me that folk was quite common, and folks “awfully bookish”; but it would seem that quite recently folk has been gaining ground in England. NED has gentlefolks from Shakespeare onwards, but gentlefolk only in the 19th c.

The use of a numeral with folk(s), though more than 500 years old, is not very frequent, much rarer than with people; NED has examples only from 1450 and 1641; see also:

Ch Parl 278 two yonge folkes cryde (some MSS folk ther) | Thack N 27 two young folks of eighteen | Doyle R 105 three folk.

Cp. with this development of people and folk the corresponding Danish: meget folk has been supplanted by mange folk ‘many people’; de godtfolk ‘those (pl) good (sg) people’.

4.92. As troop means ‘a body of soldiers’, the pl with a numeral has the same signification (thus in the first quotation); but besides it is often used with a higher numeral to indicate the number of soldiers, not of ‘troops’:

Macaulay H 2.166 he scattered two troops of rebel horse | ib. 2.171 the King’s forces consisted of about two thousand five hundred regular troops | NP ‘03 the authorities having only 600 troops at their disposal.

4.93. In the case of such a word as fry we may distinguish between four different usages; for the first three I take quotations from the NED, where the fourth
is not exemplified: (a) individual singular: an innumer-
able yonge frie of these flying fishes (Sparke), (b) collec-
tive singular: so numerous was their fry (Cowper), (c) col-
lective plural: The fry of the aquatic races are almost
as different from their parents as the caterpillar from the
butterfly (Woodward), (d) real or "numeral plural": Five
hundred fry, there playing, were turned into the river
(quoted ES 12.374).

4.94. A similarly complicated case is afforded by
the word youth, which may mean: (a) the state of being
young, (b) young people collectively, with plural or singular
construction, (c) a young man, with the pl youths. The
sense-development is similar to that of blackguard, G frauen-
zimmer, F camarade etc., which come to mean individuals;
cf. also Norwegian ungdom (Björnson, Pa Guds veje 247
Karl eller en anden ungdom fra skole). All these signi-
fications are found in Sh; more recent examples are:

Fielding T 2.314 for what other purpose are our youth
instructed (b) | Wordsw P 6.3 one among the youth, who
. . . reunite (b) | ib. 6.19 such privilege has youth, that
cannot take long leave of pleasant thoughts (b) | ib. 6.95
the vague reading of a truant youth (c) | ib. 6.108 by
common inexperience of youth (b, or a?) | ib. 6.141 these
thoughts that were a frequent comfort to my youth (a,
= to me in my young age) | Thack N 26 among the
British youth his contemporaries (b) | Ru S 2 different
classes of youth (b) | Ru C 160 you soldier youths (c) |
ib. 161 soldier youth are especially tempted (b) | ib. 164
courage is a mere matter of course among any ordinarily
well-born youths (c).—*Many youth and twenty youth are
not found instead of . . . youths.*

4.95. Acquaintance similarly signifies (a) knowledge,
or the state of being acquainted, (b) collectively, those
with whom one is acquainted, with verb in sg or pl,
(c) individually, one among a person's "acquaintance b." Nowadays (b) is rare; in some instances of (b) one is
tempted to believe that the sound [s] represents [siz] by
haplogy, see I. 7.83, or [ts], the pl of the old acquaintance
(NED from 1611 to 1704 Swift). The pl acquaintances
was recognized by Johnson in his dictionary, though never
found in his own writings (see note R 194). I give here
only examples of (b) and (c):

Congreve 268 I have very few acquaintance | Swift
J 60 and 3.264 many acquaintance | ib. 140 we are grown
common acquaintance | Fielding T 3.68 they had formerly
been intimate acquaintance and friends | Gibbon M 169 the
many new acquaintance which I had contracted [NB]; cf. ib.
154,170 | Goldsm 647 his acquaintance give him a very
different character | Johnson R 78 his politeness attracted
many acquaintance | Austen E 7 she had many acquaintances
in the place | Austen P 180 they had many acquaintance
in common (this is very frequent in Miss Austen) | Quin-
cey 163 She had few acquaintance | Lamb E 1.23 those
few acquaintances of theirs | Kingsley H 70 a whole regi-
ment of women acquaintances | Thack S 142 a genteel con-
gregation of curious acquaintance in the pews | ib. 142 all
the carriages of all our acquaintance | Thack N 120 falling
in love with her new acquaintance | Hawth S 211 inquiries
such as any two acquaintance might have made | Ward
M 71 any other of her new acquaintances | Zangwill G 218
one of my friends or acquaintances.—A good paradoxical
illustration of (a) and (c) together is Gissing R 107 Never
again shall I go to see acquaintances with whom I have
no acquaintance.

The signification (c), and perhaps already (b), leads
in the 19th c. to the new formation acquaintanceship for
(a); NED from 1803: Barrie T 170 Those acquaintanceships
had seldom ripened | Wells U 224 we pass into acquain-
tanceships.

Kindred (OE cynræden, ME kinreden sb sg 'kinship') in Shake-
speare according to Al. Schmidt has the verb three times in the
singular and three times in the plural.

4.96. Though an enemy (and that enemy) refers al-
ways to a single hostile being, the enemy is very often
used with a plural verb in the sense 'the hostile forces, the enemies':

Sh Cæs IV. 3.199 'Tis better that the Enemie seeke vs [? subjunctive] | Defoe R 2.64 the enemy were too many . . . they did not keep together | Thack N 354 the enemy were upon him | Kipl L 27 the enemy were flying . . . the remnant of the enemy were retiring. — Both sg and pl: Swift 3.49 the enemy was so frighted when they saw me. — Cf. Appendix p. 492.

Thus also the military: NP '03 The military have been withdrawn from the public squares (11.4).

4.971. Difficulties of a different order arise in connexion with the words many and few, which are adjectives as well as collective substantives. Many, preceded by a (which would seem to show it to a be a substantive) does not, if the NED is right (?), go back to the OE subst. menigeo 'multitudo', but is due to the analogy of a few (see 4.972); confusion with meinie (< OF meine, mesnie < Lat *manslonata) is not excluded.

Examples: Sh Merch III. 5.73 I doe know A many fooles that stand in better place | Wiv III. 3.77 like a-manie of these lisping-hauthouse buds | BJo 3.108 A many of these fears would put me into some villainous disease | Defoe R 244 making a many antick gestures | Tennyson 39 a They have not shed a many tears | Thack H 118 such a many things.—A many is now vulgar, as in GE M 1.172 a many things | Di Do 136 a many fares | Caine C 133 a many chavonces | ib. 170 | Wells T 35 there's a many have tried to dig.

The substantival character is still more evident in the combination a great (or good) many; this does not seem to occur in Sh; the oldest examples (without of) in NED are from 1690 and 1776; in the 19th c. examples abound.

Examples of that many:

Hardy F 201 you can only marry one of that many | Mead, Word-Coinage 1,there are three thousand English words not to be found in any dictionary . . . there are at
least thrice *that many* ... In the latter quotation *that* is verging on the adverbial *that* treated in chapter XVI; but in the former we have rather a parallel to the unified plural treated in 5.1; cf. *that few* 4.972 and *that all* in By 574 All are gone forth, and of *that all* how few Perhaps return.

4.972. *A few* goes back to the 13th c. (Orrm 2.335 *ane fæwe*; NED only from 1297); it must be compared with the obsolete use of *a* before a cardinal numeral (*a forty* = 'about forty'). The difference between *few* and *a few* is the same as between *little* and *a little*; a corresponding distinction does not exist with *many*.

Examples: Ch MP 3.160 | Sh Merch III. 2.254 Heere are *a few* of the vnpleasant'es t words That eu er . . . | H5 II. 2.89 *a few* light crownes | Shelley 350 *a few* sad years.

In many cases an adjective is added to *few*, which is thus shown to be taken by the popular instinct to be a substantive on account of *a*:

Carlyle R 1.122 for a *good few years* to come | Morris N 75 about these docks are a *good few* houses | Phillpotts M 78 He's said a *good few* very rude things | Hardy L 208 the boats . . A *good few* of 'em were so made || Lloyd Phon St III. 277 *a very slender few* | ib. IV. 204 *a feeble few* || Harraden Sh 76 these were the philosophers of the colony: *a select and dainty few* in any colony | McCarthy 2.636 the exclusive property of *a very select few* | Thack S 90 what can *a single poor few* do? . . . even these few are too many | Wordsw P 3.498 among *an eager few* || Very frequently as in Bennett W 2.242 in *another few* years.

But the (original) adjectival character of *few* is still occasionally shown by an adverb, as in Trollope D 1.53 restraining her choice among *comparatively a few* | Prof. Newton in Nature, Sept 15.'87.464 It was only a few — *an extremely few* — among them who ever gave the question any consideration at all, and these few ...

The occasional *that few* is similar to *that many* and to *that two weeks*, etc. (5.16).
Tenn 234a that honest few, Who give the Fiend himself his due | McCarthy 2.283 These things lived only in the minds of a few, and even of that few not many were anxious to dwell upon them.

In slang a few is used = 'a little'. Cf. p. 492.

So few a with a sg substantive does not seem to be found later than the 15th c.: Malory 50 there was so fewe a felauship.

Chapter V

Meaning of Number. Continued

Unification of Plurals

5.11. The same double function (that of adjectives and that of collective substantives) which is thus found in many and few, is also found in numerals. The words hundred, thousand, million, dozen, were originally substantives and are still genuine substantives in combinations like hundreds (thousands, millions, dozens) of people, but they are generally looked upon as adjectives in two hundred (two thousand, three million) people, six dozen collars. In a hundred people (one hundred people) as in a many bottles and a few bottles grammarians disagree as to the 'part of speech'; for us the question is of little importance, so long as we recognize a hundred, etc., as a group adjunct (cf. 1.83).

5.12. This double function is then extended to other numerals, which were originally pure adjectives. Thus we get a twain with the meaning 'a pair, a couple': Sh Ant I. 1.38 such a twaine | Tp IV. 1.103 to blesse this twaine, that they may prosperous be | Shelley 249 (Prom. II. 2.1) The path through which that lovely twain Have passed.

Other numerals: Hardy F 200 breaking the third of that Terrible Ten [= ten Commandments] | NR '92 the whole four of us | Term 327 b a fourth, and of that four
the mightiest | Trollope O 60 they, that happy too, would... | a second college eight [= crew of a rowing boat].

Cp. also a deuce (at dice) from the F numeral deux.

Thus with any and every (rarely each): Kipl J 2.9 he knew as much as any five of the Jungle people put together | Sh Ant V. 2.278 in every tenne [women] that they make, the duels marre fiue | each too had a servant behind their chairs.

5.131. A plural may be formed from these numerals used as singulars (the result being a “plural raised to the second power”), cf. hundreds, etc.; e.g.:

Mered H 148 the sons of first-rate families are in the two elevens [= cricket teams] | Hope C 97 the twos [= two couples] could neither be separated from one another nor united with anybody else | Kipl First 97 there was no trade discount, no reckoning twelves as thirteens | Poe S 307 sixes having been thrown twice in succession by a player at dice | Barrie MO 77 Two tens [= ten pound notes], and the rest in gold | Carlyle R 2.199 what had been set forth by me tens of times before | Haggard S 291 for many tens of thousands of years | Tylor A 18 why we reckon by tens instead of the more convenient twelves.

5.132. The last example leads up to the extremely frequent use of plurals of numerals in distributive phrases, especially after by:

Sh Cor II. 3.46 we are to come by ones, by twoes, and by threes | Mi PL XI. 735 Of everie beast, and bird, and insect small Came seavens, and pairs | Tenn 173 b the Muses and the Graces grouped in threes | Thack E 2.290 our friends having come by parties of twos and threes | Kingsley H 72 they melted off, by twos and threes | Hughes T 2.121 they broke up into twos and threes and parted | Caine S 1.6 he could count the sheep, not by ones and twos, but by fours and sixes | Jerome T 127 they came in ones, they came in little parties | Tylor A 302 they wrought statues by tens of thousands.
5.14. We have a special application of the unification of numerals in arithmetical expressions: three nines = three times (the amount of) nine, as in Sh LL V. 2.495 I alwaies tooke three threes for nine | Wint IV. 4.345 these foure-threes of beardsmen. Cf. also Mered H 148 a renowned out-hitter, good to finish a score brilliantly with a pair of threes (three runs at cricket).

It is easily seen that this plural of a cardinal numeral is entirely different from the use of eights = figures of 8 (three 3’s in a row | her threes and fives are too much alike; cp. three A’s).—Still other plurals of numerals are seen in Swift J 118 candles. They are good sixes in the pound || Zangwill G 314 my boots are only sevens after all [of the size 7] | Bennett W 1.99 gloves . . you’ll want more of seven-and-three-quarters and eights than anything || ib. 1.186 she would be twenty-seven next birthday. But it would not be a real twenty-seven; nor would Sam’s forty be a real forty, like other people’s twenty-sevens and forties.

5.15. A meaningless pl is found in the phrase on all fours, formerly on all four, also used figuratively ‘evenly, squarely’; there is also a game at cards called all-fours.

Swift 3.101 | Sterne 17 the comparison . . . runs upon all-four || Defoe R 211 to creep upon all fours | Wells A 158 . . is really on all fours with the wonderful Rodin | ib. 304 then the question of sexual relationships would be entirely on all fours with, and probably very analogous to, the question of golf. [It is not impossible that at one time the phrase was: “one man on all four”, but “several men on all fours”. Or is the s simply the adverbial s, as in towards, vg somewhere, etc. ?]

Similarly the old phrase at six and seven is now made into a plural: at sixes and sevens:

Townl 169 set all on sex and seuen | Sh R2 II. 2. 121 euery thing is left at six and seuen (thus also Bacon, see notes to R2) | Goldsm 611b when I see things going at sixes and sevens | Scott A 2.1 all goes to sixes and sevens.

5.16. In all these cases the numeral which was ‘unified’ was itself a principal. But the unification also to a great extent takes place when the numeral is an
adjunct, the whole plural word-group being treated as a singular, as shown by the form of the verb or by a singular adjective, or by both in the same sentence. This power of showing grammatically that a plurality is to be considered as a unity of a higher order, is unparalleled in any cognate language. One of the reasons why it has thus gained ground in English, is probably to be sought in the fact that adjectives have no numerical inflexion; a combination like a delightful three weeks would be felt to be too incongruous in a language in which delightful would either have a distinctive sg or a distinctive pl ending.

Some grammarians would restrict our phenomenon to combinations with this and explain it as being due to the old plural form this instead of these, cf. Ch MP 3.37 a siknesse That I have suffred this eight yere | Malory 119 within this XX yere. But this does not cover the whole phenomenon, and we find comparatively early examples with other words than this showing the syntactical tendency which is so fully developed in Modern English, e.g. (Ch) Ros 990 These arowes fyve ... Contrarie to that other fyve (the original has: contraire as autres cinq floiches).

5.161. The verb-form alone shows the unification:
Sh VA 522 Is twenty hundred kisses such a trouble? | R2 I. 3.260 what is sixe winters, they are quickly gone? | LLL I. 1.181 three years is but short | Defoe R 341 the 872 moidores, which was indisposed of | Sheridan Dram W 83 forty yards is a good distance | Di N 187 Fifteen shillings a week is not much | Di Do 25 seven-eighths of my stock is old-fashioned | Macaulay E 71 about one hundred and forty thousand pounds sterling was distributed | two is company, three is none | Ward E 248 Three is no company | Kipl L 107 Is your three hundred a year safe? It's in consols | Mered H 112 from Bodley is ten miles to Beckley. — Cf. Appendix p. 492.

5.162. The plural combination is preceded by one:
Sh H5 IV. 3.16 But one ten thousand of those men | Cor IV. 1.55 one seuen yeares | Thack P 3.343 I don't care
one twopence 'a'p'ny whether your word's true or not | Soames Reader 18 for one short seven days.

The plural combination is preceded by a(n):

BJo 3.182 was there ever such a two yards of knighthood | Shelley Pr 301 we have spent a miserable five months | Darwin L 1.238 I do not think I ever spent a more delightful three weeks | Quiller M 153 a good three-quarters of a mile away | Kipl J 2.188 now it was a bare six inches | Vachell H 176 after making an honest fifteen runs | Doyle M 44 for six months I have had to wait; a weary six months they have been | Hope R 220 after such a two days of work.

It will be seen that the indefinite article is often a means for placing an adjective, which would otherwise be differently interpreted: an honest fifteen runs is not the same as fifteen honest runs. — Cf. Appendix p. 492.

5.163. Examples with another or a (the) second:

'Kipl J 2.97 at the end of another ten days | Haggard S 52 had the rush lasted another two seconds | NP: 30 sledge dogs ... near the Lena another 26 dogs will be waiting for Nansen | Zangwill G 76 The second six months seemed to him much longer than the first | ib. 253 The whole of the second five minutes Lancelot paced his room feverishly | Spencer A 2.56 I could not count upon my forces from one twenty-four hours to another. — Cf. p. 493.

5.164. Examples with a whole:

Austen M 114 perhaps it might cost a whole twenty pounds | Carlyle R 1.64 with him a whole threescore and ten years of the past has doubly died for me.

5.165. Examples with this:

Sh H4A II. 2.18 any time this two and twenty yeare (very frequent in Sh) | Ml F 1204 this eight nights | ib. 1205 this eight weekes | Defoe R 317 this two hours | GE M 1.52 this six months | Ward M 195 this six weeks | Vachell H 188 we'll have such good times this last three weeks | Hewlett Q 433 this insane ten days.

Examples with *that* (I have no quotations from Shakespeare, but see Appendix p. 493):

Swift J 197 lose *that four and elevenpence* | Goldsm 611b there is *that ten guineas* you were sending to the poor gentleman | Di N 401 in the course of *that three minutes* | Barrie T 385 not a moment in *that eighteen months.

5.166.  Very frequently a unified plural is found after *any, no, and especially every, as in*

England’s navy is stronger than that of *any two powers* put together | Di Do 397 it would be strange if *any two persons* could be together for many years without having something to complain of | Di D 7 if *any two people* can be equally matched | Lowell St 263 *no two natures* were ever more unlike than those of Dryden and Pope | More U 121 *every XXXII fermo* or families have one head ruler (also 130, 135) | Sterne 17 for *every ten jokes* thou hast got a hundred enemies | ib. 15 *every nine or ten months* | McCarthy 2.156 nine out of *every ten enthusiasts* | Lecky D 1.76 one out of *every thirteen persons* was Irish.

5.167.  We have in reality a plural of the unified plural combination “a lively ten minutes” in the following sentence (a plural to the second power though the second plural is not formally expressed): Doyle M 137 then ensued one of the most lively ten minutes that I can remember.

5.171.  A specially important case of unification is found in numerals + *pence* to indicate a coin of that value (or the value itself without regard to any existing coin). Thus Fielding T 1.213 many *a sixpence*. A new pl in -pences is also formed, thus as early as Sh H4B IV. 3.55 *tucopences* | Wiv I. 1.158 *sixpences* | Thack V 279 the amount of *eight-pences* | Jerrold C 11 what 52 *eighteen-pences* come to in a year | silver *three-halfspences* were formerly coined. — Cf. Appendix p. 493.

5.172.  *Twelve month* (on the pl form without *s* see 3.61) is unified into *a twelvemonth* (already Malory 66 this XII moneth .. another XII moneth, frequent in the
17th and 18th c.); thus also a seven night (see 3.61) as in Sh Ado II. 1.375 a just seuen night, > a se’nnight (on the pronunciation see vol. I), frequent till the beginning of the 19th c., and a fourteen night > a fortnight; in the two latter the numeral is no more felt as such.

I have no examples of a plural of twelvemonth or fortnight, and only one of sennights: Sh Macb I. 3.22 Wearie seu’nings, nine times nine, Shall he dwindle, peake, and pine. — Cf. Appendix p. 493.

5.18. Apart from combinations with numerals the unification of plurals is not frequent, though the phenomena dealt with in 5.6—7 (Metanalysis) may be reckoned as cases in point.

The United States is often taken as a singular (also with the omitted after a);

Archer A 148 the United States is not, to him, a foreign country | Seeley E 16 what the United States does | ib. 159 another United States | ib. 159 we shall see that here too is a United States | Froude Oc 16 continents large as a second United States | Lee Bates, Amer. Lit. 124 The United States of to-day is nine times as large as the United States of 1800. — Cf. Appendix p. 493.

It is rarer to find the Indies treated in the same way: NP’11 Raleigh gave to the English race a better Indies than the King of Spain’s.

Mass-Words

5.211. The categories of singular and plural naturally apply to all such things (this word taken in the widest sense possible) as can be counted; such 'countables' are either material things like houses, horses, portraits, flowers, etc., or immaterial things of various orders, like days, miles; sounds, words, sonatas, sermons; events, crimes; errors, mistakes, ideas, plans, tasks, etc. But beside these we have a great many words which represent 'uncountables', that is, which do not call up the idea of any definite thing, having a certain shape or precise limits. These words
are here called mass-words; they may be either material, in which case they denote some stuff or substance in itself independent of form, such as silver, quicksilver, water, butter, milk, tea (both the leaves and the fluid), powder, gas, air, etc.; or else immaterial, such as leisure; music: traffic, progress, success, ill-luck, tact, commonsense, knowledge, and especially many 'nexus-substantives' from verbs, like admiration, satisfaction, refinement, and from adjectives, like restlessness (= 'the being restless'), clearness, safety, constancy. (Cf. 5.33 and 34; further vol. VII 12.6 ff.).

5.212. While it is possible to qualify ('quantify') the first class of words (countables) with such adjectives as one, two, many, few (a few), mass-words can be qualified by much and little (a little). Note however that a little can also be applied to countables, though in a different sense, compare a little bird (= a small bird) and a little water (= a small quantity of water). Similarly some may apply to both classes: some bird, some birds; some water. On the distinction formerly made between more, enough with mass-words and mo, enow with plurals see 2.74 f.

A great deal (a good deal) of is now only found before singular mass-words (= 'much'): a great deal of money, a good deal of soap, etc., while a great many is used before plurals: a great many stones (people), etc. But formerly this rule was not observed: Defoe R 99 a great deal of pieces of timber.—Plenty of and abundance of are found with both classes, see for the use with plurals 4.83; with a sg word: plenty of money | Di T 2.3 abundance of time.

The use of certain is peculiar in NP '13 So highly inflammable is certain dust, that . . . — Cf. p. 493.

5.213. Another difference in the adjuncts of mass-words and thing-words: the former have what, the latter what a in exclamatory quasi-questions: What nonsense you are talking! | Stevenson VP 169 And, after all, what sorry and pitiful quibbling all this is | Norris P 107 what beautiful hair that girl has!—contrasted with What a lovely sight! | Stevenson VP 159 What a chequered picnic we
have of it, even while it lasts.—In the chapter about one, below, we shall also see that this word is only used as a substitute for a thing-word, not for a mass-word.—Something great refers to a ‘mass’ and has no plural, some great thing has the plural some great things, referring to ‘countables’.

5.221. It is, however, possible to use mass-names with counting adjectives when the name is taken in the sense ‘a kind of’, as in: this wine is different from the one we had yesterday | many different wines grow in France | various sauces (jams), etc., see 4.61. In some cases a mass-name may have a plural in a slightly different sense, see 4.62 salt, sand, silk, spirit—advice, attention, confidence, decency, love. Cf. also Ru P 2.146 the snows round the Aiguilles are the least trodden. — Cf. vol. VII 12.6.  

5.222. A case closely resembling that of these differentiated plurals is that of many words which may be used both as mass-names and as thing-names. This may be either because a word denoting a thing is transferred to the material, as when we say a pudding (many puddings) and much pudding, or inversely, as when from cloth we get a cloth (table-cloth, horsecloth) with pl cloths (cf. clothes, see Morphology), or when an iron is used = ‘implement for smoothing cloth’. Sometimes the thing-word must be considered as a detached first-word of a compound, e.g. a copper = a copper-kettle or copper coin.

Further examples of such double significations:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A</th>
<th>An alloy of copper and tin.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a tin of sardines</td>
<td>a little more cheese.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>two big cheeses</td>
<td>crust or crumb?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>many small crumbs</td>
<td>a table made of oak.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a tall oak</td>
<td>there is no ice on the pond.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Have you had an ice?</td>
<td>some earth stuck to his shoes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Hope D 43) the earth is round</td>
<td>the relation of matter and space.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>various matters were discussed</td>
<td>a parcel in brown paper.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| state-papers. | }
Similar examples with immaterial mass-words:

| various noises          | a good deal of noise          |
| confidential talks     | much talk                     |
| some sorrows (joys, pleasures) | some sorrow (joy, pleasure) |
| all these dangers are past | there is little or no danger |
| different feelings     | he did not show much feeling  |
| few talents            | little talent                 |
| many experiences       | much experience               |
| a delightful time.     | I have no time now.           |

(Time has another ‘countable’ signification when it is = G mal, F fois: I have been there twenty times).

Debt is a thing-word in GE A 1.220 I have paid off a debt or two, but a mass-name in the phrase to be in debt.

5.223. But in other instances the mass-words cannot be thus used for ‘things’ (gunpowder, clay, linen, etc.). Corresponding to G ein brot English has a loaf, not a bread. While lamb may be used for the animal (two young lambs) and for the meat (lamb or pork, sir?), and the same is the case with fowl (as a mass-word for instance in Bennett W 2.276 bits of fowl) and fish, in some other well-known instances we have two different words: calf — veal, ox — beef (archaic beeves about the animals), sheep — mutton, deer — venison, swine — pork. Similarly we have tree — wood (as a mass-name; it is also used as a collective in the sense ‘collection of trees’ and then of course like copse and forest has a pl). On the other hand some thing-words may develop into mass-words with two different significations, cf. an oak (one tree) — oak 1. wood from oaks, 2. trees looked upon as a mass, see below 5.25.

On the individualization by means of piece, etc., see 5.3.

5.224. While in some instances it is impossible to distinguish by means of our senses the component parts of the substance (iron, water, air), in other instances this is possible, (sand, barley). Note that the sg words bran and chaff are defined by means of the pl husks.
Thus we understand that some mass-words are in themselves plurals (dregs, lees, 5.28) and that in many instances we have transitions from one number to the other, see below 5.6 Metanalysis.

In Sc and some other dialects porridge, broth, soup and a few other names of dishes, though sg in form, take a vb in the pl, are referred to as they, and may be preceded by few and many; thus also in Ireland porridge, stirabout, Joyce 81.

5.225. Some words, which are now used only as mass-words, were formerly also used as thing-words; thus a good armour (Sh Ado II. 3.17) = 'a good suit of armour'; a dust (Sh R2 II. 3.91, John IV. 1.93) = 'a particle of dust'.

5.226. The division here made seems to me logically more consistent and at the same time better suited to account for the grammatical facts than the one found in Sweet's NEGr § 150 ff. According to him the chief division is into substance-nouns or concrete nouns and abstract nouns (that is, words like redness, stupidity, conversation). Concrete nouns are divided into

- common nouns
  - class-nouns (man)
  - material nouns (iron)
  - individual
  - collective (crowd)
- proper names (Plato).

Sweet does not see the essential similarity between his 'material nouns' and 'abstract nouns'; nor is his name 'material nouns' a fortunate one, because many names of immaterial phenomena present the same characteristics as iron, glass, etc. I do not see that 'material words make us think more of the attributes they suggest than of the thing itself' (§ 155): such a word as hammer makes us think of the attributes belonging to a hammer just as much as iron does. Neither can I see that the distinction Sweet makes in § 152 between singular class-nouns (like sun in popular as contrasted with scientific language) and plural nouns (like tree) is at all valuable: both represent 'countables', even if there is more occasion in one case than in the other to use the word in the plural.

5.23. We shall now consider some special cases of mass-words and their relation to thing-words.

The difference between the singular of mass hair (which may be partly due to the OE neuter pl hær) and the modern plural hairs is that in the first instance we
think of the mass without separating it into the several small units that go to make up the mass, while *hairs* individualizes them:

Sh Gent III. 1.362 shee hath *more hair* then wit. and more faults then *haire* (but in other places Sh has *hairs* where now the sg of mass would be used) | AV Matth 10.30 the very *haire* of your head are all numbred | Mi SA 1135 [strength] giv'n thee in thy *hair*, Where strength can least abide, though *all thy hairs* Were bristles | Di D 205 a gentleman with grey *hair* and black eyebrows | Merriman S 69 schoolgirls who have too *much hair* | his *hair* is sprinkled with grey = he has *some grey hairs* | when you have had your *hair* cut, you have not *so much hair*, but nearly as many *hairs* as before.—To express the amount of hair proper to one individual, the phrase *head of hair*, or colloquially *shock of hair* is used: Di DC 346 with a comic head of hair | ib. 22 a very nice man, with a very large head of red hair | Doyle S 1.244 a shock of orange hair.—The use of *whisker* as a mass-word is rare: Di Do 11 with a good deal of hair and whisker.

**Coal.** The plural form is used (as a survival) in the phrases *carry coals to Newcastle* and *heap coals of fire upon one's head* (from Prov. 25.22); also in *live coals* = burning or glowing pieces of coal | a *few coals* are still glowing | Kipl J 1.179 his little eyes like *hot coals*. But otherwise *coals* is now much rarer than the mass-word *coal*: *coal* is getting cheaper now | put *some more coal* (now rarely *coals*) on the fire | the ship had *too little coal* on board (never *too few coals*) || Di D 155 *too many coals* (obsolete) | Ritchie M 191 the machine had the advantage of only eating *coal*, and coke.—*Coke* and *charcoal* are now always used in the sg: Ru S 126 heaps of coke | Bennett W 2.127 much wood and charcoal

**Fruit:** *much fruit* (mass), *many fruits* (individually). In the Customs list, all *fruit* is divided into three parts—*dried fruits*, *green fruits*, and nuts.—But it is impossible to use, say, *apple* or *pear* or *cherry* thus as a mass-name.
Compare also *much cake* and *many cakes*; but *biscuit* is not often used as in Defoe R 56 *I fill’d my pockets with bisket*, and eat it. In Alabama they say: *I can eat ten biscuit* any day, see Payne Al. — Cf. p. 493.

_Coin_ = ‘coined money’: pay him (back) in his own coin; _coin_ in the sense ‘piece of money’ has the regular pl _coins_: a few Japanese _coins_.

**5.24.** In military language _shell_, _grape_ and _shot_ are used as singulars of mass. Note the difference between this meaning of _shot_ (== missiles, ammunition) and the other (discharge of a firearm), which of course has the regular plural: _many shots_. _Ball_ also may be found in this way: Macaulay H 2.178 their _powder and ball_ were spent.—_Bullet_ is no longer used as a mass-word.

_Lace_ in the sense of _G spitzen, F dentelles_, is generally a sg of mass; but pl in Thack S 142 a trousseau of _laces_, satins, jewel-boxes, and tomfoolery. In _boot-lace_, etc., the pl is of course frequent, as this is a thing-word.

Compounds of _ware_ (earthenware, hardware) are generally used as mass-words; the pl _earthenwares_ denotes different kinds of _earthenware_; occasionally the sg may be found referred to by a pl pronoun: Defoe R 170 my _earthen ware_ . . . I contrived to make _them_ with a wheel . . . it was burnt red like other earthen ware.

A house built of _stone_ or _brick_: note the parallelism with _wood_, and on the other hand the difference: _many stones_ (bricks) go to the building of that house, but _much wood_ (_many pieces of wood_). More U 133 the owte sydes of the walles be made of brycke || GE A 178 A pretty building I’m making, without either bricks or timber | Shaw 2.81 bricks and mortar.

Cf. also: the book was printed in _black-letter_ | his manuscript was set up in _type_ before his death.

_Apparatus_ as in Gissing B 358 purchasing books or scientific _apparatus_, may be either the Latin pl (fourth declension) or a mass-word; the Latin pl _stamina_ is often used as an Engl. sg of mass (2.65).
5.25. As already mentioned (5.223), the names of many kinds of trees are used in the sg to indicate the corresponding kind of wood as material: Sh Oth II. 1.8 ribbes of oake | Bennett W 1.30 that cupboard, of oak inlaid with maple and ebony | Chesterton F 185 a bungalow built of bamboo.

But such names, as well as other names of plants, may also be used as mass-words to denote live plants (cf. wheat, barley, corn, etc.):

RuP 1.62 a group of dark Italian pine and evergreen oak | Stevenson B 57 oak and beech began to take the place of willow and elm | ib. 60 a thick wood of flowering hawthorn | Caine E 147 a scraggy clump of eucalyptus | Wilde HP 32 a thicket of wild hemlock | Gissing R 92 waste-land, overflowered with poppies and charlock | Parker R 268 among the ferns and bracken | Zangwill G 47 She strode ahead of him, through the wet bracken | NED: Southern writers often make bracken collective [From whence it may be inferred that this usage is not found in the North of England or Scotland]. Instances from Tennyson in Dyboski, p. 89. — Cf. p. 493.

5.26. Again, names of countable immaterial objects may be thus used as mass-names; thus especially verse (as a contrast to prose): a volume of German verse, while verses individualizes: some of his verses are not harmonious. In the case of verse one might think of the French pl vers or of -s being haplological for -ses (cf. Ch B 4503); but this does not apply to the rest of the examples:

Wordsw P 5.179 to tell again In slender accents of sweet verse, some tale | Holmes A 46 whole volumes of unpublished verse | Walker, Lit Vict Era 289 Charles Tennyson confined himself to the shorter kinds of verse | Collingwood R 53 he wrote verses to her | Raleigh Sh 74 The Essays of Elia are a tissue of Biblical phrase | ib. 96 its speeches are full of classical allusion | ib. 112 a wonderful fertility in the invention of comic situation | Wilde In 115 Ruskin’s prose ... so sure and certain in subtle choice of
word and epithet | Spencer A 1.377 Lewes was full of various anecdote | Benson W 77 he poured forth a continuous flow of jest and anecdote | Phillpotts K 98 the stories were usually wanting in detail | Doyle S 6.216 the lady's story was complete, the detail was fairly exact. — Cf. p. 493.

5.27. Finally I shall give a few instances of other words used in the sg as mass-words:

Ml H 1.375 her teares to pearle he turned | ib. 2.161 | Sh R2 IV. 4.322 The liquid drops of teares that you have shed, Shall come againe, transform'd to Orient Pearle (other Eliz. examples ESt 14.141) | Ward F 407 the big sycamore was nearly in full leaf (cf. in blossom, in bloom) | McCarthy 2.625 The loss of English life had been terrible, and worse than the mere loss of life was the fact that lives had been thrown away to no purpose. — Cf. p. 493.

It must be specially noticed that these words do not take a verb in the plural as those dealt with in 4.8, though Shakespeare in one place construes coral in that way: Tp I. 2.397 Of his bones are corrall made; cf. on the other hand, agreeing with present-day usage, Sonn 130 Currall is farre more red.

5.28. Plural mass-words.

In many cases the corresponding singular form is used, more or less rarely, in the same signification. The following list makes no pretention to completeness.

5.281. First we take material masses.

chattel(s) . effects . stocks. — Note that raw material and raw materials are generally used indiscriminately.

victuals: sg now practically extinct. Sh has once victual, three times -s | Bacon A 2.33 victual, but 1.3 and 1.11 victuals | Swift J 159 we had such very fine victuals that I could not eat it | By DJ 2.145 the best feelings must have victual: little | GE A 411 (vg) good victual enough. According to F. N. Scott (Verbal Taboos, in The School Review, June '12) many people have an aversion to victuals, which would tend to mean 'uninviting food in unattractive surroundings', while the sg victual, which occurs
four times in Tennyson's 'Geraint and Enid', is not only inoffensive but even poetically congenial. — Cf. p. 493.

cates . vivers (Sc) . sweetmeats.

molasses: "In the West [of U. S.] the word is used in the plural; e.g. those molasses" (Farmer, Am.). In England the word is little used, but seems to be sg: Masefield C 220 the molasses that was left.—Funk-Wagnalls, Dict.: a low-grade concentrated concentrated molasses.

oat is very rare instead of the usual oats: Tennyson 261 had the wild oat not been sown. In an article in World's Work 1907 p. 541 oat seems to be used of the plant, oats of the grains: the old cultivated oat . . a new breed of oats . . from the Garton oat it is possible to have an oatmeal which is meal of oats and not the meal of oats and oat husks, etc. (Cf. NED oat 2b). Oats with pl construction: Thack N 594 his lordship sowed tame oats now after his wild ones. As a sg it is found at any rate in much oats; cf. also Swift 3.358 their oats, which there groweth naturally. In compounds oat: oatmeal. — Cf. p. 493.

hop(s) . weeds (in garden).

When brains is used in speaking of what is contained in one person's skull, the idea is not, as sometimes supposed, the scientific one of the two cerebral hemispheres, nor that of the cerebrum and cerebellum, but the popular one of the brain as an indistinguishable mass, and the pl is comparable to that in bowels, etc. Therefore it is necessary to use the pl form in the phrases to blow out (knock out) somebody's brains; cf. also NED: "In 16th c. it became usual to employ the pl instead of the sg when mere cerebral substance, and not a definite organic structure, was meant; this usage still continues: we say a dish of brains, a disease of the brain." The pl is also used frequently in the signification 'intellectual power'. On the sg construction of the pl form (which is not mentioned in NED), see below 5.752.

cinder(s) . curd(s) . embers (sg rare, Poe 25 each separate dying ember) . grounds . dregs . hards . lees (Swinb T 162 the
lee of sorrow; the NED has examples of this sg from 1390 to 1813; lees construed as sg only in Sh Mcb II. 3.77 the meere lees Is left this vault to brag of. suds. proceeds. remain(s). vails ‘money given to servants by a visitor’.

contents: in the 17th c. sg construction; now pl as in Di T 2.70 These were its contents | Ru C 1 most of the contents are stated more fully in my other volumes; the sg content is used in the sense ‘containing-power, capacity’, of a vessel, etc.: cubic content.

Here must be mentioned also some verbal substantives in -ings, denoting material masses: belongings. (paper-) hangings. leavings. sharings. sweepings. winnings, the sg of which is rare in that sense (generally passive).

On ashes see 4.62; cf. sweets, greens, valuables 9.7; assets 5.631; goods 5.782; wages 5.753.

5.282. As plural immaterial mass-words we must reckon the names of various diseases:


pox, smallpox see 5.76.

Thus also in names of moods, more or less approaching states of illness: blues. creeps (Chesterton F 160). dumps. jumps (Galsworthy P 1.54). sulks. sullens. Most of these are colloquial or slang.

5.283. With regard to plural mass-names there is some difficulty in expressing quantity, as many cannot well be used because it implies countability, and much presupposes the sg number; thus a great quantity or similar expressions must be resorted to. There is, however, some tendency to use much as an adjunct with plurals, which are then considered as masses; cf. the following quotations, in some of which much may also be taken as an adverb:

Roister 69 much things ye spake | Swift J 141 Here has been such a hurry, with the Queen’s Birthday, so much fine clothes... | Darwin L 2.113 my object here is
to think about nothing, bathe much, walk much, eat much, and read *much* novels [*much* evidently due to the preceding *much*'s] | Schreiner T 54 There’s not too *much* cakes and ale up here | Jerome T 31 (vg) ’E ’adn’t got too *much* clothes on | Fielding 3.427 the money would be so *much* gains in her pocket | id. T 4.227 so *much* spirits must be required. — Cf. Appendix p. 494.

Thus also rarely *little*: Defoe R 2.202 she was able to give very *little signs* of life.

**Individualization and Concretion**

5.31. In those cases in which there is no special word to denote one of the single elements that together make up a mass, recourse must be had to some such word as *piece*, *bit*, *article* (*—* *of*). To this a numeral may be attached, and very often also another adjective.

5.32. Thus with *furniture*, which is obsolete in the signification ‘the action of furnishing’, and which now denotes the whole of the movable articles in a room, etc. (G ‘hausgerät’ sg, ‘mobiliar’ sg, ‘möbel’ pl): all the furniture of the house was very old-fashioned | to hire out furniture (*möbel vermieten*) | a useful piece of furniture (*ein nützliches möbel*) | there was not a single piece of furniture in the room | Scott Iv 186 one or two clumsy articles of furniture | Barrie MO 147 every article of furniture from the chairs to the mantel-border || Gissing B 82 silk hat... he pointed to the piece of *head-gear*.

*food*: various articles of food (also, however, *various foods*, as with *drinks*).

*money*: much money | a piece (bit) of money. But *moneys* (obs. monies) is by no means rare in the sense ‘sums of money’; in Sh four times in the mouth of Shylock, once used by Evans, and once in Tim | Sheridan 209 then, you know, you haven’t the moneys yourself, but are forced to borrow them for him of a friend.—Oh, I borrow it of a friend, *do I*? | Scott Iv 131, 133, 304 (always Jews speaking) monies | Carlyle S 77 What moneys are realised
... of said moneys | id. Rem 2.217 he had made immense moneys | Di T 1.283 she counted the small moneys that had been taken during her absence | Thack P 2.236 | Trollope D 2.198 | Tennyson Foresters often, as a pseudo-archaism | Mered H 3.43.

5.33. As already mentioned (5.211), words denoting qualities, etc., really belong to the class of immaterial mass-words. This becomes especially evident when we see that to individualize, that is here to denote a concrete outcome or visible manifestation of the quality, recourse is had to similar expedients as with furniture, etc., namely to use piece, bit (colloquial), act, stroke, or point.

Examples abound:

Sh Wint IV. 4.695 it were a peece of honestie to acquaint the King withall || BJo 1.50 a true piece of civility | Austen P 214 this piece of civility | ib. 312 a stroke of civility || More U 191 a poynte of humanitie || Defoe G 148 a peice of justice due to him | ib. R 2.153 an unsufferable piece of injustice || ib. R 203 a bloody and unnatural piece of cruelty || Defoe G 68 the grossest peice of brutality | Fielding T 4.32 certain pieces of brutality, commonly called justice || Mered H 417 some wonderful piece of generosity to his rival || Black F 1.136 I’m going to step in and prevent this piece of folly || Mered E 234 so cruel a piece of selfishness || Black F 1.179 may I ask you if what you said was only a bit of modesty || Di Do 172 your ambition is a piece of monstrous impudence || Defoe G 70 this shamefull peice of negligence | Bennett W 1.97 he died through a piece of neglect || Sh Ado III. 3.180 the most dangerous piece of lechery | Ward M 145 it was a piece of bad taste || BJo 1.46 what strange piece of silence is this? || Lewes H 616 a bit of logical audacity || Gissing B 393 such a piece of recklessness || Carlyle H 185 a theory that the French Revolution was a general act of insanity || Swift T 7 a wise piece of presumption to inscribe these papers to your lordship || Scott A 1.319 many will consider it a piece of Quixotry to give you a meeting || Di
D 381 I felt as though it would have been an act of *perfidy* towards Dora to have a natural relish for my dinner || Di M 140 the shopman was delighted with this piece of *humour* | Mered E 2 humorists are difficult: it is a piece of their humour to puzzle our wits || Gissing B 368 a tremendous bit of *satire* | ib. 424 many strokes of satire || Raleigh Johnson 174 a strange piece of *irony* || Stevenson C 15 it would be a piece of *little wisdom*.

5.34. information, etc.: much valuable information | a piece of information | Ridge G 84 the most interesting item of information || Fielding T 1.266 an unwelcome piece of *news* | Swift J 49 A comfortable piece of news! | two pieces of bad news | Austen E 161 You like news — and I heard an article in my way hither | Austen P 407 an article of news which then began to be in circulation | Poe S 270 an item of news like this | McCarthy 2.13 this news from China || Fielding T 1.78 women are more inclined to communicate all pieces of *intelligence* to their own sex than to ours | Goldsm 639 I have followed you here with a trifling piece of intelligence | Doyle St 125 Are you sure of this piece of intelligence? || GE Mm 236 She communicated this piece of *knowledge* to Mr. F | London F 87 a matter of common knowledge || Stevenson V 114 a fact is not called a fact, but a piece of *gossip* || Hardy L 160 this account, though only a piece of *hearsay* || Henley Burns 316 another piece of *scandal* || Dickens Do 382 a piece of *truth* || Meredith EH 425 a piece of *nonsense* || Ridge G 200 it was all a piece of agreeable *imagination* || Di Do 134 this concluding piece of *praise* || a terrible deal of *abuse* | two words of vulgar abuse.

Knowledge is rare in the pl: Ru Sel 1.200 serviceable *knowledges*; see also 5.39.

advice, etc.: Fielding T 2.129 a piece of advice | ib. 3.129 a short hint, of advice | Di D 163 my other piece of advice you know | ib. 431 take a word of advice | Kipl J 1.18 a young wolf would have remembered that advice every hour || Caine S 2.168. He had reminded himself of
a common piece of his mother's counsel | Gissing B 238
A last piece of counsel.

Advices in this sense is rare (an exemple from Gibbon in NED): Burns 1.280 how monie counsels sweet, how monie lengthen'd, sage advices, the husband frae the wife despises! For another signification of advices see 4.62.

consolation, etc.: one bit of consolation is that the amount was so small | Di Do 77 that unanswerable piece of consolation || Di D 192 my aunt had recounted these particulars as a piece of confidence in me.

5.35. luck, etc.: Black F 2.220 an extraordinary stroke of good luck | Wilde D 150 What an extraordinary piece of luck || Sheridan 248 his coming at this time is the cruellest piece of ill fortune | GE Mm 216 under this stroke of ill-forte | Black F 2.200 a stroke of good fortune | Poe S 15 two of those almost inconceivable pieces of good fortune which are attributed to .. Providence || Di Do 137 at this unexpected stroke of success.

5.36. policy, etc. GE M 2.259 a great stroke of policy | Stevenson V 94 an artful stroke of policy || Black F 1.200 he had overlooked this little bit of stealthy advance || Mered E 43 as a piece of tactics || Carlyle R 2.205 a finished piece of social art || Mered E 228 a piece of conduct || Mered H 79 a noble piece of habit || Austen M 162 such a piece of true acting || Mered E 245 a sheer piece of impromptu || Carlyle R 2.318 our second and last piece of intercourse | Stevenson MB 187 It was a piece of religion to defend the Mikado; it was a plain piece of political righteousness to oppose a tyrannical and bloody usurpation || Stevenson MP 17 a piece of privilege.

service, etc.: BJo 1.43 this small piece of service (also 47) | Henley Burns 234 he did for the people a piece of service equal to that | Mered E 231 doing her a piece of service || Black F 2.103 I had done this little scrap of good || Sh Mcb II. 3.134 this most bloody piece of worke | Fielding T 250 you have done a fine piece of
work | I hope to get two or three bits of work done before sunset || Di Do 143 a piece of extraordinary preference || Austen P 275 a good piece of fun.

5.371. *Kindness* means 'the quality of being kind'; the single act that shows this quality or feeling, therefore must be called *an act of kindness*, as in Wordsworth that best portion of a good man's life, His little, nameless, unremembered acts Of kindness and of love | Shelley Pr 215 I take this as rather an unkind piece of kindness in you. Cf. also Mered H 58 the rejection of a piece of friendliness.

But the word has also acquired the concrete signification of 'kind act', and as such has a plural (cf. acquaintance, 4.95, youth 4.94):

AV Ps 89.49 Lord, where are thy former loving kindnesses | Sh Err IV. 3.5 thankes for kindnesses | Di D 469 I thanked her for this mark of her affection, and for all her other kindnesses towards me | Wilde P 123 I shall remember great kindnesses that I have received.

5.372. Examples of concrete plurals of other similar words, chiefly in *-ness*:

Sh R 2 III. 2.216 flatteries | GE M 2.135 small benevolences | Haggard S 118 disappointments and secret bittersneses | Ru S 461 childishnesses | Austen P 316 his civilities | Wordsworth P 3.156 consciousnesses | GE M 2.135 her small egoisms | Ru S 1.480 happinesses | Kipl L 203 the meannesses of Dick | Ru S 1.444 these perfectnesses | ib. 282 uglinesses | Sterne 22 uneasinesses | Ru S 461 waywardnesses . . . none of their weaknesses. — Cf. also Harraden S 61 the real importances of life are the nothingnesses of every-day life.

A somewhat different use is found in Shaw D 49 a few thicknesses of brown paper across the chest are better than any fur coat, and in likenesses = 'portraits'.

5.381. *Business*, which in the sense 'being busy' has now developed another form *busyness* [biznis] see I 9.91, is now pronounced [biznis] and means 'serious

*Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.*
occupation, work, trade, affairs' collectively, and then is used generally in the sg (he does little business, or he does a good deal of business with them); the single affair is called a piece, or a stroke of business (Congreve 231 a great piece of business to go to Covent Garden | Burton, NED: people who wanted to do a stroke of business with some old volume).

But in the concrete sense of 'a particular occupation' or 'place of business, shop' the pl businesses may be used:

Sh Alls IV. 3.98 I haue to night dispatch'd sixteene businesses | Lr II. 1.129 | Ml J 126 | Swift J 138 that was two of my businesses with the Secretary | Ward D 1.223 the happy ideas I throw into one day of this place would stock twenty ordinary businesses | Ellis Plea Phon Spelling 99 in the multifarious businesses of common life | Lang E 197 prattle in print about men's private lives, their boots, their businesses, their incomes | Stevenson D 301 there is more in that business than meete the eye; there is more, in fact, in all businesses.

5.382. Luxury similarly, besides meaning the psychological quality of lasciviousness (†) as in Sh R 3 III. 5.80 his hatefull luxurie, And beastial appetite, or of indulging in costly things, as in Burns 1.114 may Heaven their simple lives prevent From Luxury's contagion, — comes to signify the concrete means of such indulgence, first as a mass-word (tables covered with luxury, Johnson in NED | an article of luxury) and then as a thing-word (a new luxury | a few luxuries | Shelley 410 jellies and mince-pies, And other such lady-like luxuries).

5.39. Plurals of abstracts are often used, especially in literary language, in a loose way, so that there is little or no difference between the sg and the pl:

Sh Oth II. 1.55 My hopes do shape him for the Gouernor | Gissing B 485 she wrote coldly, with the intention of discouraging his hopes. What hope was he so foolish as to entertain? | Mi S 805 while I at home sate full of cares and fears | Pope Aut 70 So dies her love,
and so my hopes decay | NP (NED) The fears of a general crisis are passing away | Di M 385 a crowd of welcomes shining out of every smile | Ru C 187 No nation ever made its bread either by its great arts, or its great wisdoms. By its minor arts or manufactures, by its practical knowledges, yes | Gissing B 358 a general revival of his energies | Bennett W 2.270 leave Fossette to her tender mercies (from Prov. 12.10).

Cf. also the familiar phrase it is a thousand pities (e.g. Darwin L 2.375) = a great pity.

The Generic Singular and Plural

5.4. An assertion about a whole species or class—equally applicable to each member of the class—may be made in various ways:

(1) the sg without any article: man is mortal;
(2) the sg with the indefinite article: a cat is not as vigilant as a dog;
(3) the sg with the definite article: the dog is vigilant;
(4) the pl without any article: dogs are vigilant;
(5) the pl with the definite article: the English are a nation of shopkeepers. — Cf. p. 494 and vol. VII 14.3.

It is, of course, always possible to emphasize the generic character of an assertion by adding every (every man, every cat) or any (any man, any cat), or by using all with the plural (all men, all cats). This last expression also has the meaning ‘all put together’; many logicians distinguish this meaning of the plural as ‘collective plural’ from the distributive plural, where all = ‘each’. The difference will be clear from such examples as: all the angles of a triangle are 180° [= together] | all the angles of a triangle are less than 180° [better: each of . . . is] | all the boys of this form are stronger than their teacher [if working together] | all the boys of this form are able to run faster than their teacher.—It is only with the latter kind that we are here concerned.
5.411. The sg without an article in this generic sense—probably a remnant from the time when the articles were not in general use—is found with man and woman, but not with any other names of living beings. The generic man may refer to both sexes or to ‘males’ only: Mi A 55 God sees not as man sees, chooses not as man chooses | Pope Ess on M 2.2. The proper study of mankind is Man | Cowper 197 God made the country, and man made the town | Hawth Sn 82 I should arrive within the limits of man’s memory | London F 103 his arms were long, like prehistoric man’s | Wilde S 148 The true perfection of man lies, not in what man has, but in what man is | Kipl J 2.84 who is Man that we should care for him || Ch E 1324 womman is for mannes help ywroght | Sh Hml II. 2.321 Man delights not me; no, nor woman neither | Scott Iv 255 God made women weak, and trusted their defence to man’s generosity | Thack [where?] Man is destined to be a prey to woman | Barrie T 290 was it helplessness that man loves in woman then? | Gissing B 257 There’s no longer such a thing as woman in the abstract: We are individuals | Caine C 352 Man’s the head, but woman turns it | Woman is best when she is at rest. — Cf. vol. VII 14.3, f.

Cf. ME man (also men, me) = F on (< homo), as G and Dan. man.—ME also wyf: Ch E 1331 wyf is meannes help.

Sometimes man (= all men) is found opposed to men (= some men):

Dekker W 2. IV. 1.361 she [woman] was not made for men, but man | Kidd Soc Evol 14 Christianity was intended to save not only men but man | Swinb Hymn of Man: Men perish, but man shall endure; lives die, but the life is not dead. — Cf. Appendix p. 494.

Thus also Wells V 82 it wasn’t so much women as Woman that engaged his mind | NP ’12 Sterne was a lover of woman rather than of women.

5.412. Mass-words (5.2 f.) — material and immaterial — are similarly used in the sg without any article:
Bacon E 60 Money [i. e. all money, the whole species] is like muck, not good except it be spread | lead is heavier than iron | Shelley 457 True Love in this differs from gold and clay That to divide is not to take away | Time and tide wait for no man | life is short [= ‘the lives of all men’] | blood is thicker than water.

5.413. It may be an application of this rule that after a superlative with the partitive of we find in some cases the sg, where perhaps the pl would be expected: in the best of prose may be looked upon as a kind of contamination of in the best prose and in the best of proses, and if the sg is preferred, it is because of the general unnaturalness of a plural of prose. Thus also blood in Bentley T 42 you talk about the thing in the coldest of blood. Cf. however Poe 666 the most delicious, because the most intolerable of sorrow—though the pl sorrows is of course very frequent. This idiom has points of contact with the following sentences, in which any one, anybody stands for the plural all ; Stevenson MB XVIII He, first of any one, will understand | GE A 349 (vg) the gentleman I look up to most of anybody. Cf. also Ch C 86 best of every man.

5.42. A generic sg is used with the indefinite article: an oak is hardier than a beech; an is a kind of weaker any.

5.43. A generic sg with the definite article is very frequent, though in itself ambiguous: the origin of the ballad may refer both to the individual ballad we are just discussing, and to ballads in general as a literary species; in the latter case the ballad stands as a (typical) representative of the whole class.

Fielding 3.603 cursed by the widow, the orphan, the poor, and the oppressed [cf. below 5.45] | Gissing B 150 the woman, qua woman hates abstract thought | Wordsworth 79 The Child is father of the Man.

A somewhat similar use is found in such combi-
nations as Defoe G 65 their business is to hunt the stag and the fox.

Here belongs also the neuter adjective the beautiful = 'everything that is beautiful' in philosophic parlance (11.31).

5.441. A generalizing plural is very often used without any article: owls cannot see well in the daytime:

Note that men is rarely used thus in speaking of all mankind without regard to sex, as in Milton PL 1.26 justifie the wayes of God to men. Generally it means only the male part of mankind:

Sh Ado II. 3.65 Men were deceiuers euer | Zangwill G 70 Oh, how fickle men are! | Barrie T 289 What was it in women that made men love them | Haggard S 81 women among the Amahagger live upon conditions of perfect equality with men | Gissing B 259 I am studying men, she had said. In our day this is the proper study of womankind. — Cf. Appendix p. 494.

5.442. The names of the days of the week may be used both in the sg and in the pl in speaking of what generally happens on such and such a day of every week:


The latter phrase is now generally preferred, because on Thursday may also mean on the Thursday (past or future) nearest to to-day: When did he arrive? On Thursday | When will he be here? On Thursday.

Cf. also without the preposition on: Sunday is for church | Tuesday is their day for seeing people.

5.443. Here we may perhaps place the vague use of things and matters meaning nearly 'everything' (the whole situation, 'it') as in
Sh Wiv III. 4.69 they can tell you how things go | Austen M 25 I hope things are not so very bad | Di N 52 the appearance of things was not long in mending | Mill in Fox 2.274 things have certainly come to a strange pass || Mi SA 1348 Matters now are strain'd | Swift T 65 finding how matters were like to go | Scott A 2.322 you will only make matters worse | Di D 207. to facilitate matters.

5.45. A substantive in the pl with the definite article cannot any longer be used in a generic sense, though it is found in Bacon, who says *the philosophers and the physicians*, where now we should say *philosophers and physicians* (Bøgholm, p. 131). — Cf. p. 494.

But with adjectives without a substantive this is the ordinary way of expressing a whole class: *the old are [= old people are] apt to catch cold;* cf. the *English [= the whole nation] as contrasted to the Englishmen [= those of whom we are speaking],* see 11.4 and 5. Cf. also *the ancients and the moderns* etc. 9.3.

5.46. In consequence of either number being used to denote the whole class generally, we sometimes find both constructions combined in the same sentences; Elizabethan examples are quoted by Knecht K p. 21, among others: how to drive *the wolfe away, That seeke to make the little lambes their pray | Who writes of vertue best, are slaues to vize (vice?).*

This, I think, partly explains the construction in Mi PL 4.600, where we have the sg *beast* and *bird* in a pl sense (also referred to as *they, these*); though it may be also explained from the tendency to use uninflected forms in words going in pairs which will be dealt with in another place: *beast and bird, They to thir grassie couch, these to thir nestes, Were slunk.* — Both explanations may be also applied to Mi SA 75 Inferior to the *vilest ... Of man or worm*, which thus cannot be directly compared with *the best of prose* (5.28). Cf. also Bacon A 18.27 it destroyed *man and beast generally.*
Common Number

5.51. Instead of 'common number' a better term would perhaps be 'neutral number', if it were not for the unfortunate circumstance that the word 'neutral' in grammar calls up too readily the idea of 'neutral (neuter) gender'. What is meant here is a form of number which is neither definitely singular nor plural, which therefore leaves the category of number open or undetermined. If we were to imagine a language with one definite ending for the singular, and another for the plural, and with a third ending (or no ending) for the common number, it is clear that this third form would be used, first, in the generic sense to denote the whole class, where existing languages hesitate between the two numbers (5.4), second, in mass-words (5.2), and third, in those cases which we are now going to examine, those in which an alternative is implied.

It is evident that this is different from the phenomenon dealt with in chapter III (Unchanged Plural): if we have *one trout* and *six trout*, we have in neither case an instance of common number, though the form of the substantive is the same; the former is a definite singular and the latter a definite plural. On the other hand, *alms* in *he gave alms*, etc., may be called 'common number'; see 5.6 f. for other phenomena of the same order.

5.52. Where we hesitate between *one* and *two*, two forms are available, one with the sb in the sg: *a star or two*, and another with it in the pl: *one or two stars*, the number of the sb being determined by the nearest adjunct. Thus also *GEM 1.57 her last morsel or two* (where it would be too clumsy to say 'her last one or two morsels'). — Cf. Appendix p. 494.

A formally similar case is found in *more writers than one = more than one writer*, where, however, the idea is clearly plural.

5.53. The want of common number is often remedied by the clumsy device of joining two forms of the same substantive by means of *or*:
Defoe R [p. 2] the belief that some man or men had been on shore | Fielding T 3.65 Some particular chapter, or perhaps chapters, may be obnoxious | Spencer F 15 the part or parts called on to perform extra duty | Doyle S 5.9 a verdict of wilful murder against some person or persons unknown | Ridge L 7 Left by its parent or parents without visible means of subsistence.

This is particularly frequent in legal language, where it may even lead to such a phrase as this:

Bentham (in NED every) To all and every the children and child of the said intended marriage.

5.54. Some pronouns have no separate forms for the two numbers; in such sentences as Who came? | None came | Which do you choose? we therefore have instances of common number. So also from a formal point of view you came, though here the speaker will always have in his mind the idea either of one or of more than one. With which it is possible to add one, if the singular, and ones, if the plural is meant, so that we have here really the ideal triple form. With who (what) and none the advantage of having a common number disappears in all those cases in which they are subjects and no common-number form of the verb is available, as then the speaker has to choose between Who comes and Who come, etc., see 6.4.

5.55. On the advantage of having a common-number form in adjuncts see 6.13.

5.56. On the other hand, the lack of a common-number (and common-sex) form in the third-personal pronoun leads to the frequent use of they and their in referring to an indefinite pronoun (or similar expression) in the singular. "If you try to put the phrase, Does anybody prevent you? in another way, beginning with Nobody prevents you, and then adding the interrogatory formula, you will perceive that does he? is too definite, and does he or she? too clumsy; and you will therefore
say (as Thack does, P 2.260), Nobody prevents you, do they? . . . In the same manner Shakespeare writes (Lucr 125) eucrie one to rest themselves betake. The substitution of the pl for the sg is not wholly illogical; for everybody is much the same thing as all men, and nobody is the negative of all men; but the phenomenon is extended to cases where this explanation will not hold good” (Progr in L 28). (Note that the verb is very often in the sg in the same sentence in which their, etc., occurs.) Examples (besides those given in Progr 1. c. — Cf. also below p. 495):

every: Malory 196 every man lost other of their boundes (with another example quoted Baldwin § 77) | Sh Ado III. 4.60 God send every one their harts desire | Spect 171 when every body else is upon their knees | Swift P 56 every one as they like; as the good woman said, when she kissed her cow | ib. 123 every fool can do as they're bid | Defoe R 309 every man of them that comes a-shore are our own, and shall die, or live, as they behave to us | Shelley Pr 297 entreating everybody to drown themselves | Scott A 1.175 every body has played the fool in their turn | Austen E 11 everybody [was] in their best looks | Austen S 264 Everybody has a way of their own [thus innumerable times in Miss Austen] | Kingsley H 193 why should not every one be as happy as they could? | Di N 504 Let us give everybody their due | GE V 224 everybody might have been born idiots, instead of having their right senses | Ru P 1.157 everybody took their hats off [also F 34, T 191, S 200] | Ward M 137 we must allow everybody their own ways of doing things | Wilde S 12 Experience is the name everyone gives to their mistakes | Kipl J 1.228 everybody can be forgiven for being scared in the night if they see things they do not understand | Ridge G 49 It makes everyone look their age.

each: Austen M 37 each had their favorite | P 409 each felt for the other, and of course for themselves [also S 31, 338, 349] | By. DJ 1.2 Each in their turn like Banquo's monarchs stalk.
any: Congreve 231 How can anybody be happy, while they’re in perpetual fear? | Defoe P 107 nor could anybody help one another | Shelley Pr 76 if any one desires to know... they need only impartially reflect | Austen M 196 as anybody in their senses would have done | Scott A 2.343 anybody may think as they please | Kingsley H 306 Who ever heard of any one doing of their own will what they did not like? | GE A 336 a week was surely enough for any one to go out for their health | Ru P 1.307 anybody who cared to share their own commons with me [also F 90, T 193] | Stevenson A 79 it would startle any one if they could make a certain effort of imagination | Zangwill G 322 Nobody is pleased or vexed with anybody for the colour of their hair | Holmes A 124 I wonder if anybody ever finds fault with anything I say... I hope they do.

some: Hope D 56 We might see somebody else we know.—Oh, somebody else be hanged! Who wants to see 'em? | Ward D 1.325 Somebody will see us and tell father.—Not they; I'll keep a look-out.

no: Austen S 267 nobody in their senses would expect it | Di N 673 Nobody will pay you between this and twelve o'clock, will they? | Ru C 51 Now, nobody does anything well that they cannot help doing | Ru P 2.118 no one to pass it but against their wills | Shaw 1.213 no lady or gentleman would so far forget themselves | Shaw P 138 No man goes to battle to be killed.—But they do get killed | Benson D 167 no one means what they say when they pay compliments | Ward M 468 Nobody thinks of the book now, do they?

Examples with other words: Ch C 385 And whoso fyndeth hym out of swich blame, They wol come up... And I assoille hem | Austen E 56 Who makes you their confidant? | Austen P 348 who is there, whatever might be their former conduct, that she would believe capable of such an attempt, till it were proved against them? | Spencer A 1.110 unless a person takes a deal of ex-
exercise they may soon eat more than does them good | Ward F 417 When a person is so weak, they shrink, —don't they?—even from what they most desire | ib. 325 It was a pity,—but a body might have expected it, mightn't they? | Sh Err IV. 31. There's not a man I meete but doth salute me As if I were their well acquainted friend | Ru F 69 there is not one in a thousand who is ever taught, or can for themselves find out what a holy desire means | [Austen M 81 poor Julia, the only one out of the nine not tolerably satisfied with their lot] | AV Matth 18.35 if yee forgive not every one his brother their trespasses | Defoe G 37 We kno' 'tis the particular property of a Russ to think they kno' every thing.

Instead of their we have our when it refers to neither of us, etc.: Doyle S 6.197 neither of us had broken our fast | Scott Iv 373 we have each our secret | Ru P 2.162 we enjoyed ourselves, each in our own way.

**5.57.** We shall now consider some more or less exceptional cases of loose employment of the sg and pl forms, which may be with greater or less adequacy referred to the lack of a common-number form.

A sg word like a mother may be continued by means of them, implying 'all mothers': Sh Hml III. 3.31 'Tis meete that some more audience then a mother, Since Nature makes them partiall, should o’re-heare The speech | Swift 3.325 the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labour, and the latter were [pl, because man = men] a thousand to one in proportion to the former | ib. 3.376 they concluded I was not a native of the place, who all go naked [= as they all]. — Cf. p. 495.

**5.58.** We have the opposite phenomenon in Sh Gent IV. 4.32 how many masters would doe this for his servant? The question here implies “no one would”, and that induces his instead of their.

**5.59.** "She's worth ten of her daughter" (Thack P 3.198). In such comparisons, after a numeral + of,
the sg is constantly used; of is not partitive, but stands as it were for like, or we may say that ten of means 'ten times (the value of)'. If the pl daughters were used, it would imply the false idea that there were more than ten daughters. Though Malory here uses the pl (74 the scaubard is worth x of the swerdys—only one sword is mentioned), the sg construction is at least as old as Shakespeare: Sh H4B II. 4.238 thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy, worth fine of Agamemnon | Sh H4A II. 1.40 I know a trick worth two of that | Sh Cor IV. 5.174 worth six on [== of] him | Sh Ado III. 4.23 | Sterne 101 sleep ... I know pleasures worth ten of it | Lamb E 1.55 I am worth twenty of thee | Thack P 2.345 you are worth ten of me | Thack V 259 my poor good Rawdon is worth ten of this creature | Di D 353 Mr. W., who is worth five hundred of you—or me | Zangwill G 308 Beethoven is worth two of me. — Cf. p. 496.

Make = amount to:

Goldsm 658 She [Betty]'d make two of she [Miss Neville] | Norris P 30 he was a heavy-built man, would have made two of Corthell.

The same sg is found where no direct comparison is expressed:

Kingsley H 76 she would sacrifice me, or a thousand of me | Kipl L 83 when ten thousand of him find time to look up | Caine E 120 wish we could enlist a few thousands of him.

Numerical Metanalysis

5.61. I have ventured to coin the word 'metanalysis' for the phenomenon frequent in all languages that words or word-groups are by a new generation analyzed differently from the analysis of a former age. Each child has to find out for himself in hearing the connected speech of other people, where one word ends, and the next one begins, or what belongs to the kernel and what to the ending of a word, etc. In most cases he will
arrive at the same analysis as the former generation, but
now and then he will put the boundaries in another
place than formerly, and the new analysis may become
general. Familiar instances are a nadder which through
metanalysis becomes an adder, North Thriding which be-
comes North Riding, sur + ound which becomes surround
and is felt as if derived from round, vegetar-ian which is
felt as veget-arian and gives rise to fruitarian and even
nutarian. I shall give elsewhere a detailed classification
of various kinds of metanalysis.

Here we are concerned with numerical metanalysis,
i.e. metanalysis affecting the numerical value of a form.
A form that is originally a singular, may be taken to be
plural, or vice versa. This is especially frequent where
the s-ending is involved; and two essentially different
kinds are to be distinguished.

In the first place (5.62) an s originally forming part
of the kernel has been apprehended as the plural ending
and the word thus been syntactically treated as a plural;
a further development may be the formation of a new
singular = the original minus s (5.63). In the second
place (5.7) an s, which originally was an inflexional
ending, has been apprehended as belonging to the kernel;
the form in s has then been treated as a singular, and
in some cases a new plural has been formed, which thus
contains two s’es.

Quite naturally, the meanings of some words lend
themselves more readily than others to numerical met­
analysis; we shall find the two classes of mass-words and
of names of composite objects very fully represented in
the following lists.

An original singular used as a plural

5.62. The chief examples in which an s of the
kernel, which is still preserved, is taken as the pl ending,
are alms and riches.

Alms is OE ælmyse (ultimately from Gr. eleemosune),
ME. AR elmesse, Ch almesse with stress on the second syllable B 168, but on the first D 1609. The last quotation for the pl almesses in NED is from 1541. In most cases in which the word is used it is impossible to tell the number (take alms, give alms, etc.) thus in 8 out of 11 cases in Cruden’s Concordance to the Bible and in 9 out of 12 cases in Sh. Examples of the old sg are Sh Shrew IV. 3.5 a present alms | AV Tobit 4.10 almes doth deliuer | ib. 4.11 almes is a good gift | Acts 10.2 gaue much alms | Tennyson En Arden 813 scorning an alms (decidedly archaic).

Examples of plural construction: AV Tobit 1.16 I gaue many almes | ib. 2.14 where are thine almes | Dryden Hind III. 106 For alms are but the vehicles of prayers.

Compounds like alms-deed, alms-house and others show s as part of the old kernel.

Riches: F richesse was taken over as ME richesse, in Ch with stress on the second or first syllable; also the pl richesses occurs. After the stress shifting /s/ was voiced into [z] (I. 6.62) and was soon apprehended as the pl ending. The word is found extremely often in connexions which do not show the number (gain riches, envy him his riches, etc., thus in 15 of the 24 places in which it occurs in Sh). Bacon has riches is and riches are (Bøgholm 17); Shakespeare has the sg oftener than the pl construction. Now the word is always pl.

Examples of the sg: Caxton R 35 where is the rychesse becomen ... the rychesse was stolen | More U 107 all the riches that there is | Sh R2 III. 4.60 too much riches | Oth II. 1.83 the riches of the ship is come on shore | Fielding T I. 251 what signifies all the riches in the world?

Examples of the pl (hardly before E1E): Bacon A 44 these are the riches of Salomons House | Sh Gent IV. 1.13 My riches are these poor habiliments | Wordsw Sonn 83 riches are akin To fear, to change, to cowardice, and death | Di D 141 his riches hid themselves | Ru U 40 riches
are power | Ru C 197 his riches must diffuse themselves at some time | Merriman S 49 she was afraid of these riches, and mistrusted them.

Jaundice, F jaunisse, was often used in the 15th—17th c. as a pl (written -yes, -iers, -ers, NED, cf. other pl names of diseases); in Alabama we have the same phenomenon with cheese (them cheese) and licence (Payne, Word-List). — Cf. on pl pulse and laches below, p. 496.

5.631. In the following words we have back-formations, s being subtracted from the original kernel to form a new singular.

**Pea:** OE pise, pl pi(o)san from Lat pisum, ME pese, pl pesen; Bale T 991 a pease; E1E pease in both numbers, Sh only in the pl. 'Butler 1633 gives peas as sg and pease as pl, but he adds, “the singular is most used for the plural: as ... a peck of peas; though the Londoners seem to make it a regular plural, calling a pease a pea”'. The pl was long written pease (especially as a mass-word), thus still by Ruskin (R 1.61, 2.330), now peas. Note the collocation with mass-singualars in Defoe R 2.78 some peas, barley and rice. In compounds the s-form was long in use: pese porrege (Bale T 1566), pease-soup (Swift J 198, Lamb E 1.22), peascod (Sh; pease-cods Stevenson Und 15), peaseblossom (Sh), pease straw (Kipl P. 227). But here too the short form is now used: pease-cod (Scott Iv 213), pease-soup, etc.—Bridges, Eros 90, uses the archaic form: no bigger than a pease : : ease.

**Cherry:** ME cherris, F cerise. As early as 14th c. without s: chirie.

**Merry** ‘kind of black cherry’ (from 16th c.), by the side of merise, F merise.

**Sherry:** formerly sherris (Sh H4B IV. 3) from Sp Xerez, the x in Spanish being formerly pronounced [ʃ]. In this word the discarding of s was due less to its being apprehended as an inflexional ending than to its being amalgamated with the initial s of sack, the common sherris-sack by metanalysis becoming sherry | sack. Archaic forms
are used by Tennyson (113 *sherris-warmed*) and Browning (2.477, 478 *sherris*, 479 *sherris-brewage*).

*Gentry* is generally explained from *gentrice, gentris(e)*, OF *genterise*, which in the sense 'nobility' might be taken as a pl = 'the nobles'. The form was easily associated with such words as *ancestry, infantry, cavalry, nobility*.

*Riddle*: OE *rædels(e)*, cf. I 3.114, 3.246; Wyclif has the *redels* as a sg, Tindal *redles* as a pl.

Similar, but not quite indubitable, examples with the same ending are *bridle, girdle, shuttle, stickle*.

*Burial*: OE *byrgels*, ME an *buriels* (Rob of Gl), *biriele* (Gen and Ex); the ending was assimilated to -*al* < OF -aille as in *funeral*.

*Asset*: ME *assets* sg from F *assez*, Lat *ad-satis*; still sg in Bacon (assets ... it, assets is, Bøgholm 15, 16). Ex. of the new sg: Review of R. Jan. 1906. 21 a national asset of the first value.

*Eave*: OE *efes* cf. Got *ubizwa*. *Eaves* is now the ordinary form, apprehended as pl; *eave* is comparatively rare; NED has it from 1710; further Ouida, Wooden Shoes T 120 under a cottage eave | Ward El 162 Within its penthouse eave. From *eave* are derived the adj *eaved* and the sb *eavings*, also *eavedrops* (Tennyson 304, not in NED); the ordinary form is *eavesdrop, eavesdrip*.

*Marquee* 'large tent' from F *marquise*.

*Sash* (in *sash-window*), 17th c. *shash, shas* from F *chassis*, apparently mistaken for a pl.

*Skate*, orig. *skates* sg, pl *scatzes* 1695 in Nares; from Dutch *schaats*, pl *schaatsen*.

*Caterpillar*: probably from F *c(h)atepelose* 'hairy cat', *s* being subtracted as in the other words; the ending was thus assimilated to the ordinary -*ar, -er*.

On *succour* see below, p. 496.

**5.632.** Words in *-ese* formerly had a pl in *-eses*: Bacon A 22.4 and 35.25 *the Chineses*, thus also Mi PL III. 436; Lithgow (1692, see Johnson R 175) *Maltæzes*. Now the form in *-ese* is used as a pl (11.57), and vulgarly a
form in -ee is deducted as a sg, cf. Bret Harte’s “Heathen Chinee”; thus a Maltee, a Portugee, etc.

Yankee belongs here according to Logeman’s ingenious explanation (Volkskunde XVI. 186, cf. my Growth p. 177): Jan Kees ‘John Cheese’ as a nickname of the inhabitants of the Dutch colonies in America.

5.633. Other occasional back-formations of less importance, in which s has been deducted, are: aborigine NED | anana NED | antipod(e) NED | carrich Sc from carriches F catéchèse | chay [ʃaɪ] vg for chaise, NED from 1764, cf. Pegge Anecd. 1803. 53 Shay and po-shay, Di D 355 a pony shay, see also his sketch The Tuggs’s at Ramsgate; Ellis EEP IV 1068 | claw for clause, Pegge Anecd. i. c. | clow NED | copy for coppice copse | corp for corpse vg, Masefield O 92 a corp is a funny thing with no ‘ed; also Sc and North E, EDD | arch Sc, EDD, from F courches — couvre-chies pl acc of couvre-chief | cyclop (see 2.67) may not belong here | forcep 18th c. for forceps; cf. 2.67 | fur for furze, Joyce Ir. 104 | ho, Sc, e. g. in Ramsay Christ’s K. ‘a single stocking’, from hose | phalange (Spencer, etc.) ‘one of the bones of the fingers or toes’, from phalanges, pl of phalaux; cf., however, F phalange, It falange, It falange from the obl. cases of phalax | pleb ‘vulgar fellow’ from plebs, or more likely shortened from plebeian | row [raʊ] ‘disturbance’, if from rouse taken as a pl. | specie vg, from species | shimmy vg for chemise | wheatear ‘kind of bird, whitetail’ for wheatears from white + arse.

I suppose that biznai, which is found four or five times in Kipl S (152, etc.) as a schoolboys’ word for business, is a parallel case.

5.634. Summon: this rare sb. (one quotation in Davies’s Suppl. E. Gloss.) may be either directly from the vb or a back-formation from summons, used as a pl (Davies has a quotation from 1590 these so hasty summones; I have found one in Fielding T 1.100 all these summonses). But ordinarily summons is a sg, from F semonce, in which /ʃ/ has become [z], see I. 6.62: Sh Mcb II. 1.6 a heavie summons, thus also Austen M 336, PP 83, Quincey 102, Di N 8, Beaconsf L 331. Thack V 186, N 842, Garrett T 29, Caine C 290, Meredith R 41, E 324, Ruskin Sel I. 216. The pl summonses is avoided by some, but is found e. g. Ward D I. 228, Doyle S 2.142, M 27. In juridical and sometimes in familiar language summonses is used as a vb, see Alford Q 10, Galsworthy P 25, C 66.
An original plural used as a singular

5.71. This kind of metanalysis will most easily take place where there is something unusual in the formation of the plural form, or when the original singular does not at all or not often occur beside the plural. In some of the following instances both these conditions are fulfilled.

5.711. First we have some French words with the plural ending voiceless [s] against the ordinary rule (cf. vol. I 6.61).

invoice < F envois, pl. invoices.
quince < F coigns; Ch Ros 1374 coyms as a mono-syllabic pl.
trace < F trai(t)s.
chess (always sg) is the F pl (or nom. sg.) esches; an E pl chesses is probably never found.
dice, F des, now more or less dissociated from die, which in various other senses ('stamp for coining', etc.) has the regular pl dies [daiz]. In the sense 'cube for gambling' die is found By DJ 2.199 all of theirs upon that die is thrown | Mered E 262 the die is cast. But dice is found pretty early as a sg; and still Thack P 3.227 he swear as he never would touch a card or a dice. The pl dyces as early as 14th c. That dice is no more felt as a pl, appears also from the formation of the vb to dice and the sb a dicer.
grece † 'a flight of stairs', OF grez pl of gre < grado; pl greces found occasionally. Still in dialects.
[lettuce possibly from F pl laitures.]

5.712. Also in some native words [s] is found contrary to the ordinary rule:

truce, orig. pl of † treow 'pledge of truth', AR 286 triws; More U 263 truce . . . it | Ml J 803 this truce pl truces.
bodice, orig. pl of body (a pair of bodies); pl bodices. To these may also be reckoned bellows and gallows,
because of the old pronunciation [beəs, gæləs], preserved vulgarly, while educated speech has now [belouz, gælouz]:

_bellows_, often a pair of bellows; a bellows is found from the year 1568 on (NED); see for instance Keats 2.148 My voice is not a bellows unto ire. The pl bellowses is found in Hobbes 1676 (NED) and is now dial. (e.g. Barrie M 329), but not used in standard English.

gallows, OE galga sg, Ch galhoes (B 3924, 3941) in speaking of one instrument for hanging; Caxton a galhouse (Kellner's ed. of Bl. X; popular etymology??); More U 43 one gallows; Sh a gallows (Tp V. 1.216); Sh uses also gallows in speaking of more than one instrument, yet he makes his gaoler say gallowses (Oymb. V. 4.213). Latroon Engl. Rogue (1665) II. 148 gallowses. From the 19th c. Stevenson T 26 a gallows | id. M 128 the gallows itself | Browning 2.317 a goodly gallows | Shaw P 54 on that gallows. Annandale, Dict., recognizes gallowses as the only pl in the sense 'suspenders', which according to NED is dialectal, Sc or US.

Gill 1621 makes a distinction between _flowerz_ flores and _flowers_ menses muliebres, singulari caret.

Cf. also _sixpences_ 5.171.

**5.721.** The following are instances of metanalysis, though the s-ending has the normal pronunciation. We have a few denominations of living beings (the first of them, however, are not completely parallel to the other cases, as they may never have been in use in the plural in that sense).

In (bahuvrihi) compounds we have formal plurals denoting one single being and used as singulars, as in a sly-boots (Caine M 192 an old sly-boots) | a smooth-boots | a lazybones with the variants lazyboats and lazylegs (Di) | Sh Oth I. 1.66 does the thick-lips owe | Thack S 16 Louis XIV, his old squaretoes of a contemporary | Henley Burns 285 she was something of a lightskirts | a sobersides.

Cf. Appendix below, p. 496.
5.722. But when the first-word is a numeral, the sg form is used (cf. also such OE adjectives as *fif-wintre* 'five years old', which may partly account for the type): a *five-leaf* (OE *fifleaf*, cf. *cinquefoil*) | a *five-finger* | a *four-oar*, cf. 7.1, 8.93. | a *nine-bark*. We have also the sg form in a *blue- stocking*.

5.723. *Buttons* as a name for a page was probably at first a jocular appellation; he had so many buttons that people would say "he is all buttons" (cf. he is all ear; Hope D 57 . . . said Dolly, all over dimples) or "he is nothing but buttons," and then he would be called Buttons. We may say a *buttons*, but hardly in the pl buttonses.

*Stripes* as a similar name for a tiger is quoted by Sundén, Ellipt. Words 21 from NP '02.

The word *boots* 'servant in hotel who cleans boots' is not quite parallel. I suppose it originated in people shouting "Boots" when they wanted their boots, but this was taken as if they had called that particular servant — the effect was finally the same — and *boots* thus came to be the name of the man. (A somewhat similar shifting is seen in Holberg: From the signature *Imprimatur* with the name of the censor appended to it this Latin word was taken as the name of his title, and the question resulted "Who is this year's *imprimatur*"?) — A rare parallel to *boots* is *sails* as a designation for the sailmaker on board (Masefield C 145; NED from Hotten's Slang Dict. and Smyth's Sailor's Word-book).

As the etymology of *a jackanapes* is doubtful, I do not know whether it should be mentioned here; the pl two *jackanapeses* is found Swift J 196. — Cf. p. 496.

5.724. *Better* and *elder* as substantives (with a possessive pronoun) are now only used in the pl, but this form (in *-s*) was formerly often (and is still vulgarly) applied to a single person:

Sh Shr II. 7 So well I know my dutie to my elders [seems to be addressed to one, but may be taken = those older than myself] | Sh As II. 4.68 who cals? Clown:
Your betters, Sir | Swift J 66 it is hard to see these
great men use me like one who was their betters | Fielding T 1.221 though he is my betters | GE SM [vg] 
you’re my elders and betters [speaking to one person].

5.725. Commons is not very frequent as a sg in
the sense of ‘common people, the third estate or their representatives’ (NED quotation 1591) Di N 15 that most
honorable and glorious Commons of England in Parlia­
ment assembled | Di D 524 the Commons was scandalized.
—Cf. commons in a different sense 5.751.

5.726. The legal term tales [teili-z], originally a pl as in
Latin, is now used as a sg: award a tales ‘selection of
people to supplement a jury’.

5.73. Plural names of composite objects are in
some instances treated as singulars:

a scissors = a pair of scissors, Thack H 18 a silver
scissors | Brontë W 60 | Egerton K 98, 100 | Doyle B 56 a
very shortbladed scissors. (‘Rare’ accord. to NED, whose
oldest example is from 1843).

a pincers; a tongs; a tweezers (Doyle M 121).
scales; only Sh Ro I. 2.101 that christall scales; here
that may be due to attraction to crystal.

bagpipes: GE A 224 Give the lad a bagpipes instead
do a rattle.

buttocks: Ml F 850 a buttocks †.

colours (ab. 1700) = ‘a pair of colours’ †; now in
military language a colour, though the word is generally
used in the pl.

arms in the signification ‘heraldic insignia’ is nearly
always pl; the NED has two quotations for the sg con­
struction (Marlowe, Topsell), to which may be added Lamb
E 1.152 What is become of the winged horse that stood
over the former? a stately arms. (Cf. 5.742 on Wingelbury
Arms as the name of an inn).

tweeze ‘surgeon’s box of instruments’, F étuis; now
obsolete. From tweeze is formed tweezers.
5.741. Plural words indicating different kinds of places are sometimes used as singulars:

*barracks*: NP '97 the great universal barracks is kept together | Quiller Couch M 200 in a deserted barracks. — Formerly as in Gibbon M 140 a barrack; also Galsw MP 108.

diggings NED.

gardens: there is a fine Zoological Gardens in our town | Shaw 2.75 a tea gardens | O'Rell John Bull 59 By the side of Hyde Park stands Kensington Gardens.

grounds: a grounds with old trees, Trollope (q).

hustings, a hustings, Carlyle quoted ESt 6.374.

jakes † (etym unknown; but see my Linguistica p. 413), Sh Lr II. 2.72 a iakes, also Swift T 11 and 93.

leads 'a lead roof', † occas. construed as sg. NED.

links: a golf links Shaw J 102 and often.

lodgings: Caine M 29 at another lodgings (dialectal? at any rate not recognized) cf. 4.62.

mews: originally new 'cage for hawks', Fielding T 1.167 my partridge-mew. Pl mews 'range of such cages, later used for stabling', Stevenson D 157 is that a mews? The plural mewses occurs in an act of Parliament of 1797 (Alford Q 18) and is (was?) frequent in police placcards in London.

precincts: See Appendix below, p. 496.

quarters: my quarters was . ., Bentley quoted Flügel.

shambles: the old sg shamble OE sceamol is obsolete, and shambles is construed as a sg: Sh H6C I. 1.71 to make a shambles of the Parliament House (in Oth IV. 2.66 probably pl) | Stevenson M 224 Bourron is a perfect shambles | Bennett W 2.224 the butcher's shop—what a bloody shambles | Doyle S 3.187.

stables: Di D 264 smelling like a livery-stables.

stews: BJo 1.30 a stews; now obsolete, used archaically by Kipling B 236 They'd call my house a common stews. According to Mulcaster 1582 p. 219 stews is a contraction of stewhouse, which is phonetically possible.

vaults: a wine-vaults.
works: a chemical works, a gas-works (frequent). Masefield C 322 a dye-works | Masefield M 200 an iron-works | Bennett A 46 Price's works was small | ib. 86, etc. a works.

5.742. With these may be compared such geographical names as Athens, Brussels, Marseilles, Naples, etc., which are now always sg: Brussels is a fine city.—Thus also Flanders. Further: Defoe P 27 as Spittlefields was then . . . it | Di Sk 408 Such is the Winglebury Arms [an inn] at this day | Di N 179 Manchester Buildings is an eel-pot | Di D 320 telling you what Doctors' Commons is | ib. 326 Doctors' Commons was approached by a little low archway | London A 345 the Solomon Islands is not big enough for the pair of us | ib. 263 the Solomons was no place for a woman. Cf. the United States 5.18.

5.751. Plural mass-names used as singulars.

Chintz, the name of a kind of printed cotton cloth, is originally the pl of chint (from Hindi chint, NED); the pl chintzes is occasionally found.

baize 'woollen stuff', † sg bay < F baies (from bai, the name of the colour); pl occasionally bayses.

commons at Oxford 'a definite portion of victuals': bring me a commons of bread and butter.

bitters: Pinero M 39 You can give me a bitters = a glass of bitter medicine with alcohol, thus different from a bitter. The sg use not in NED.

5.752. Brains, in Sh sometimes construed as sg: Hml III. 1.182 Whereon his braines still beating, puts him thus From fashion of himselfe [read brain, the s from still? or brain's?] | Lear I. 5.7 If a mans braines were in's heeles, wert [== were it] not in danger of kybes? Now probably only in much brains and little brains: Phillpotts M 273 if I had as much brains in my head as Ruth has in her little finger | Zangwill G 87 I felt the little brains I had getting addled in my head. The verb with brains would now always be in the pl, and the plural conception is clearly seen in Hope, R 33 unless heaven sent me a
fresh set of brains, I should be caught in much the same way | Masefield M 158 I haven’t got the brains. I suppose you’ll say they’re not essential. They are essential, and you’ve probably got as many as any writer.—In the same sense (‘intelligence’) the sg brain is also used, as in Masefield M 148 his brain was heavy | Bennett B 65 when she has brain ... I have no brains. Cf. 5.281 and 283.

5.753. Wages is often found construed as a sg, though not now so often as formerly: More U 67 a cer­teyne, limityd wayges | ib. 302 theire dayly wages is so lytle | AV Rom 6.23 the wages of sinne is death (where death may be the subject) | Thack V 47 (vg) their wages is no better | Trollope D 2.109 not knowing what wages is | NP 10 how much wages do you get? Examples of the pl construction: Brontë P 23 shabby wages they are, too | Finnemore Social Life 3 his wages were a penny a day less than the sums given above. The sg wage, which many grammars do not recognize, is now extremely frequent: Wells U 188 the minimum wage ... a certain wage | Collingwood R 314 a fair wage | Hardy F 390 a fixed wage | Stevenson A 49 the wage | ib. 53 a small wage | Caine C 268 three-halfpence an hour was the average wage.

5.754. Pains in the signification ‘trouble, application in working’ is often used as a sg, especially in the combination much pains: Ascham S 78 take so much paines; thus also Swift often, Defoe R 271, Fielding 3.624 after much fruitless pains, Sheridan 198, Coleridge B 48, Scott A 2.315, Wordsw. P. 4.112, Di D 604, Ruskin Sel 1.267, Black F 2.8, Darwin L 2.379 too much pains cannot be taken.—Di DC 327 a great deal of pains.—Thus also little pains, e.g. Sh John III, 2.9. — Cf. p. 497.

The form of the verb frequently, as in the Darwin quotation, is indifferent to number. Where number has to be shown, authors disagree; we find the plural in Kingsley H 302 how much of the pains which I took were taken to please him | Skeat Ch VI, p. X much pains have
been bestowed on the mode of numbering the lines. Review of Reviews Apr. '95. 323 why so much pains were taken. But the singular is well established: Mulcaster Positions 1581. 58 upon what matter was all this pains bestowed? | Sh Shr IV. 3.43 all my paines is sorted to no proove | Minto Prose Lit. VIII every [NB] pains has been taken. Note the distinction as given by Elphinstone 1787 vol. 2.133 pains ar evveriwhare felt, dho pains is not evveriwhare taken. Pains is repeated by they: Ruskin Art of Engl. 276 take the pains, and they will be irksome. Note also the retention of s in the compound painstaking.

The use of pain in the sense of mod. pains, as in Sh H8 III. 2.72 hath tane much paine In the kings business, has now disappeared; it occurred also in the compound painful = painstaking (frequent in Sh, also Mi A 5). A good example of the mod. distinction is Hope D 61 she takes the utmost pains to conceal from her mother-in-law anything calculated to distress that lady. She never gives pain to anyone.

5.755. Means: the old form was mean(e) in the sg, e. g. Malory 118, 119 by no meane | Ml T 4028, Straw III. 1.44 a meane | Lyly C 296 by that meane | Sh Ro 1734 no sudden meane of death, though nere so meane (pun!) | Sh Wint IV. 4.89 Yet Nature is made better by no meane, But Nature makes that Meane (thus often Sh; strangely by itself H8 V. 3.146).

The pl means of course is frequent: More U 250 by none of thies means | Sh Cy IV. 2.403 Some falls are means the happier to arise | Sh Lucr 1140 these means | Johnson R 102 marriage is one of the means of happiness | Di D 140 Mr Murdstone's means were straitened at about this time | Poe S 25 there were no means of determining . . .

In a great many combinations the context does not show whether means is sg or pl, and this contributes to bring about the new use of means as a sg form: Ch B 480 by certein menes | Malory 129 by the meanes of Morgan |
ib. 159 by her meanes | Sh Merch III. 1.65 healed by the same meanes | H4A I. 3.120 with the speediest meanes | Ro II. 4.192 bid her devise some meanes | by any (no, what) means | by means of, etc.

Means with sg sense and construction (oldest ex. in the NED from 1512) is found in More U (36 that meanes, 175 a meanes), and there are eight indubitable examples in Sh (a meanes Wint IV. 4.864, that meanes Merch. II. 1.19, etc.) Other examples are: Mi A 14 by this crafty means | Defoe P 57 a great means | Stevenson D 95 was this a means of safety? | Poe S 18 every other means.
— As a mass-word in Masefield M 139 You haven't got much means of transport.

In the sense 'that which is intermediate' the old sg form mean has been preserved.

5.76. Plural names of diseases (also a kind of 'mass') are occasionally used as sg (cf. 5.282):

glanders: pl const. as sg NED.

measles: 'the pl form is now usually construed as a sg' NED, as in 'measles is decidedly infectious'. — On the rare a measle see below, p. 497.

rickets. shingles.

pox: the sg pock is preserved in pock-mark, pock-pitted, also Di DC 64 the cowpock. Pl: Ch pokkes, BJo 3.29 the pox approach. A pox was very common, especially in a kind of oath: a pox o' that (frequent Sh, etc.) | Rehearsal 55 a pox take 'em | Congreve 236 what a pox does she mean? | Fielding T 4.172 why, what a pox is the matter now? Swift has the double pl: T 33 with poxes ill cured.
As the name of a disease, pox is hardly ever used now, though smallpox is: Quincey 275 that same small-pox | Macaulay B 119 the smallpox had set its mark on him | Ellis Man 436 small-pox is more fatal to males than to females | Kipling L 132 he caught the small-pox in Cairo, carried it here and died of it | Bennett W 2.131 she had caught smallpox and she died of it.—Cf. also bullet-pocks (Doyle S 3.198).
5.77. The following instances of metanalysis are not easily classifiable; most of them indicate human activities or periods set apart for such.

5.771. Amends: the form amend from F amende is and has always been very rare in English; the word is chiefly used in the phrase to make amends; and here amends is often felt as a sg. Thus already Ch Duch 526 thamendes is light to make; the oldest example in NED is from Pecock (1449). Mi S 745 what amends is in my power | Defoe G 10 make a full amends | Fielding T 4.210 a very pitiful amends | Austen M 385 a rich amends | Austen P 80 every possible amends. As a pl in Hardy F 416 You owe me amends—let that be your way of making them.

5.772. Thanks is regularly used as a pl: Many thanks | a thousand thanks | Goldsmith 624 Thanks, madam, are unnecessary | Wordsw P 14.233 Thanks in sincerest verse have been . . . Poured out | Austen M 235 thanks are out of the question | Di Do 225 there are no thanks due to me | Hardy F 7 she might have looked her thanks, but she did not speak them | Stevenson U VI Thanks, when they are expressed, are often more embarrassing than welcome. When thanks is construed as a sg, it is, as it were, a quoted word (8.2): Sh Ro 1330 else is his thankes too much (== his word ‘thanks’) | Sh Ant II. 6.48 am well studied for a liberall thanks, which I do owe you | Cor V. 1.46 that thankes | Sh Haml I. 1.8 For this releefe much thankes. Though this use as sg is now hardly heard in conversation, much thanks is now and then still written (Ward D 1.50 and E 197, Review of R. Sept. '05. 300), probably as a reminiscence from Sh.

5.773. Tiding is obsolete, though used by Swinburne T 138. Tidings is generally pl: AV Exod. 33.4 these euill tidings | Sh R2.IV. 4.536 tidings . . . they. But occasionally it is sg: AV 2 Sam 18.25 there is tidings in his mouth (on account of there is? cf. 6.8) | ib. 18.31 tidings is brought | Peele D 451 this bitter tidings | Sh R2
II. 1.272 How neere the tidings of our comfort is | (Twain) the tidings was heard | Lang T 130 Then comes tidings that . . . Cf. news 5.781.

5.774. Assize is rare (Hewlett Q 445 the assize was fixed for 12th April; Bennett W 1.258 the grand assize, but ib. 255 the Stafford Assizes); generally assizes is used, and that is sometimes construed as a sg (not in NED): Fielding T 1.212 at an assizes | Di Sk 407 at every assizes. Bunyan has both constructions: G 126 the next assizes, which are called Midsummer assizes . . . at that assizes. He also has assizes as a real pl: G 131 between these two assizes (= two assemblies).

Sessions as a sg occurs at any rate in ElE: Decker S2 at a sessions | Ml J 1673 To morrow is the sessions; you shall to it (cf. 840 sessions day) | Edw3 II. 2.166 the vniuersall sessions cals to count This packing euill | Sh Wint III. 2.1 This sessions . . pushes.

Holidays is sometimes treated as a sg: Southey 1825 (NED): spent one summer holidays with his mother | Vachell H 207 I shall have many expenses this holidays.

Inversely holiday is used (in England more often than in U.S. in the sense of vacation, comprising either more or less than one day: Gibbon M 200 a short holiday [many days] | Brontë P 59 I might now take some hours of holiday | Di D 135 to make a day's holiday together | GE M 1.244 they might have a holiday in the evening | Ru P 1.25 two months at Midsummer, when my father took his holiday | Gissing B 502 they must have a thorough holiday abroad | Kipl L 44 after a holiday [of a few months] in the country | Ward M 320 even in these days of holiday.

A jousts in Tennyson (433) is evidently due to Malory, who uses it thus: 41 a Iustes and a toumement | 49,76 a grete Iustes.

An innings is common in cricket and in parliamentary language: Thack S 81 | Trilby 272 | Dickinson S 109 | NP '96 a long enough innings.

5.775. The names of sciences and occupations in -ics often retain their plural construction (verb in pl, pronoun they), but there is a strong tendency to treat
them as singulars (verb in sg, pronoun it). In the great majority of cases it is impossible to see whether the word is taken in one or the other number: he studied economics, etc. The old sg in -ic is still found in arithmetic, gymnastic (though gymnastics is much more frequent), logic, magic, music, polemic, and rhetoric. The forms in -ics apparently began with such words as mathematics, comprising the various branches of that science, cf. F les mathématiques; Bacon has athletic, arithmetic, cosmetic, metaphysic, physic, but both mathematic and mathematics (Bøgholm, p. 17).

From modern authors I have noted the following uses; in most cases it would serve no purpose to give the quotations in full:

- aesthetics pl Wilde.
- athletics pl Synge, G. Carpenter.
- economics sg Kidd.
- ethics sg Chesterton, World's Work.—pl Seeley, Wilde. —Without -s Dickinson S 46 it is absurd to accuse us of indifference to ethics . . . a new economic régime necessarily postulates a new ethic.
- linguistics sg Whitney.
- mathematics pl Collingwood.
- metaphysics sg Cooley, Jeaffreson; Mrs. Browning A 198 A larger metaphysics.—pl Mc Carthy, Jeaffreson, Shelley. —Without -s Kingsley H XIII a metaphysic at once Christian and scientific.
- phonetics sg Sweet.—pl once heard: phonetics, how is one to learn them?
- physics sg Spencer.
- politics sg Chesterton, Collier, Dickinson, Stevenson, Wells (N 263 politics was a great constructive process; ib. 483), Wilde.—pl Caine, Harraden (F 40 to cultivate a language or two, a little music, a few politics — a jocular expression), Hope, Kingsley, Lamb, Lecky, McCarthy, Merriman, Norris, Seeley, Shaw, Stevenson, Trollope, Mrs. Ward, Wilde.
An original plural used as a singular.

statistics sg Carlyle (S 76 a Statistics of imposture).—pl Stevenson, Shaw.—Without -s: Carlyle Latt 140 a regular statistic | Merriman S 139 there were too many details.—too much statistic | Norris O 453 every statistic verified.

tactics pl Macaulay.

5.78. Some doubtful cases.

5.781. News is generally supposed to be a plural, parallel to greens. This, however, is by no means certain, as the word is found so early that substantivized adjectives did not yet take -s, and as -s is retained in compounds: newspaper, newes-crammed (Sh As I. 2.161), etc., cf. on the other hand greengrocer without s. The s therefore may be originally, partly at least the genitive ending, as in Dutch niews, cf. such partitive phrases as hucet niewes oððe ealdes (Toller from Cod. Exon. 115); but the absence of ME instances makes the explanation doubtful. News occurs very often indeed as sg in Sh, e.g. Wint III. 2.148 This newes is mortall to the Queene. From more recent authors I quote Mi S 1538 For evil news rides post, while good news baits; cf. Di N 401 ill news travels fast | Goldsm 646 this news puts me all in a flutter | Scott A 2.223, 339 | Shelley Cenci III. 1.310 | Beaconsf L 147, 304, etc. | Di D 488 no news, they say, is good news; also Zangwill G 218 | Thack N 749, 892 | Morris Ep 51 | Garnett T 129 | Shaw C 260 | Kipl J 1.88 | Stevenson D 288 | Hope R 125 | James S 1 so much news, etc.

News as a pl was formerly pretty frequent, thus in Sh, e.g. Ro III. 5.124 these are newes indeed | Lr II. 1.6 the newes abroad, I meane the Whisper'd ones, for they are yet but ear-kissing arguments | Peele D 483 these cursed newes | Greene F 6.95, 6.112, 10.163 | Mi S 1569 Suspense in news is torture; speak them out | Scott A 2.223 what are the news? | Hewlett Q 153 as he announced these news. The last quotation is decidedly an archaism; in the natural language of today the word is only sg. Caine, M 74 and 268, P 141 gives as vulgar the form
newses, which may not be genuine. On piece of news see 5.34.

5.782. Goods presents the same doubt as to the origin of s (cf. Dan. gods, orig. gen.). In OE we had the pl as in mid his godum 'with his property'. Chaucer uses goodes and good, thus also Bale Three Lawes (1538) 1227 great goodes, but 1230 so moch good. Malory 61 al the goodes that ben (pl) goten at this bataill lete it (sg) be serched | Ml J 379 of these goods | AV Luke XII. 19 Thou hast much goods layd vp. Sh has goods in fourteen places, but it is impossible to see whether it is construed as a sg or pl. Now it is generally felt to be a pl (the goods are to be delivered), though a goods is rarely found (GE, quoted Storm 125). Many, though not all, would avoid saying many goods. Note a goods-train.

5.783. Odds used to be often construed as a sg: Ml T 310 an ods | Sh H5 IV. 3.5 'tis a fearefull oddes | R 2 III. 4.89 with that oddes | Oth II. 3.135 | Ant IV. 15.66 the oddes is gone | Mi PL IV. 447 preeminent by so much odds. Now oddes is always in the pl, thus invariably in the common phrase the oddes are that . . . (By DJ 3.23, but without the 12.18; Doyle B 73, etc.); odds may of course also be pl in the variant Lang Essays in Little 78 it is odds against five of the survivors still reading Greek books. See also Stevenson D 124 against all these odds | Kipl J 1.67 those odds; and finally odds and ends.

5.784. In whereabouts the s is the adverbial ending; hence it is correctly used as a sg in Doyle S 3.93 her whereabouts was discovered. But in newspapers one finds also "The vanished member's whereabouts are unknown to this day" (Westm. Gaz. March 3. '06). — Cf. on whereabouts below, p. 497.

5.791. Numerical metanalysis is rare with the ending -n, and the few examples may be otherwise explained (see vol. VI 20.2).

chick, chicken: The OE form was cicen (cycen, related to coc 'cock'), n., pl cicena, which would regularly become
ModE sg *chick*, pl *chicken*. This is the inflexion still in use in dialects (SW), and it is given by Dyche, Dict. 1740; Wallis 1653 says: "an ox bos, a chick pullus (avium), pluraliter oxen, chicken (nam qui dicunt in singulari chicken & in plurali chickens, omnino errant)". The plural *chicken* is found in Heywood (1600), Southey (1829), NED. An educated lady told me in 1887: 'a couple of chicken; never in the whole of England have I heard two chickens'. Chick is now felt as a separate word; it is used very often in speaking of a little child, and it has the pl *chicks* (GE Mill 1.337, A 60,131 immediately after *chickens*); quotations for the sg are Trollope D 3.1251 an additional ducal chick | Kipl L 90 like a hen with one chick | Stockton R 169, 170 (pl ib. 146 chickens, 170 chickens) | Sinclair IR 9.—There seems to have been a tendency towards using in sg *chick*, in pl *chickens*, thus in Sh (twice *chick*, four times *chickens*), apart from (the possibly spurious play) H6B, where *chicken* occurs twice (III. 1.249, 251) probably as a pl; NED has a quotation 1547 Two greate chykens, the one was a hen chik and the other a cock chyk. Alford B 20 would establish "a leaning to chicken for the generic plural, chickens for the individualised. For the chicken are kept en masse, the chickens run in, one by one." This, however, is probably fanciful.

Fern,OE *fearn*. NED does not mention a sg *fere*, which I find in Wallis 1653, p. 70 after the just quoted passage: "Item a fere filix, pl fer filix (verum nunc plerumq; fern utroq; numero dicitur, sed & in plurali ferns; nam fere & feres propè obsolete sunt)."

In Alabama, according to Payne, *oxens* is found in pl, and *oxen* is often sing.

Ramson 'kind of garlic' OE *hram(e)sa* pl *hram(e)san*; the *n* being transferred to the sg, with a new pl *ramsons*.

5.792. Breeches. OE had *brōc* 'trousers', pl *brēc*; in ME after the disappearance of the o-form *breech* was taken as a sg (Ch B 2059; in C 948 it may be either number); *breech* is found/Swift T 87, but very early the

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
pl breeches (breches 1205) began to be used, and it is now the only form; the vowel now is shortened [britʃiz], but in the compound breech-loader the vowel is still long.

5.793. In this chapter we have seen several examples of new plurals formed by adding a pl ending to what was already a plural.

Examples from other languages of similar 'plurals to the second power' are Dan. love from lov < lag pl of lag 'law', G tränen, etc. Murray (D 161) has the following interesting remarks: “I have known a second or double plural to be formed from such words as schuin, feit, kye. An old lady met a company of muddy-booted lads at the door with the injunction, "Nuw, scrape yer feits weil, an' pyt aff aa o' yer schuins i' the passage!" With all diffidence, as became one of the culprits, I ventured to remark upon the oddness of such a form as schuins, but was rather testily told: "Gin ye had them tui clean, ye wad ken the difference atween ae bodie's schuin an' aa o' yer schuins." The argument of course admitted of no reply, but I have often thought of the words as illustrating the numerous southern double plurals calver-en, lamber-en, eyr-en, etc., of which children, brethren, and kine (sing. child, brother, cow; pl. child-er, brether, ky; double pl. child-er-en, brether-en, ky-en, ky-ne), have come down into modern English. Did the original plurals—still preserved in the northern dialect, childer, brether, ky—come to be used collectively for the offspring or members of a single family, the herd of a single owner, so that a second plural inflection became necessary to express the brethren and children of many families, the ky-en of many owners, or as my old friend would have expressed it, "aa o' thair kyes?" All the words so inflected seem to be the names of animals or objects naturally found in groups; and in modern English we restrict brothers, which replaces brether, to those of one family, using brethren for those who call each other brother, though of different families."

This explanation very well applies to some of the
examples given in this chapter and also to such vulgarisms as Thack Y 39 there was 8 sets of chamberses (chambers = one set of rooms) and Orig. English 71 cats have clawses (each cat has claws) and ib. 71 cats have 9 liveses (each cat has nine lives). But it does not apply to other vg examples of double plural endings, as Di Do 103 when you have masterses and misseses a teaching of you. — Cf. p. 497.

Chapter VI

Number in Secondary Words

6.11. The logically ideal condition of a language would require that secondary words (adjuncts and verbs, ch. I) should not show any distinction of number, as this category applies really to primary words only. This condition (which is carried through in such an artificial language as Ido) has been partially reached in English through a long historical process of simplification, and in such sentences as

the little child cried
the little children cried

some days must be dark and dreary

only the primary words (child, children, days) show which number is meant, while the secondary words (the, little, some, cried, must, dark, dreary) are the same in both numbers. In other cases, however, the primitive linguistic structure, in which secondary words also indicated number, has been preserved, and English is therefore not wholly exempt from the difficulties arising in the older stages of our family of languages, from what is called 'concord', i.e. the agreement between secondary words and the principals they belong to. The distinctive numerical forms of adjectives and verbs are mentioned in 2.22 (2.7) and 2.24.
Adjuncts

6.12. With regard to adjuncts, the only thing that requires exemplification here, is perhaps the use of what as an adjunct to plural words as in Sh Ven 188 What bare excuses mak'st thou? | Hawthorne S 201 What questions are these? | Stevenson M 274 What children you are! | [Hope In 265 my investments . . . I want you to tell me what I ought to sell and what few I might keep].

6.13. The advantage of having the same form for both numbers in adjuncts is seen when they are made to qualify at the same time one sb in the sg and another in the pl number, which would not be possible for instance in French:

my wife and children (== ma femme et mes enfants) | the local press and committees (== la presse locale et les comités locaux) | Fielding 3.493 he desired her to dismiss the children and servant | Congreve 226 I reverence the sun, moon, and stars | Austen M 103 the season and duties which brought Mr. Bertram back to Mansfield took Mr. Crawford into Norfolk | Di Do 236 among the dust and worms | Stevenson JHF 64 by the air and sounds of the open city | Ml T 1345 the Persean fleete and men of war | Di Do 133 he had arranged the future life and adventures of Walter so differently | ib. 66 it's not polite to eat all the mutton chops and toast | ib. 357 all her life and hopes, and griefs | Phillpotts M 13 seeing all my mistakes and silliness | Ritchie M 167 beyond the boundaries of common life and moods | Thack P I 86 a man of no small talents and humour | Austen M 8 their rank, fortune, rights, and expectations, will always be different.

A rare combination is found in Hardy F 19 she must have had a beautiful neck and shoulders, where beautiful is common to the sg word a (NB) neck and the pl shoulders. Thus also Ward D. 2.37 with a prominent mouth and teeth. — Cf. p. 497.
Predicatives

6.211. As nearly all adjectives are uninflected, no question of concord arises with regard to adjectival predicatives (some days must be dark and dreary). Note, however, that too many is analogically extended to cases in which only one is implied, as in Sh Ro I. 1.135 Being one too many by my weary selfe | Ward D 3.179 she made one too many in the omnibus | NP '13 there is no word too many in the description | Bennett W 1.279 a journey of five hundred yards to the Rectory had been one journey too many (too many is the predicative, one journey the indication of measure; similarly in the other instances).

This leads to the colloquial signification of too many = 'too strong or powerful' as in Di T 1.246 This boy is getting too many for me! (also Di F 659, Pinero M 28, GE M 1.12) | ib. 2.123 This world’s been too many for me | Doyle S 5.64 You are too many for me when you begin to get on your theories, Mr. Holmes | Twain H 1.29 this was too many for me (vg).

6.212. A somewhat similar instance of numerical disagreement between subject and predicative (or apposition) is seen in such sentences as these: Di N 90 he will not object to sleeping five in a bed | Hope C 94 I hate riding three in a cab | Maurier T 47 he would not sit thirteen to dinner.

6.221. Substantives as predicatives will generally be in the same number as the subject, though exceptions are by no means rare, especially when the predicative is a collective (They were a gay company) or a mass-name (Both dresses are silk) or may be taken as such (Stevenson M 129 all sins are murder).

6.222. Conflicts between a plural subject and a singular predicative noun are occasionally found when the idea of individuality is naturally prominent in the predicate:
Sh. Meas V, 179 she may be a punke: for many of them, are neither maid, widow, nor wife | Sharp, Architects o E Lit 197 his personal beauty, to which so many women fell a victim.

6.223. To be (or stand) witness is a set phrase = 'to witness', used with the sg form even when referring to a plural subject:

Sh Merch II. 6.32 Heauen and thy thoughts are witness | Shr IV. 2.24 mine eyes are witnesse of her lightnesse. Other ex. see Sh.-Lex. This may be due partly to the old signification of witness 'testimony, evidence'.

The sg of the predicative is also used in other set phrases: they stood sentry | Hewlett F 237 two girls sat sentinel beside her.—After turn the sg is found in Gissing R 188 Enthusiasts have tried the experiment of turning husbandman | Raleigh Sh 161 young gallants with no intention to turn husband. — Cf. p. 497.

6.224. The sg is found when the predicative has the article the (= 'the typical'), as in Barrie T 23 they were too much the lady to make up to a gentleman who so obviously did not want them | Wells V 176 the men ... Brutes! They are the brute still with us! | Hewlett F 96 "he is not my lover. He is my master." Oh, of course,—they are always the master. If we are the mistress we are lucky.

6.225. The pl is used in combinations with all = 'nothing but' as in Di D 208 the room seemed to be all nooks and corners. This is especially frequent in appositional combinations, in which it is semi-predicative: Sh Hml I. 2.149 she followed my poore fathers body Like Niobe, all tears | Mrs Browning A 68 And everybody stood, all eyes and tears, To see and hear | Thack N 471 a society all smoke and all painters did not suit him | Hope D 57 said Dolly, all over dimples | Wells T 70 he crouched for a time, all ears and peering eyes.—The sg is found (to avoid misunderstanding with pupils = 'schol-
ars?) in Galsworthy C 292 Her eyes, all pupil, stared at this man.

6.226. The logical connexion between the sg every and the plural idea is brought out clearly in Galsworthy C 280 every sound and scent and shape became the sounds and scents and shapes of evening. It would be hard to avoid the grammatical incongruity in such instances.

Be friends with

6.231. In “I am friends with him” the plural friends is due to the plural idea: “I and he”; the identical construction is frequent in Danish (and has points of contact with Italian andiamo con X = ‘I and X’ and similar constructions in many languages): Roister 86 I will be as good friends with them as ere I was | Sh LLL V. 2.552 I must needs be friends with thee | Sh H4A III. 3.203 | Sh Ado I. 1.91 I will hold friends with you | Sh Meas I. 2.185 that she make friends to the strict deputy | Thack V 15 Come, Joseph, be friends with Miss Sharp | Darwin L 1.39 I also became friends with some of the Newhaven fishermen | ib. 1.237 | GE M 1.134 he would have got friends with her sooner | Di Do 158 Make friends with your new mistress | Benson D 100 she had made great friends with Mrs V || Leigh Fry Shreds (1890) 238 he hated to be out of friends with anyone (affected!).

Also without indication of whom one is friends with: Street Autob Boy 21 I want to be friends.

6.232. Other words, too, are used similarly in the pl: Sh H 5 II. 1.108 be enemies with me | Stevenson B 55 “Well, Dick, we’re friends now.” “Nay, I never was unfriends.” | Doyle M 202 I was shipmates with fifty dead men | Kipl M 224 1 was great pals with a man called Hicksey.

6.233. Parallel expressions are: be quits with someone, from we are quits (though the -s is of doubtful origin), formerly also we are quit | Wintle Scandal 66 We have
settled our little account, and I can cry quits of her in every respect | I offer to go halves with you.

6.241. The general tendency to make the numbers of subject and predicative agree leads to the use of they are (these are, etc.) before a plural, where other languages have often the sg of the pronoun as subject (ce sont, c'est, es ist, etc.):

Di Do 30 but if they were the last words I had to utter, I should still say ... | Di DC 105 I cannot conceive whose stockings they can have been that Peggotty was always darning | ib. 587 I meet a pair of bright eyes, and a blushing face; they are Dora's eyes and face | Benson D 220 don't mind her, they're only her foreign manners | Stevenson JHF 210 these are but playings upon words | ib. M 198 They were not words that came to her, they were sounds more beautiful than speech.

6.242. This is different from the use of it is (even before a plural word) when it is only a preparatory subject and a relative clause follows: it was my two youngest sisters who knew her best = my two y. s. knew her best. Here Ben Jonson's they is exceptional: 3.158 they are such as you are that have brought me into that predicament.

6.243. There is no disagreement between subject and predicative in the following instances, as what may be plural: Lamb E2 VIII he never cared for the society of what are called good people | Coleridge Sh 90 what have often been censured as Shakespeare's conceits are completely justifiable | Austen S 147 what are your views? | Caine P 37 to ask you certain questions. "What are they?" | Holmes A 47 in consequence of what are called religious mental disturbances | Dickinson R 41 from what appear to be the general possibilities of the case | Stevenson U *5 the physician has generosity and tact; and what are more important, Heraclean cheerfulness and courage | Wilde L 20 What I want are details.
Concord of the Verb

6.31. The general rule, which needs no exemplification, is for the verb to be in the singular with a singular subject, and in the plural with a plural subject. Occasionally, however, the verb will be put in the sg, even if the subject is plural; this will especially happen when the verb precedes the subject, because the speaker has not yet made up his mind, when pronouncing the verb, what words are to follow. Thus even in OE (Past C 157 Eac was gesewen ... ealle ða heargas) and ME (Ch F 660 That never yet was herd so grete merveilles): More U 121 Out of every one of these families cummeth every yeare in to the cytie XX persons whiche haue ... | Sh Hml III. 3.14 that spirit vpon whose weal depends and rests The lives of many | Lang T 130 Then comes tidings that ... (5.773) | Doyle S 5.227 Under the latter heading is included, no doubt, not only those who may have taken him away, but also those who ... Cf. 6.522 and on there is below 6.8.

6.32. Titles of books, containing a plural, are generally treated as singulars (quotation words):

The Newcomes is one of Thackeray’s finest books | Harrison Ru 70 in 1853, the Stones of Venice was completed | [Ru P 3.29 a little fourteenth century Hours of the Virgin].

But the plural may be used with such descriptive titles as the Canterbury Tales (the C. T. is, or are, Chaucer’s chief claim to immortality) | Dickens’s American Notes were published in 1842 | Grant Allan First Book 50 “Strange Stories” were well received.—Shelley speaks of his “Cenci” in the pl: Pr 295 the Cenci which are at the printers.

With the former treatment of these pl words may be compared the following sg with a quotation word in the pl: Shaw 2.110 Wicked people [i.e. the expression “wicked people”] means people who have no love.—A different case is seen in Bennett A 120 and all the eyes of the market-place was preferable to the chance of those eyes—where the sg is justified, because the idea is “being seen by . . .”
In some arithmetical expressions a singular subject may take the verb in the pl, because really referring to a plurality:

Defoe G 130 not one in ten of them write it so bad | Zangwill G 70 there are lots of engagements, but not one per cent. come to anything | Defoe R 230 whence one half of their miseries flow | Shelley 65 the half of humankind were mewed | Macaulay E 4.60 fifteen hundred men, of whom about one half were Europeans | Shaw Fab 29 there were not one-tenth so many grievances. — Cf. p. 497.

In the ordinary formulas used in arithmetical calculations usage wavers with regard to the number of the verb. An English friend once told me that he should say: “How much is five times ten? What is twice three?” but “What do seven and eight make?” though he admitted that others would say does. In Rippmann’s Reader I find: What are twice three? What is $1 + 2 + 4$? How many times three is nine? Ten is one and nine. Twelve is three times four. Twice twelve are 24. Five tens are fifty. Cf. also:

Browning T 4.58 Twice two makes four | Holmes A 61 All at once we find that twice two make five | Zangwill G 14 Twice a hundred francs are two hundred francs | Quincey 174: 18 times one quarter of a hundred is = one quarter of 1800 | London A 65 before they know what six-times-six is | Goldsm 645 twenty added to twenty makes just fifty and seven | Di Do 305 six and six is twelve, and six eighteen.—The sg is related to the unification mentioned 5.12.

When the subject is one of the pronouns that have the same form in both numbers, none, any, (n)either, who, which, what (but not you 2.89), the verb may be in either number, according as the singular or plural idea is uppermost in the speaker’s mind.

Examples of none with the plural:

More U 120 none of the cities desire | Sh (often, e. g.)
LL II. 51 none offend where all alike do dote | V 2.69 |
Mceh V. 4.13 And none serue with him but constrained things | Goldsm 657 as among the ladies there are none ugly, so among the men there are none old | Johnson R 91
None are wretched but by their own fault | Scott Iv 113
we shall meet again where there are none to separate us |
Brontë P 95 none of her features move | Ru P 1.163 none of us seem to have thought | Morris E 110b whence none return |
Shaw C 100 I suppose none of your acquaintance take an interest in art | Stev JHF 177 none are happy, none are good, none are respectable, that are not gyved like us | Kipl J 2.21 none know when that was | ib 2.31.

Examples of none with the singular:

More U 263 none of them selves taketh anye portion | Mi PL V. 59 Deigns none to ease thy load? | Dryden 373
None but the brave deserves the fair | Johnson R 103
All agree in one judgment, and none ever varies his opinion |
Scott Iv 122 your sovereignty, to which none vows homage more sincerely than ourself | Kingsley H 229 I know, none knows better, what those fine words mean | Browning 1.525b none cares how | Bradley S 5
These things are all possible; but none of them is presupposed by the question we are going to consider | Stevenson Dy 59 none has more keenly felt them. — Cf. p. 497

This use of none is now only literary; in conversational language no one or nobody is used, and these may be called the sg forms of the pl none. But, strange enough, many grammarians object to the use of none with a pl verb, with the pseudo-logical argument that none contains one, which is necessarily sg. They might just as well object to the combination no children, which etymologically contains one just as much as none does: none and no are differentiations of OE nan = ne an “not one”.

None + off with a sg substantive of course takes the verb in the singular: Ru C 109 none of this wrong is done with deliberate purpose.

In many sentences it is impossible to say whether
none is to be taken as sg or pl: Sh Err 11.2.220 let none enter | Carlyle H 130 none ever saw the pillars.

6.43. Examples of any with the plural:

B Jo 3.249 Gentlemen, have any of you a pen and ink | Austen P 207 Are any of your younger sisters out? | Hughes T 2.265 were any of the crew caught? | Ru S 40 Have any of you the least idea | ib 166 it does not matter how little any of us have read | Hope In 326 If a man loved an unworthy woman (supposing there are any).

6.44. Either and neither generally take the verb in the sg, but sometimes in the pl because of the fundamental plurality of the conception: neither are alive = both are dead (cf. p. 497):

More U 227 if either of them fynde themselfe greued, they maye take an other | Sh Cymb IV. 2.253 Thersites body is as good as Aiax, When neyther are aliue | LL II. 133 | Pilgr 181 | Fielding T 2.235 either of them [the words friend and mistress] are enough to drive any man to distraction | ib. 3.25 neither of them are a bit better than they should be | Scott Iv 289 Neither belong to this Saxon's company | Austen S 265 it was not a subject on which either of them were fond of dwelling | Austen M 13 to assist her with his pen-knife or his orthography, as either were wanted | Ru C 125 [war] is not a game to the conscript, or the pressed sailor; but neither of these are the causes of it | Wells U 158 Do you mean to say neither of you know your own numbers? | Wells L 194 | McCarthy King 103 neither of your heads are safe | Benson B 144 Are either of you dining with Stewart to-night?

In some of these quotations the pl may be, partly at least, accounted for by attraction to the immediately preceding pl (them, you, these, heads).

6.45. Examples of who with the plural (examples of the-sg are not necessary): Ml H 2.217 who have hard hearts? | Mill L 123 whoever allow themselves much of that indulgence, incur the risk of something worse [rare].—Examples of the relative who and which with pl verb
abound. Interrogative which as a pl is found, for instance, NP '13 to find out which are the workers with the required aptitude most highly developed. What with a pl verb (cf 6.243): Pope Man 4.199 what differ more (you cry) than crown and cowl?

6.511. When the subject consists of two or more words joined by means of and, the general rule naturally is for the verb to stand in the plural:

Sh Hml III. 2. 74 those whose blood and judgement are so well co-mingled | Wordsworth 200 The horse and horseman are a happy pair | Quincey 121 the noise and uproar were almost insupportable | Austen M 58 even the sandwich tray, and Dr. Grant doing the honours of it, were worth looking at | Di Do 90 the Doctor's glory and reputation were great | ib. 178 his dress and attitude were perfectly juvenile | Di T 2.206 hay and straw were stored | Hardy L 71 my chief aim and hope lie in the education | McCarthy 2.54 A ball and supper were to be given that night | Ru Sel 1.454 as long as there are cold and nakedness in the land | Pinero M 45 Here are your hat and overcoat.

6.512. The pl is felt to be necessary when one of the words is already in the plural:

Goldsm 669 your hat and things are in the next room | Sterne 23 the blood and spirits were driven up into the head | Ru Sel 1.405 What are the present state and wants of mankind. Also in Ewing Story of a Short Life 25 From this highway an open carriage and pair were being driven into the camp—though carriage and pair in so far forms one idea that we can even form a plural from it (2.57).

6.513. Thus also when an adjunct in the sg form is the common adjunct to two substantives in the singular: Rusk Sel 1.462 how this wholesome help and interference are to be administered | Hardy W 113 much care and patience were needed.

6.514. This applies also to combinations with an intervening relative pronoun:
Austen M 57 with an expression and taste which were peculiarly becoming | Di D 271 with a carelessness and lightness that were his own | Thack N 204 with that good temper and gaiety which have seldom deserted him in life.

6.515. The plural conception may, of course, be shown, not in the form of the verb, but in a following pronoun:

Conway C 272 shyness and restraint now made themselves manifest in every word and action.

6.516. Occasionally the vb is in the plural in essential conformity with the above rules, though there are not two substantives joined together; one substantive with two adjectives may stand for two; in the last quotation “how men laughed” is one idea, “how they cried” another, etc. Shaw 2 XI Public and private life become daily more theatrical | Scott Iv 29 our present English language, in which the speech of the victors and the vanquished [= and that of the v.] have been so happily blended together | Spect 75 In ordinary comedies, a broad and a narrow brim’d hat are different characters | Quincey O 196 The Grasmere before and after this outrage were two different vales | Darwin B 63 if the death of neither man nor gnat are designed | Gollancz, in Cbr. Hist. E. Lit. 1.321 From these two sources are derived much of the wealth and brilliancy of the poem || Birrell Ob 11 how men laughed, cried, swore, were all of huge interest to Carlyle. — Cf. p. 497.

The following is an interesting example of numerical intricacy: Spect 174 Laertes and Irus are neighbours, whose way [sg] of living are [pl] an abomination [sg] to each other.

6.521. On the other hand, if two or more subjects connected by means of and form one conception, the verb is put in the sg, as in Jevons L 289 Accuracy and precision is a more important quality [N.B. not two qualities] of language than abundance. — Cf. p. 498.

6.522. But even when they denote several conceptions, we frequently find the vb in the sg in defiance of the rule given in most grammars. The psychological
reason of the sg is in most cases that only one of the subjects is present in the speaker's or writer's mind at the time when he thinks of the verb. I give first examples in which the verb precedes the subject.

Ælfric 1.10 þa weard he and calle his geferan for-cupran and wyrsan; cf. Krapp's ed. of Andreas, p. 93 | Ch D 1359 Thus was the wenche and he of oon assent | AV 1 Cor 13.13 now abideth faith, hope, charitie, these three | Ecclus 10.9 Why is earth and ashes proude? | James 3.10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing | Sh R 2 III. 2.141 Is Bushy, Green and the Earl of Wiltshire dead? | Sh H 4 A 1.2.126 How agrees the Diuell and thee about thy soule? | Swift P 122 how does Charles Limber and his fine wife agree? | Johnson R 138 him, on whom depends the action of the elements, and the great gifts of light and heat | Norris 0 594 where was she and her baby to sleep that night?

6.523. In the following examples the subjects come before the verb:

Ch A 3230 For youthe and elde is often at debat | More U 284 Both childhode and youth is instructed | Sh Mcb II 3.76 (708) renoune and grace is dead | Sh Merch II. 9.83 Hanging and wiuing goes by destinie | ib. III. 2.168 My selfe and what is mine, to you and yours Is now conuerted | Sh Hml IV. 3.52 father and mother is man and wife; man and wife is one flesh | Mi A 38 our faith and knowledge thrives by exercise | Mi P L 2.495 hill and valley rings | Swift J 58 I drank punch, and that and ill company has made me hot | Shelley Pr 275 the grouping of the horses, and the beauty, correctness, and energy of their delineation, is remarkable | Scott Iv 227 cup and horn was filled to the Norwegian | ib. 445 the stock-fish and ale, which was just serving out for the friar's breakfast | McCarthy 2.124 an anomaly and a scandal was removed from our legislation | Ru S 107 the happiness and perfection of both depends on ... | Shaw J 147 life and literature is so poor in these islands. — Cf. p. 498.
"Unfortunately", says C. Alphonso Smith in Publ. of Mod. L. Ass. XI, 11, "the use of a singular predicate with a compound subject, logically singular though formally plural, is falling into disuse. Yet Tennyson writes "My hope and heart is with thee", and even Macaulay says that "The poetry and eloquence of the Augustan age was assiduously studied." The idiom was almost a mannerism with Puttenham. By rejecting the singular in such constructions, modern English seems to me to lose in psychological truth what it gains in grammatical uniformity."

6.524. When two substantives, each with every before it, are joined, the sg idea so far prevails that the verb is put in the sg: every man, and every child, was filled with joy.

6.53. An addition to the subject by means of the preposition with, generally does not influence the number of the verb; but occasionally an author forgets that he has said with, and goes on as if he had used the synonym and:

Sh Gent I. 3.41 Don Alphonso, With other gentlemen of good esteeme Are journying | Bunyan G 10 I, with others, were drawn out | By DJ 6.26 Don Juan . . . With all the damsels . . . Had bowed themselves | Shaw Ibs 99 The doubt cast on her parentage, with her father's theatrical repudiation of her, destroy her ideal place in the home. Cf. 6.23 and below, p. 498.

6.54. With as well as authors disagree: Caine M 54 his hair as well as his eyebrows was now white | Froude C 3.11 When a man enlists in the army, his soul as well as his body belong to his commanding officer. — Most people would probably write: his son as well as his wife was dead — or avoid the construction. — Cf. p. 498.

6.61. When two subjects in the singular are connected by means of or (nor) with or without a preceding either (neither), grammarians prefer the verb in the sg:

Quincey 219 Neither Coleridge nor Southey is a good reader of verse | Ru C 164 neither truth nor gentleness is matter of course | Holmes A 144 If nature or accident has put one of these keys into the hands of a person.—This
is awkward if I is the last word: Page J 347 Neither my dog nor I is for sale (p. 345 the same sentence with myself instead of I).

6.62. But extremely often the verb is put in the plural, the idea of plurality prevailing over that of disjunction. In many sentences, or might easily be replaced by and. Cf. also both in Dryden, below. (In French, the plural is the rule after ni . . . ni, and this is logically justified, as the negative statement implies the contrasting positive statement spoken of both: neither he nor she are willing = both he and she are unwilling.)

Examples of the verb in the plural after or: Dryden 5.231 My life or death are equal both to me | Spect 171 enquires how such an one's wife, or mother, or son, or father, do | Pope R III. 17 Snuff or the fan supply each pause of chat (thus always Pope, see Concordance p. VII) | Swift T 29 to decide which society each book, treatise or pamphlet do most properly belong to | By 636 ere thou Or I were | Shelley Epips 473 veil after veil . . . which Sun or Moon or zephyr draw aside | Lamb E 1.201 The fine lady, or fine gentleman, who show me their teeth, show me bones | Thack N 330 I don't know whether his comedy or tragedy are the most excellent | Ru Sel 1.231 when Titian or Tintoret look at a human being they (NB) see at a glance the whole of its nature | James A 2.187 what are honor or dishonor to her? | Wells U 289 Acting, singing or reciting are forbidden them.—No example seems to occur in Shakespeare's works.

The pl is inevitable if the word nearest to the verb is in the pl: Doyle S 1.214 the vessel in which the man or men are.

Examples of the plural after nor:
Ml H 1.223 Nor heaven, nor thou, were made to gaze vpon | Sh Tit I. 1.294 Nor thou, nor he, are any sons of mine | Coleridge B 61 neither the morning nor the evening star are so fair | Austen E 158 neither provoked nor resentment were discerned | Ru U 78 neither the determination
nor doing of justice are contemplated as functions (NB) wholly peculiar to the lawyer | Ru F 28 without that labour, *neither reason, art, nor peace, are possible to man* | Ru P 2.19 but *neither he nor I were given to reading omens* | Norris O 308 *neither his father nor his brother were dressed for the function* | Wells N 436 *neither Isabel nor I are timid people* | London C X I am afraid that *neither it [Socialism] nor I are any longer respectable*. Cf. also Ru P 2.18 *nor were either my father or I the least offended*.

**6.63.** In the following instances the verbal form is ambiguous, and may be either plural, agreeing with both subjects together, or the first person singular, agreeing with *I*: Ru T & T 86 *neither he nor I have had any choice* | Wells U 258 *Neither my Utopian double nor I love emotion*.

**6.64.** The plural idea may be shown in various ways, apart from the verb form (as already pointed out in some quotations above):

Ru S 124 *you do not treat the Dean of Christ Church or the Master of Trinity as your inferiors* | Stevenson T 36 *It was some time before either I or the captain seemed to gather our senses* | Quiller Couch M 210 *where she went or where she came from are mysteries alike to me*.

**6.65.** *One or two* always requires the plural:

Ru S 38 *there are one or two subjects on which you are bound to have but one opinion* | Shaw 1.21 *certainly were one or two points on which we were a little in the dark* | Swinb L 110 *one or two of his things are still worth your reading* | Lowell 327 *There are one or two things I should just like to hint* | Bennett W 2.312.

But on the other hand we have the sg in Benson B 111 *a Don Juan or two was wanted among the dons*.

**6.66.** A related phenomenon is seen in the following sentence, in which *between one and two* is a kind of quantitative adjunct: Spencer A 1.236 *Between one and two months were thus occupied*. 
6.71. When the subject and the predicative are of different numbers, we find a good deal of hesitation with regard to the number of the verb (cf. 5.1); nor is it always easy to decide which is subject and which predicative:

Sh H4A IV. 2.47 the halfe shirt is two napkins tackt together | ib. V. 4.92 But now two paces of the vilest earth Is roome enough | AV Matth. 3.4 his meat (1881 food) was locusts and wild honey | Swift P 89 Manners is a fine thing | By 85 Fools are my theme | Wells L 205 Lies are the mortar that bind [NB] the savage individual man into the social masonry | NP '99 What is of more immediate interest from a political point of view are the last 80 pages of his book.—Cf. Knecht K p. 20.

A special case is found when one is the predicative (either alone or with adverbial all):

Ch T 3.309 A vauntour and a lyere, al is on | Sh Sonn 42.13 My friend and I are one | Mi PL 5.678 we were one | Stevenson M 201 The soul and the body are one. — Cf. below, p. 498.

Attraction

6.72. Very frequently in speech, and not infrequently in literature, the number of the verb is determined by that part of the subject which is nearest to the verb, even if a stricter sense of grammar would make the verb agree with the main part of the subject. This kind of attraction naturally occurs the more easily, the greater the distance is between the nominative and the verb. Thus we have the pl instead of the sg in:

Mi H 1.9 The outside of her garments were of lawn | Sh LL IV. 3.297 each of you have forsworne his booke | Sh Hml I. 2.37 more then the scope Of these delated articles allow | Sh Ado II. 3.74 The fraud of men were ever so | Sh Lr III. 6.4 All the powre of his wits have giuen way to his impatience | TwII. 5.153 | AV Deut 1.2 There are eleuen daies journey from Horeb vnto Kadesh-Barnea |
Defoe G 28 his coat of arms . . . are taken | Shelley 71 and the far sound Of their retiring steps in the dense gloom were drowned | Gardiner Stud Hist 23 Little more than these few facts have been handed down | Scott Iv 39 the fore-part of his thighs, where the folds of his mantle permitted them to be seen, were also covered | Norris P 359 incoherencies, to which nobody, not even themselves, were listening | Stevenson (q) each of his portraits are.—Cf. Knecht K 16 ff. and below, p. 498.

Cf also By 340 And all that's best of dark and bright Meet [as if dark and bright were the subjects] in her aspect and her eyes.

6.73. The sg instead of the pl is found in:
Sh Alls. III. 2.16 the brains of my Cupid's knock'd out (cf. 5.752) Franklin 157 The different and contrary reasons of dislike to my plan makes me suspect that it was really the true medium.—Cf. Knecht K p. 19.

6.74. Attraction affects the person as well as the number of the verb in:
Tottel Miscel 168 My graue and I am one | MI F (1616) 942 Both he and thou shalt stand excommunicate | Straw III. 2.115 wert but thou and I alone | Sh Merch II. 2.107 How doost thou and thy master agree? | Sh As I. 3.99 Thou and I am one | B Jo 3.45 both it [the physic] and I am at your service Mi PL 10.816 Both Death and I Am found eternal, and incorporate both || MI F 1382 And none but thou shalt be my paramour | Benson D 14 contrary to all you or anyone else knows of me | Sh Mcb IV. 2.81 (1486) Where such as thou may'st finde him.

6.75. More than one seems always to require the sg both in the substantive and (by attraction) in the verb as in Hope D 61 More than one woman has been known to like her. (Bennett C 1.153 natives who had already more than one wife).

6.76. We have other related instances of anomaly in B Jo 1.94 when all thy powers in chastity is spent | Caine C 293 a childlike creature, and of such are the kingdom of Heaven.
6.77. In a relative clause after one of ... , the verb is sometimes in the sg, attracted to one, instead of the pl. Cf. the related phenomenon found e.g. in Beowulf 1406 þone selestan ... þara þe mid Hroðgare ham eahtode, and Goethe's: eine der penibelsten aufgaben, die meiner tätigkeit auferlegt werden konnte, see Paul, Prinzipien³ 285, E. A. Kock, Engl. Rel. Pronouns, p. 19 ff., L. R. Wilson, Chaucer's Relative Constructions, p. 44 ff. (Studies in Philology, Univ. of North Carolina). Stoffel, Est. 27.260, wrongly sees in this attraction a survival of a dim notion of the old construction one the wisest prince that ever lived; this is disproved by the fact that the construction is also found where no superlative is used. Examples:

Caxton R 115 ye be one of them that oweth me homage | Sh Alls IV. 3.322 his brother is reputed one of the best that is | Swift J 179 he is one of those that must lose his employment whenever the great shake comes | Macaulay (q) he effected one of the most extensive, difficult, and salutary reforms that ever was accomplished by any statesman | NP '92 (q) one of the few Americans who has recently become familiar throughout the world | Shelley Pr 72 I am one of those who am [NB. person] unable to refuse my assent. — Cf. below, p. 499.

In Ch B 4174 five MSS have Oon of the gretteste auctour that men rede Seith thus with a similar use of the sg of the substantive; Skeat's reading Oon ... autours, is not supported by one single MS; one has Some ... autours, and one Oon ... auctorte. — Similar attractions will be mentioned in the chapter on person.

6.81. After there and here (and more rarely where) the vb is often in the sg, even before a plural subject. This is easily explained as a case of attraction in such sentences as Sh As I. 2.127 There comes an old man, and his three sons: comes refers in the first place to an old man, and only secondarily to his companions. But all cases cannot be thus explained. It is worth observing
that the sg is particularly frequent when there has no local significance and has become an "empty" word, pronounced [-də] as against the local [ˈðə]. There is (or there's [-ðəz]) is always placed in the beginning of the sentence, and becomes a fixed formula to indicate the existence of something; it is often pronounced before the speaker has considered whether it is a sg or pl word that is to follow. Here also, though less frequently and less markedly, serves the same function. In the same way Danish had regularly der er with the sg verb before a plural at a time when otherwise the plural was ere (now it is always er in all cases); Italian has often v'è and Russian jest' with the same signification of 'there's' before pl words. In PE the sg is colloquial, and is generally avoided in literary style.

Malory 53 there was slayne that morowe tyde xM good mennys bodyes | Sh Tp I. 2.478 there is no more such shapes as he | Sh Tp V. 1.215 here is more of vs | Bunyan G 51 then there is hopes | ib. 116 there is very few that can | Congreve 239 here's fine doings towards! | Swift P 155 Here's two bachelors drinking to you at once | Defoe R 144 here was no tools to work it with | ib. 200 if there was twenty I should kill them all | R 2.39 there was five or six men altogether | Goldsm 644 there's the two Miss Hogs | Austen S 125 there's a vast many smart beaux in Exeter | Thack P II. 316 there is some things I can't resist | GE M 1.40 here's hooks | ib 1.41 There's no lions—only in the shows | Wells V 35 There's stories, too, about Capes | Wells M 51 here there does seem to be, if not certainties, at least a few probabilities that ... || Benson W 75 Really good talk is one of the greatest pleasures there is.

6.82. Thus we have there is even in the rare cases in which the subject is you: [Ch E 2160 Harl MS: her nys but ge end I; other MSS: but thou and I] Galsworthy P 2.22 Can you find me any one who can take an impersonal view of things? Oh! of course, there's
In the question Where's your manners? (Swift P 55, Ridge S 41, Shaw C 137) we have an analogous phenomenon.

Plural of Verbal Idea

6.91. In an interesting article (I. F. 24.279 ff.) R. M. Meyer tries to establish the existence of "verba pluralia tantum", just as we have nomina pluralia tantum. He means by this such verbs as German wimmeln, sich anhüfuen, sich zusammenrotten, umzingeln (English parallels would be swarm, teem, crowd, assemble, conspire, surround). The plural idea is not, however, connected with the verbal notion in itself, but refers to the subject. If instead of thinking exclusively of languages in which a plural form of the verb is used when the subject is plural, we take into consideration modern Danish, or Chinese, or Ido, in which the same verbal form is used, whether the subject is singular or plural, we see that it is not possible to term these verbs pluralia tantum. Meyer speaks also of another class of verbs, which are peculiar by not admitting an object in the singular: German sammeln, vereinigen, trennen. English examples would be collect, unite, separate. Here also the plural Meyer is speaking of does not refer to the verb in itself, but to some primary word.¹

In Meyer's sense we might say that to quarrel is a verbum plurale tantum, as it takes at least two to quarrel; and yet it may be found with a subject in the singular: I quarrel with him; cf. also Pinero M 3 Don't they quarrel over getting the interesting cases? I should. — Cf. p. 499.

6.92. We may, however, ask whether the idea of "one or more than one" is totally incompatible with the

¹ If sammeln is a verbum plurale tantum, then between is a praepositio dualis tantum and among a praepositio pluralis tantum.
verbal idea? The answer is seen to be a negative one if we turn for a moment to verbal nouns (nomina actionis). If the plural of one walk or one action is (several) walks, actions, the plural idea of the corresponding verb must be 'to undertake several walks, to perform more than one action'. In other words, the real plural of a verb is the corresponding frequentative or iterative verb. But in English and in most languages we have no 'plural' form of verbs in that sense; when I say he walks (shoots), or they walk (shoot), it is impossible to know whether one walk (shot) or more than one is meant. In some languages, however, we have a system of verbal forms by which such distinctions are regularly expressed. This is the case in Slavic: Russian strēljat' is to fire one shot, strēlivat' is to fire several shots. Latin verbs in -ito are less numerous: cantito "sing frequently", ventito "come often"; and some of them have lost the frequentative force (häsito from hæreo, visito from video).¹

6.93. English is very poor in frequentative verbs, especially in such as have corresponding non-frequentative verbs. Even batter as compared with beat is no perfectly unimpeachable instance, as beat may be used in speaking of several acts (beat time, etc.) Verbs that imply repeated acts, are cackle, babble, stutter, chatter and, in a different sphere, persecute. The plural of the verbal idea is also expressed by such means as he talked and talked | he used to talk of his mother | he was in the habit of talking | he would talk of his mother for hours. These will be dealt with in future instalments of this work, and it is only to satisfy my logical propensity that I mention these things in such an unusual place as a chapter on number.

¹ Visito is really a double frequentative, as it is formed from viso, which in itself is a frequentative. It is easy to convince oneself how imperfectly this category was developed in the old languages of our family, by looking up all the passages referred to in the index to Brugmann's Vergleichende Grammatik.
Chapter VII
Number. Appendix

Number in First-Words of Compounds

Singular in First-Words

7.11. In ‘first-words’ (i.e. the first parts of compounds; cf. 2.3) the singular as a rule is used even if the idea is plural. The chief reason for this phenomenon is that in the oldest stratum of compounds the uninflected stem was used with no indication of case or number, and new compounds would at all times be freely formed on their pattern. In another (later) type of compounds the genitive plural was used, but as this ended in OE in -a, which later became -e and then was dropped, the form came to be identical with the nominative singular. Thus ModE book-reading may be equally a continuation of OE böca-ræding and böc-ræding, which are both found. (OE hēc-rædinge in Bede is quite exceptional). — Cf. p. 499.

Examples:

Examples with words not occurring generally in the singular form:
oats: oatmeal | ashes: Ash-Wednesday | tweezers: a tweezer-case | teens: Ru P 1.211 the beginning of the teen period | the West Indies: Di Do 134 any West India scheme (cf. ib 143 the West Indian Intelligence) | billiards: a billiard table | barracks: Wells N 214 barrack architecture.

7.12. The first-word is very often qualified by a numeral (cf. below, p. 499):
a two-horse carriage | three-volume novels | a five-act tragedy | a six shilling book | a five pound note | seven-
league boots | Sh Shr IV. 1.27 you three inch foole | Sterne 83 nine-pin alleys | Tylor A 219 the old three-field system | Doyle S 2.120 my fifty-guinea fee | Henley Burns 246 a hundred-and-thirty-acre farm | Kipl L 23 eighty-one-ton guns | Parker R 72 a seventy-mile drive | Herrick M 81 an eight-hour day | Wells T 114 a ninety-nine year building lease.

Special examples with foot (cf. 3.62):
Sh Cy III. 3.89 my three-foot stoole. | Fielding T 2.136 he was near six feet . . . the six foot man | Kipl J 2.110 a twenty-four-foot crocodile | ib 45 a forest of hundred-foot pines.

Thus instead of -pence we have -penny in compounds indicating price or value:
Sh H4A II. 1.85 long-staffe sixpenny strikers | Greene F 9.228 twopenny chop | Sterne 67 a three-halfpenny pickle-pot | Carlyle S 7 (and often elsewhere) twopenny post | Di Ch 10 an eighteen-penny message | Kipl L 73 three-and-sixpenny potpalms | ib 150 the one-and-elevenpenny umbrella. Thus in the sense ‘worthless’: Swift J 51 It is plaguy twelvepenny [= bad] weather this last week | Thack V 144 a twopenny-halfpenny fellow | ib 503 her twopenny gentility | id P 1.200 twopenny old gentlewomen in small towns. — Cf. on pennyworth 7.31.

7.13. Sometimes the first-word is qualified by an indication of time:
Doyle M S the ten-hour-a-day men | ib. 28 a bow-windowed fifty-pound-a-year house | Doyle S 3.77 we took a nice eighty-pound-a-year villa at Norbury.

7.14. Compounds with adjectives as last-words:
Defoe P 69 she lay in the garret, four story high | Swift T 62 take three old high-crowned hats, and clap them all on his head, three story high | Mrs Browning A 261 a two-inch-wide rush-cage | Kipl J 2.200 ten-foot-thick ice.—Nowadays, the plural would be used when the adjective is not used as an adjunct before a substantive, thus in the first two quotations, the collocation four stories high being not now felt as a compound.
**7.15.** The frequency of the form *year* in such combinations may be due to the old unchanged pl of that word (3.61):

Sh Cor V. 4.18 an *eight yeare* old horse | Trollope D 1.185 any *three-year-old* [sc. horse] | Ru C 141 her *two-year-old* child | Darwin L 1.351 my *ten-year-long* accumulation of notes | GE A 462 a sturdy *two-year-old* nephew | Kipl J 1.118 the young two, *three and four-year-old* seals.

But the *s*-form is also found: Sh Tw V. 1.92 a *twentie yeeres* removed thing | Thack P 3.187 a *six-years'-old* child.

**Plural in First-Words**

**7.2.** There is, however, a growing tendency to use the *pl* form in compounds (cf. 2.3); this must be partly accounted for through the general loosening of the tie between the two parts of compounds generally (ch. XIII). The pl form is naturally found (1) where there is no corresponding singular form in use; (2) where the form is scarcely felt as a real plural; (3) where the plural form is in some way separated from the sg, especially when it has a separate signification of its own; (4) where the *sg* form would lead to ambiguity; (5) in longer compounds of a somewhat loose construction.

**7.21.** No singular is found—or the sg is rare:

*Naples* earth | *Brussels* lace | MI J 1375 *Flanders* mares. Cf. 5.742.

Doyle M 220 a *scissors-grinder* (many compounds without *s*: *scissor-blade*, *-case*, etc.) | Mered H 204 a *shearsman* | Tenn 563 the practised *hustings-liar* | Goldsm 619 a *backstairs favourite* | GE A 147 a sort of *backstairs influence* | Bennett W 1.106 the *stairs-door*.

Cf. also Di Do 80 a three pair of stairs window (where the first-word is really the whole *of*-phrase) | Di D 3 a two pair of stairs' *[sic]* window. The same idea is expressed in a shorter way in Thack H 79 the two-pair lodger.

Both *trouser-pocket* and *trousers-pocket* are found, the
former e. g. GE M 2.213, Doyle S 3.254 and 6.17, Barrie TG 266, Caine E 171, the latter Di N 405, Caine M 297; both in Wells Time Mach. 9 and 128. Thus also breeches pocket Fielding T 2.243, Sterne 73, GE M 1.7, Thack V 50, Di X 16, Hope R 193; Thack P 2.225 a reputable leather-breeches maker | London C 255 pants-finishers.

A foreign plural may be used as a first-word: Stedman Oxf 120 the Litterae Humaniores School.

7.22. The plural is scarcely felt as such, as in the following “metanalyzed” instances (cf. 5.7):

Sh Hml V. 1.49 the gallowemaker | Di T 1.47 the gallows-rope | Anstey V 74 a great gallows-like erection | gallows-tree, before 19th c. gallowtree | painstaking (oldest in NED 1696, earlier paintaking) | dice-play (More U 144), dice-playing, Roister Iii Dauny Diceplayer.

Wells Am 63 the Niagara Falls Power Company (the town is called N. Falls).

7.23. The plural is separated from the sg either in form or signification or in both:
clothes, cf. cloth: a clothes brush | an old clothes shop | Di Do 14 the old clothes-men | Carlyle S clothes-philosopher | ib 30 clothes-rubbish | Jerome T 169 two plain-clothes constables.
mice, cf. mouse: mice poison (e. g. Bennett W 2.278, but rat poison).
teeth, cf. tooth: the older compounds have tooth: toothache, a tooth-brush, but Sweet Primer Phon. 8 speaks (unnaturally) of the teeth-roots, the teeth-rim. In Alabama people say teethache (Payne, Wordlist).

feet begins to be more and more used in compounds (cf. above): Tylor A 244 a man cuts a four or five feet length of the trunk | GE A 138 the two-feet ruler | Ru C 4 this two feet depth of freehold land. Alford [Queen’s Engl. 1889, 209] says that what were formerly called foot-warmers, are now generally called feet-warmers; but I am told that foot-warmer is still the ordinary form (1911).
men: AV I Tim 1.10 men-stealers | Defoe R 128 Cannibals or men-eaters (but 146 canibals, or man-eaters, 218 man-eaters) | Ru F 46 be ‘men-pleasers’ (biblical phrase). Man-eater would now be generally used.

women: Mered E 7 the women part of the company was late in the dark. — Cf. womenkind 2.34.

pence, cf. penny above: a pence-table shows how many pence go to so many shillings | NP ’03 It was not an idealist’s scheme, but a pounds, shillings, and pence movement by men who would lose pounds, shillings, and pence by a war.

Twopence-halfpenny stamps may be heard by the side of twopenny-halfpenny stamps.

oxen: Torrend Grammar Bantu L 39 heavy oxen-waggons (generally ox-waggons).


manners: Saintsbury Cbr Hist E Lit 2.179 the manners-painting of the Prologue.

salts: Thack V 101 her salts-bottle.

spirits: Masefield M 223 a methylated spirits can.

customs: a customs officer | the customs duty | the customs inspector. In the older formation custom-house, we have the sg, though the pl is beginning to creep in: Jerome Pilgrimage 44 a Customs-house clerk | Shaw P 222 (vg.) Castoms Ahses [= customhouses].

works: Shaw 2.129 He’s on the Works Committee of the County Council.

honours [University]: Lang T 10 honours men.

7.24. In the following instances the form without s would easily be mistaken for the adjective great, second (note the particular meaning of second-hand), and plain: Ward RE I. 100 a Greats tutor | ib 101 his Greats pupils (Greats an Oxford examination) | the seconds-hand of a watch, cf. the hour-hand, the minute-hand, where there is no such reason for the pl | Kipl J 1.201 you plains-people (contrasted to the mountain people) | ib 201 a plains-man
who lives in a hut | ib 202 the hill-drivers . . . the plains-drivers | goods-train. — Cf. below, p. 499.

7.25. Apart from these cases we have in recent times a great number of plural first-words, especially in long official terms:

The Natural Sciences Tripos at Cambridge | Hamerton F 2.154 the Contagious Diseases Acts | Trollope D 1.190 the Eastern Counties Railway Station | The United States government | Galsworthy C 56 the five-minutes bell alone broke the Sunday hush. — Cf. below, p. 500.

Always: a two-thirds majority (McCarthy 2.253, Lecky D 1.86, 1.113, etc.) | Sinclair R 280 election by a four-fifths vote.

The greater tendency towards the use of the plural in long compounds is shown by Meredith R 120 the wild oats special plea | ib. 121 the wild oats theory, compared with the oat-compounds above.

Other examples of plural first-words: a savings-bank (cf. in the same sense a saving institution) | Carlyle S 123 an American Backwoodsman | Ward E 90 the little backwoods girl | Thack N 302 the cigars bill | Moulton Sh Artist 51 (and frequently): the Caskets Story [in Merch.] | Kipl L 267 the train, plated with three-eighths inch boiler-plate | Shaw 2.221 the Women's Rights movement | ib 2.282 the Women's Rights woman | Carpenter P 68 the Prisons Blue Book for 1894—95 | Hope Ch 13 an assize town and quarter-sessions borough | Mered E 8 the limes-avenue | Doyle S 6.61 our sales books | Herrick M 111 a stock-yards office | ib. 159 the entire food-products business | NP '10 an equal terms policy.

The Parcels Delivery Company | Wells A 61 parcels delivery tubes; in an American NP '12 I find: the parcels post (or, as the law calls it, parcel post) has come to stay.

7.26. In some cases it may be difficult to decide whether we have a case of apposition or a compound:

Cf. Sh H4A I.3.91 ask me for one penny cost | Defoe P 12 it may not be of one farthing value to him | Scott
Iv 95 a bow of six feet length | Thack N 555 at some forty feet distance.

7.27. If in such cases we have the form in s, this may be taken to represent either the plural or the genitive plural ending; in the following quotations no apostrophe is used:

Di N 202 the lady that got the ten thousand pounds prize in the lottery | Ward E 224 she had perhaps ten seconds start | Fielding 3.595 I enjoyed several hours sleep | Scott Iv 84 a drawbridge of only two planks breadth | Grand T 55 There is twenty years difference in their age | Spencer A 1.95 I had only two shillings pocket money | Shaw 1.217 I shall put in another six hours work before I go to bed | ib 217 I like ten minutes chat after ten | Tennys L 2.117 I have had two very good days coasting.

Compare the following examples from the period preceding the introduction of the apostrophe to denote the genitive:

Malory 92 they had XV dayes journey | ib 126 | Sh Wiv III. 4.49 He will make you a hundred and fiftie pounds ioynture.

7.28. In the following instances we undoubtedly have compounds; the spelling wavers between the form without and with an apostrophe:

Fielding 8.400 to prefer a pain of three moments to one of three months continuance | ib 408 at two miles distance | ib 424 a few days residence | Mrs Browning A 97 the Ten Hours’ movement | Carpenter LC 46 the woman has no eight-hours day | Mrs Browning A 188 the ten-years school-boy | Wordsw 1.288 a five years’ child | Seeley E 20 the Hundred Years’ War | ib 22 the Seven Years’ War | Haggard S 287 a two-months’ child | Shaw 2.99 a three minutes drive.

7.29. Sometimes the spelling with s’ is transferred to cases with an adjective following, which would seem to require the common case rather than the genitive:
Lamb E 1.193 a two-days'-old newspaper | Masefield C 340 a three-days'-old track | Thack S 76 a three-months'-old baby [in another ed. without the apostrophe] | Thack V 170 Brighton, which used to be seven hours' distant from London | Di X 10 his seven years' dead partner (but ib 12 that face of Marley, seven years dead). [Misprints?]

Two pennyworth etc

7.311. A special class of compounds are those with worth and power. The usual phrase is two pennyworth, educated pronunciation [tu 'peniwa] with stronger stress on [pen] than on the numeral and with shortened final syllable, never with the pronunciation ['tapeni]; thus also three pennyworth [pri 'peniwa], not ['pripani-], etc. This shows that to the actual speech instinct pennyworth is a substantive, unchanged in the plural; in very familiar as well as in vulgar speech it becomes [pena]. But originally it must have been put together as two-penny (first-word with sg form) + worth: what is worth twopence.

Examples [none in Sh]:
Franklin 30 give me three-penny worth of any sort | Di N 43 twopeniworth of milk | ib 326 a sixpen'orth of the finest bran | ib 462 she pulled out ten-pennyworth of halfpence | Shaw M 132 Not two penworth of jewellery | Shaw J 217 three penworth of hair dye | Ridge L 191 two pennyworth of boiling water | Phillipotts M 371 six pennyworth of old brandy | Shaw D *19 supply you with six-penny-worth of the elixir of life.

Sometimes, however, pence is found, and this usage is on the increase; pron. ['tapanswo']: Thack S 141 twopenceworth of sprats | Stevenson First B 301 any man with twopence worth of imagination | Shaw C 280 to buy a few pence-worth of food.

7.312. When there is no adjective (numeral) the pl is pennyworths:
Sh H6B I. 1.222 Pirates may make cheape peny-
7.812—7.41. Number in Genitival First-Words. 193

worths of their pillage | Sh Ro IV. 5.4 you take your pennyworths now | Burns 1,179 pennyworths.

This is very rare after a numeral: Caine E 147 two sixpennyworth’s (sic). — Cf. modification on p. 500.

7.313. Corresponding compounds with other coins:
Sh LL III. 1.150 threefarthings worth (folio; Q1 has three-farthing-worth) | Franklin 123 he had thousands of pounds’ worth | Masefield M 206 a hundred pound’s worth of stores.

7.32. Thus also with power: an engine of fifty horse power is originally to be analyzed as fifty-horse (first-word) + power, but now it is practically fifty + a compound horse-power, unchanged in the plural. Analogically:

By DJ 10.34 Oh, for a forty-parson power to chant Thy praise, Hypocrisy! | NP ’03 the light available from a grain of radium probably amounts to several candlepower | Sir W. Ramsay NP ’11 How many man-power are equal to a horse-power? ... 175 million man-power ... dividing the total man-power by the number of families.

Number in Genitival First-Words

7.41. In genitival compounds the number of the first-word does not always conform with what we should expect from a purely logical point of view, but is often made to agree with that of the whole compound (i.e. of the last element); the starting point may have been those instances, which are here treated last, in which the sound of the gen sg and gen pl is identical and in which there is, consequently, nothing but reflexion to guide the speech instinct. A printer’s error logically requires the sg, but two or three printers’ errors is generally spelt thus, though of course the errors may be due to the same printer; cf. also Trollope D 3.149 Dukes’ sons ... a Duke’s son | Thack V 254 to transact bargains with ladies’ maids ... Send a lady’s maid to me (but Trollope D 1.8 lady’s maids) | a tailor’s account | their tailors’ accounts, etc.

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
In the following lists a star draws attention to illogical forms or spellings.

7.42. First we take those words, in which there is a phonetic difference between the genitive singular and the genitive plural. — Cf. below, p. 500.


\[\text{man, woman: Sh R2 I. 1.48 a womans warre* [in Herford's ed. paraphrased: a women's quarrel] | Sh As I. 3.121 in my heart Lye there what hidden womans feare there will | Mi J 921 ringing dead mens knels | Spect 536 the women's-men or beaus | Thack V 18 he is always communicative in a man's party* | ib 23 he was talkative in man's society* | Thack P 2.13 they had not much choice of man's society* | ib 2.242 women's hearts | Sayce Introd 1.205 a woman's dialect* existed among the Arcadians, and "a woman's language*" is also said to exist in Bengal | Outlook 12/6 09. 366 There are men's ladies as there are ladies' men, and Jane Welsh is a man's lady; enjoys men's society much more than the society of women | Galsworthy C 155 they would have smiled their woman's smile | Norris S 103 in her men's clothes* she looked tall | ib. 125 sitting there in man's clothes and man's boots, the pistol at her side | Stevenson B 147 he made me dress in these men's clothes*, which is a deadly sin for a woman.}\]

F. N. Scott, in The School Review, June 1912, writes: "A considerable number of persons hate the plural form women, as being weak and whimpering, though the singular woman connotes for the same persons ideas of strength and nobility. It is for this reason perhaps that woman's building, woman's college, woman's club, and the like, have supplanted in popular speech the forms women's building, women's college, etc. It is noteworthy also that in the titles of magazines and names of women's clubs the singular in most instances has displaced the more logical plural."
Compounds of man: MI F 153 Almaine Rutters with their horsemens staues | Thack P 1.286 at freshmen's wine parties | Mered H 5 a gentleman's school* [= a school for gentlemen] | GE A 179 in addition to their journeyman's work*.

Note that the sound of gentleman's and gentlemen's is generally identical (cf. 2.35, 3.11).

wife: Caine S 1.205 we'll not repeat their old wife's gossip* | Caine M 388 the people produced their old wife's wisdom* [Observe that wives' here may give a different meaning]. An old wives' tale may originally have contained the old genitive singular wife's (wiues), as does a calves-head, see Morphology.

thief: Thack P 2.314 that infernal little thieves' den; also e.g. Mered E 100.

7.48. In the following cases the sound of the gen sg and gen pl is identical:

Carlyle R 1.108 to quit the barren wasp's nest* of a thing (also GE Mm 1.60) | Swinb L 86 a wasps' nest | Kipl J 2.63 a hornet's nest* (also Stevenson T 43) | Ru S 1.373 bird's nests* | Di D 507 marks like flies' legs | Thack P 1.2 a few crow's-feet round about the eyes | Ritchie M 189 the grasshoppers' concert | Collingwood R 290 camels' hair coats | Scott Iv 64 a chair decorated with two ass's ears* | Beaconsf L 413 I have paid with my heart's blood | Ru Sel 1.484 their hearts' blood | Barrie T 187 a lovers' quarrel | Mered E 220 a lover's quarrel* | ib 142 one hears of lover's quarrels* | Hamerton F 2.169 The army . . . is essentially a bachelor's profession* | ib 1. 65 After taking their bachelor's degree | Hope Ch 17 chemists' drugs | Thack V 389 how many of you have surreptitious milliners' bills? | Wright, ed. of Sh Tw 90 Julia is dressed in boys' clothes* | Thack V 315 a most flourishing lady's physician* | ib 348 the celebrated Lady's doctor* | ib 513 a professional lady's man* (also Mered E 417; cf above woman's man) | Caine M 143 we mustn't live in a fool's
paradise | Masefield C 378 we were living in fools' paradieses | Sw NEG § 624 English sank almost into a mere peasant's dialect* | Benson D 59 she didn't care two pins' heads | id B 106 two grandfather's clocks.

I have found three spellings of dogs-ear (in books): Sher. Riv. I. 2 dog's-eared | Thack V 30 his dogs-eared primer | Jerome Nov. 11 dogs'-eared pages; also dog-ear is found.

7.44. What is the plural of a stone's throw as a measure of distance? Two stones' throw (Thack V 196 Rebecca and her husband were but at a few stones' throw of the lodgings | Galsworthy C 263 within two stones'-throw of the club) is not logical, for the distance in which you can throw two stones is not double that in which you can throw one; but two stones'- (stone's) throws is hardly found.—Defoe R 2.114 within two musket shot of them | Kipl P 82 within three bowshots.

Number in Derivatives

7.5. The form used as a starting-point in derivatives is generally the singular, even when the idea is plural, thus:

-er: a ten-tonner, a three-master, a forty-pounder cannon (Kipl L 93), a two-mover (chess problem in two moves).

-ed: a three-masted vessel, a three-legged stool, the seven-hilled city, many-childed mother (Swinburne SbS 12), blue-eyed.

-ful: fanciful (= full of fancy, or of fancies), fitful, thankful.

-less: childless (without children, without a child), friendless, toothless generally, but Burns has teethless, footless, also (obs.) feelless, penniless, very rarely penceless.

-y: lousy. Here we have woodsy (rare) by the side of woody, and tricksy (Storm EPh 883 has a quotation from Goldsmith and two from Helen Mathers, to which might be added Sh Tp V. 1.226, Mered E 40) by the side of tricky (Kipling L 7, Doyle S, 1.145). Sweet (in Storm) says: "tricky = cunning, tricksy full of tricks, playful", while
Words with Numerical Relations

7.6. Some languages, besides the general plural, which relates to "more than one" indefinitely, have one or more special plurals, relating to some definite number: two (dual), three (trial), etc. Arian languages originally had a dual, but in the inflexion of substantives only very few survivals were found even in the oldest English (where old dual forms have been traced in duru 'door', sculdru 'shoulders', breost 'breasts'), and none are found in Modern English.

Nevertheless, we find even now some words (besides the numeral two) which refer to two as distinct from one as well as from more than two, and on the other hand we have some words that refer to or indicate a definite number as distinct from an indefinite number, as in which of them told you so? as compared with who told you so? We shall now deal with both these classes.

Words Referring to Two

7.71. First we have the word both as in both my sons, indicating that I have two, while all my sons would imply that I have more than two. In French, on the other hand, we have no word for both, but must say tous deux or tous les deux; or mes deux fils without tous.

While the pronoun both is never used in speaking of more than two, the conjunction both very often is placed before more than two members (see NED both B 1 b); examples: Ch A 2298 bothe hevene and erthe and see | Sh Ven 747 Both fauour, sauour, hew, and qualities | Mi PL 4.722 The God that made both Skie, Air, Earth & Heav'n.

7.721. Secondly we have a series of pronominal words in -ther (cf. Latin uter, alter, Gr póleros, etc): other,
either, neither, whether. The relation to "two", however, is not always strictly observed in PE.

The suffix in these words is an old comparative suffix, cf. below on comparative. There is an interesting illustration of the relation between such pronouns and comparatives in Finnish, where the word for 'both', molemmat, has the form of a comparative.

7.722. Other originally was the ordinal corresponding to two and may still be considered as such in combinations like "his other arm", "the other place" (in the House of Commons = the House of Lords, and vice versa; also = Hell, as opposed to Heaven). But soon other acquired an application so wide and vague that the second had to take its place in the strict signification of "No. 2" as opposed to the first, the third, etc. Another in "Have another cup" may mean a fourth, a fifth, etc. Examples of other in this indefinite application:

Sh R2 I. 1.128 three parts ... The other part [= the last fourth] reseru'd I by consent | Spect 119 three ... one ... another ... the other | Franklin 45 The two first were ... the other was clerk to a merchant | McCarthy 2.209 Thirteen of these (vessels) she burnt, and the other two were converted into cruisers | Ru C 1 in my other volumes | Stevenson B 79 the four who ...; the other three came galloping up the road.

7.731. Either as a pronoun is generally used of two only, though there is a tendency to use it about three, etc., probably because any is felt to be too indefinite to be used where the number is still comparatively small. Examples:

[Sh Compl 306?] | Smollett (q) if I could be admitted into your service as house-steward, clerk, butler, or bailiff, for either of which places I think myself qualified | Scott A 2.28 Dousterswivel ... Sir Arthur ... Oldbuck ... Thus each being wrapped in his own unpleasant ruminations, there was hardly a word said on either side | Austen P 449 Elizabeth, Kitty, and Darcy were to entertain
each other. Very little was said by either | Austen S 248
he laid before me three different plans . . . do not adopt
either of them | Di D 151 [three or four of us . . .] I
soon became as skilful as either of the other boys | Ru
S 1.465 nor does it appear in any way desirable that
either of the three classes should extend itself | Hawth
S 54 [three possibilities] In either case, . . . | Poe 216
either of these numerous modes and motives could have
been the actual one.

The tendency thus seems to be towards establishing
the same mutual relation between either and any as
between each and every, or which and who, see 7.8.

Corresponding examples with neither: Hardy F 339
neither of the three was in a fit state to take charge of
the waggon | Mered T 81 Poet, novelist, essayist, dramatist,
shall be ranked honourable in my Republic. I am neither,
but a man of law. — Cf. p. 500.

7.732. As a conjunction, either is freely used where
there are more than two alternatives:

Sh Wiv V. 1.4 there is diuinity in odde numbers,
either in natiuity, chance, or death | Meas III. 2.149 either
this is enuie in you, folly, or mistaking | Jowett [NED]
A narration of events, either past, present, or to come.

This is, perhaps, still more true of neither as a con­
junction:

Sh Ado II. 1.303 neither sad, nor sicke, nor merry,
nor well | Cæs III. 2.225 I haue neyther wit nor words,
nor worth, Action, nor utterance, nor the power of speech |
Meas III. 1.37 thou hast neither heate, affection, limbe,
nor beautie | Meas V. 177 neither maid, widow, nor wife |
Austen P 440 Neither duty, nor honour, nor gratitude
has any possible claim on me. No principle of either
would be violated by my marriage | Neither fish, flesh,
fowl, nor good red herring.

7.741. Whether as an interrogative pronoun, meaning
"which of two" was evidently obsolescent ab. 1600. It is
found a few times in the AV, and pretty frequently in
Bacon (Bøgholm p. 45 has ten examples, among which one is adjectival, and one contains whethersoever); in the 19th c. this whether is found only rarely as a biblical reminiscence: Kyd ST I. 2.160 to whether did'st thou yield? | Matth 21.31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? | ib 23.17 whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple? | ib 23.19 | Bacon Lett 4.329 collate those two sums, whether is the better? | Ru Art 193 neither may you suppose that between Turner's eyes, and yours, there is any difference respecting which it may be disputed whether of the two is right.

Spenser and Ben Jonson use this whether of three: Faerie Q IV. 9.1 all three kinds of love... doe disport the hart... Whether shall weigh the balance downe | BJo 3.62 a question it were now, whether of us three In pleasing him, claim the precedency can?

7.742. The transition from the pronoun whether to the interrogative adverb (or conjunction) is seen in comparing the two parallel passages:

AVMatth 9.5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, and walke? | Mark 2.9 Whether is it easier to say, etc.

Cp. also Ch B 3119 wher [= whether] shall I calle you my lord daun John, Or daun Thomas, or elles daun Albon?—three alternatives!

Shakespeare does not really use whether as a pronoun, but only in the transitional stage, in which we may analyze it at will as "which of two" or as a mere introductory word before a disjunctive question, in which whether now seems superfluous, cf. Lat. utrum:

Sh Wiv III. 2.3 Whether had you rather lead nine eyes, or eye your masters heeles? [where a comma after rather would change one construction into the other] | All IV. 5.23 Whether doest thou profess thy selfe, [here the comma is in the folio] a knaue or a foole? | John 1. 134 | Elliptical in Ven 304 and Pilgr 188. Cf. also
Pilgr 101 Was this a louer, or a letcher whether? [= ... letcher? whether (was it?)].

7.743. In the conjunctional use of whether, no regard is now paid to the number of alternatives; at first used only when followed by a single or, it is now very often used where no alternative is expressed (as already very frequently in Shakespeare, e.g. H4A III. 2.4 I know not whether Heauen will have it so), or again before three or more alternatives (as in Sh Sonn 37 For whether beauty, birth, or wealth, or wit, Or any of these all, or all, or more . . .).

7.744. As a pronoun which has taken the place of whether:

Sh Merch IV. 1.174 Which is the merchant heere? and which the Iew? | Lamb R 91 the 14th of November 1743 or 4, I forget which it was | Di D 345 Mrs. W., who was a large lady—or who wore a large dress: I don't exactly know which, for I don't know which was dress and which was lady | ib 492 I hardly know which was the better pleased, Traddles or I | Shaw 2.109 Pray are you flattering me or flattering yourself? I don't feel quite sure which | Hope D 95 I stayed two hours—or two minutes, I forget which | Hope R 232 he was bolder, or less scrupulous—which you will.

Even who may be used in questions comprising only two individuals:

Mrs Browning A 225 Who's stronger, He who makes, or He who mars? | Hewlett Q 57 Who is the doxy: Arran or the lass?

7.751. I do not know whether the distinction made in most grammars between the reciprocal pronouns each other and one another, that the former implies only two, and the latter more than two persons, has at any period been observed consistently; anyhow it is not now.

Examples in which the rule is observed:
Sh Hml II. 1.81 his knees knocking each other | Shaw
P 4 Americans and English ... to kill as many of one another as possible.

7.752. Examples contrary to the school rule: *One another* of two:

Sh Wiv l. 1.257 when wee are married, and have more occasion to know one another [frequent in Sh and elsewhere] | Spect. 584 the courts of two nations do not so much differ from one another | Spencer E 1.217 two men frequently seeing one another | Wells V 195 they regarded one another, each blinded to the other | ib 214 For a time he and Miss Klegg contradicted one another.

_Each other_ of more than two:

Otway 171 were all mankind villains, They'd starve each other | Spect 583 various nations distinguished from each other by their customs | Franklin 27 Some people ... hallow'd to us ...; but ... we could not hear so as to understand each other | Gibbon M 129 a number of remarks are heaped on each other without method | ib 156 twenty ladies ... at each other's houses | Austen S 349 the family were again all restored to each other | Merriman S 78 a crowd of well-dressed men jostled each other | ib 141 a dozen or more gentlemen, who gazed at each other.

7.753. Therefore we frequently find _each other_ and _one another_ in the same sentence, simply by way of variety:

Franklin 113 the members should engage to afford their advice to each other in promoting one another's interests ... | Thack N 270 In such a history events follow each other without necessarily having a connection with one another | Hawth Sn 77 these two—who help one another along, and seem to be comforting and encouraging each other | Shaw C 256 People that are fond of one another never have any difficulty; and people that hate each other never have any comfort | Norris O 256 the throng of guests ... tripping upon each other ... stepping over one another, getting behind each other |
They were enormously pleased with one another; they found each other beyond measure better than they had expected.—See also the story of the two Englishmen on the desert island, Sweet, Elementarb. 57.

7.761. Between etymologically (OE. bi-twéonum, bi-twéon 'by two') refers to two, but it has been “from its earliest appearance, extended to more than two”; among, which refers to more than two, is now more vague, while between “is still the only word available to express the relation of a thing to many surrounding things severally and individually” (NED). When two or more words are added by means of and, between must always be used: between (never among) A and B and C. The original distinction is perhaps best retained in the signification “by the joint action of, shared in by”, as in Sh Err V. 1.177 My master and his man . . . Betweene them they will kill the coniurer | Hope Q 379 we’ve killed him among us, I and you and the people out there.

But even here between often takes the place of among.

7.762. By a natural ellipsis found in many languages between may be used before one word in the singular if it is preceded by each or every (= between each . . . and the next): Sh Pilgr 92 Betweene each kisse her othes of true loue swearing | Fielding T 1.115 between every stroke | Di T 2.279 with a shake of her head between every rapid sentence.

7.771. The comparative was originally used when two were compared, the superlative when more than two were referred to. Thus in what is still considered the more dignified or literary usage:

Sh Merch II. 1.32 If Hercules and Lychas playe at dice Which is the better man, the greater throw May turne by fortune from the weaker hand | ib III. 4.64 Ie prove the prettiere fellow of the two | Fielding T 2.238 two sons of which I was the younger | Di D 492 I hardly know which was the better pleased, Traddles or I | Tenn 562 Rome of Cesar, Rome of Peter, which was crueller? which was worse?
7.772. But apart from such set phrases as the lower lip, the upper end, the lower (and upper) classes, the natural tendency in colloquial speech is to use the superlative in speaking of two, and this is found very frequently in good authors (ME quotations, see Mätzner III. 301; cf. also Baldwin, Infl. and Syntax of Morte d’Arthur § 44; Bøgholm, Bacon 66; Franz, Sh.-Gr. § 215 anm. 2; Storm, EPh. 707; Sweet, NEG § 2081).

Examples of the superlative (which in Sh is more frequent than the comparative):

Sh Merch II. 1.7 whose blood is reddest, his or mine | Mi SA 1155 whose God is strongest, thine or mine | Defoe R. 2.22 two priests . . . the oldest man . . . the younger priest | Goldsm 645 we’ll see which is strongest, you or I | By DJ 12.20 Malthus and Wilberforce—the last set free the Negroes | Scott Iv 190 the guest and the entertainer . . . although the former had probably fasted longest | Austen E 5 She was the youngest of the two daughters | Austen S 333 I believe Marianne will be the most happy of the two | Quincey 12 being of two evils by very much the least | Beaconsf L 476 which is the most valuable companion, the volume that keeps him awake or the one that sets him a-slumbering? | Stevenson JHF 101 the carpenter . . . the locksmith . . . but this last [= the latter] was a handy fellow (the last of two also Defoe G 49, 68, 99; Sweet NEG § 118 the first half . . . the last half).

7.773. Sometimes the comparative and the superlative are used in speaking of the same two persons or things:

Sh H5 III. 6.120 when leuitie and crueltie play for a kingdome, the gentler gamester is the soonest winner | Austen E 96 the elder [brother], whose temper was by much the most communicative, and who was always the greater talker | Caine First B 59 a widow with two sons . . . the younger son . . . the eldest son . . . 62 the younger son . . . that elder son.
7.774. Inversely, the comparative is sometimes found instead of the superlative in speaking of three, thus especially the latter:

By 555 leaving to the ravens, And wolves, and men—the fiercer of the three—Her myriads of fond subjects | Doyle B 42 the youngest of three brothers of whom poor Sir Charles was the elder || Scott Iv 72 excepting the Jew, the Mahomedans, and the Templar; the latter of whom . . . | Fox 1.153 letters from Trench, Carlyle, and Coleridge. That of the latter was as follows | Stevenson T 153 roof, walls, and floor. The latter stood in several places as much as a foot above the surface of the sand | Gosse F 145 three orphan sisters, Ann, Mary Grace, and Bess, the latter lately married to a carpenter.

7.775. In the following quotations, the latter is apparently used of more than two, but in reality we have a division into two halves:

Spencer Ess. 2.338 the latter syllables of a long word | Doyle S 1.190 in the latter days of December.

Words Referring to a Definite Number

7.8. While in the just mentioned cases we have a distinction between two and a higher number, we have elsewhere a distinction between a definite, limited number on the one hand, and a vague, unlimited number on the other. Thus each as opposed to every, which as opposed to who and what, and the Englishmen as opposed to the English.

7.811. Every is etymologically = ever + each, OE ēfre + ēlc; the addition of ever makes every more universal than the simple each. "The form ever each, surviving in archaistic use till 16th c., was corrupted into every each . . . occas. used arch. by recent writers" (NED). The ending of everich was weakened in ME; -ch disappeared first before a consonant, and then everywhere, and soon the word was no longer felt as a compound of each; every was felt to be more emphatic than each, and when Wyclif writes every languor and eche sekenesse, Dr. Bradley
(NED) explains it through “it being unnecessary to repeat the emphasis”. In course of time the two words were differentiated, though the distinction is even now by no means always clearly observed. (Cf. on each instead of every Storm EPh 756, 767, 1038).

If every individualizes if compared with all, so does each in a still higher degree; it singles out where every unites. See for instance:

Mi PL 8.342 Each bird and beast behold after thir kindes | ib 351 each bird stoop’d on his wing | Wordsw P 4.199 a narrow vale where each was known to all | AV Gen. 16.12 his hand will be against every man; and every mans hand against him.

7.812. The difference is pretty clearly seen in the following quotations, where each and every are used in close proximity:

Caxton R 85 vnnder every historye the wordes were grauen that every man myght vnderstande what eche historye was | Di D 455 at least one letter on each side every day | Maclaren A 54 he started on a survey of his farm... from field to field and into every corner of each field | Besant First B 8 Every one wanted to write a series of articles. Each in turn proposed a series as if it was a new and striking idea | Poe 254 we not only opened every book, but we turned ever every leaf in each volume | Holmes A 149 The saturation-point of each mind differs from that of every other | ib 247 he is inclined by nature to love each and every woman. Therefore it is that each woman virtually summons every man to show cause why he does not love her | NP '09 Everybody was discussing routes with everybody else. Each was sure that he was going the only good way | NP '10 The fly is a danger which comes home to every family. And each family can do much to minimize the danger.

But sometimes no apparent distinction is made in similar collocations, the two words being simply used for the sake of variety:
Mi C 311 I know each lane and every alley green | Wilde In 154 He will seek for beauty in every age and in each school | Macdonald Fk 243 they had to deal with each day's difficulties as they could, every new day bringing its own changes.

7.813. Very frequently both words are collocated (each and every) for the sake of emphasis:

Trollope D 3.218 each and everyone there | Black F 2.59 each and every day was one to be marked with a white stone | Holmes A 141 through the centre of each and every town or city | Jerome T 125 that anything any of the seven could do for her, each and every would be delighted to do.

7.814. Each may refer to only two persons or things (and is then a synonym of either), while every always implies more than two:

Franklin 77 because I would not give an unkind preference to either, I took half of what each had offered | Wordsw 214 both he [W. Scott] and I, without either of us knowing that the other had taken up the subject, each wrote a poem in admiration of the dog's fidelity | Di D 581 each knew that the other liked him.

7.815. Each very frequently is followed by of (each of us, etc.). Formerly every was used in the same manner (Sh As V. 4.178 every of this happie number, and Ant I. 2.38 are the only places in Sh; Defoe, see NED), and this may still be found in legal documents. But every one of is a frequent combination (one is the numeral, not the 'prop' word); it resembles each of in referring to a definite number, but does not specialize in quite the same way as each:

Sh Tw II. 5.153 every one of these letters are in my name | AV Luke 16.5 hee called every one of his lords debtors vnto him (Rev. V. he called each one of his lord's debtors) | Defoe R 2.146 and 209 | Di X 19 the air was filled with phantoms. Every one of them wore chains | Ru P 3.24 every one of Maurice's disciples took what
views he chose || Gardiner H 216 Every one of these three
claimants was an English baron | ALang Ess 127 every
one of a man's books cannot be his masterpiece | McCarthy
2.610 Russia had set her heart upon recovering every
single one of the advantages | Shaw M 9 She'll commit
every crime a respectable woman can; and she'll justify
everyone of them.

7.821. With regard to the interrogative pronouns,
which asks for one (or more) out of a definite number
(cf. whether above), while who and what ask indefinitely.

"Who was the murderer, and what was the instrument
he used?" implies that we are in complete ignorance as to both
facts. "Which was the murderer and which weapon did he use?"
implies that two or more particular persons are suspected of
the murder, and that the murderer is supposed to have used
one of two or more particular instruments. The question is
which of these individuals was the criminal and which of these
instruments was his instrument." G. R. Carpenter, Princ. of
Engl. Gr. 1898, p. 87. — In what part of London does he live?
If we were here to say "In which part", this would imply a
much more definite division of London into separate parts than
is found in actual fact.

Which do you like best, tea or coffee? | Which-way
shall we turn? [i.e. to the right or to the left?] | Which
of you has seen him? [cf. Who has seen him?] | BJo
1.53 I am a knave, if I know what to say, What course
to take, or which way to resolve | Di N 322 in favour of
one of them. Then the question arose, which one it could
be | Wilde H 92 he only knew two airs, and was never
quite certain which one he was playing | Gissing B 38 De-
luge? growled Mr. G. What deluge? Which deluge? | O'Rell
John B 202 Let the religion be good or bad, no matter
which it is, or what it is, it is better than none at all
[Here which = which of the existing religions; and what
is quite indefinite = of what quality, or contents].

7.822. Which, accordingly, is necessary before a
partitive of, though who of is found now and then; in
Thack V 30 "Who amongst us is there that does not
recollect similar hours of childish grief?" us means "all men", and the question therefore is really indefinite.

Other instances of who and what, where we should expect which: Mrs Browning A 225 Who's stronger, He who makes, or He who mars? | Poe 664 Of all melancholy topics, what is the most melancholy?

In ordinary conversation, such questions as this "What will you have, beer or wine?" are very common, because the speaker has not, at the moment when he starts asking, realized that the choice is limited.

7.823. In the genitive, no distinction can be made, whose being everywhere used:

Sh Merch II. 1.7 whose blood is reddest, his or mine | Ant II. 3.16 whose fortunes shall rise higher, Cæsars or mine? | Mi S 1155 whose God is strongest, thine or mine | Dryden 5.230 If I come singly, you an armed guest, The world with ease may judge whose cause is best.

7.824. What one (with of) is sometimes used (in US only) instead of which (or rather bearing the same relation to which as every one to each):

Poe 565 by quoting (we will not say whence—from what one of her poems)—a few verses | ib 660 Of the innumerable effects, or impressions of which the soul is susceptible, what one shall I select? | Royce R 5 of these diverse races, what ones are the superior and what ones are the inferior races? What race or races ought to rule? What ones ought to yield to their natural masters? To which one of these races has God ordained the final sovereignty of the earth? Which of these types of men is really the human type? Cf. on a different use of what one 10.63.

7.825. As what is asks about the quality (description, contents, etc.) of a thing (What is love, a star, etc.), which is is often used when information is wanted about the name of something, even if the group indicated by which is not very precise or definite:
Thack N 462 Which is that star? [= What star is that?] | Ridge L 91 which were the six principal rivers of England?

Note that the (recent) distinction between who and which as relative pronouns referring respectively to persons and to things is quite different from that observed between the interrogative pronouns; in the following quotation from Chaucer it seems as if which was used in concordance with the rule for the interrogative pronouns and was made relative only by the addition of that: A 796 And which of you that bereth him best of alle, . . . Shal have a soper . . .

7.91. Adjectives as principals in the plural (chapter XI) with the denote a whole class: the poor = "everybody poor", while the poor ones is a limited plural = such among those mentioned as are poor: there were several artisans at the meeting; the poor ones . . . Thus also the Irish is more comprehensive (= the whole Irish nation) than the Irishmen, for instance in Ward M 127 We have had a nasty scene in the house [of Commons] with the Irishmen. Cf. also those present—the present ones. (Who did it? The poor. | Which of them did it? The poor ones).

7.92. We may finally give the following survey of words with numerical relations.

An indefinite number: A definite number: Two:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>All</th>
<th>All</th>
<th>Both pron.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>—</td>
<td>both conj.</td>
<td>both conj.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Every</td>
<td>each</td>
<td>(either) pron.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Any</td>
<td>any (either)</td>
<td>either pron.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>None, No</td>
<td>none, no</td>
<td>neither pron.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—</td>
<td>neither conj.</td>
<td>neither conj.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One another</td>
<td>one another</td>
<td>each other</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Who, What</td>
<td>which</td>
<td>(whether †)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Superlative</td>
<td>superlative</td>
<td>comparative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Among</td>
<td>among</td>
<td>between</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Irish</td>
<td>the Irishmen</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The poor</td>
<td>the poor ones</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter VIII

Substantives

8.11. As already indicated (1.31) the different parts of speech are marked off by formal criteria. The chief criteria by which substantives as such are distinguished from other parts of speech, are the formation of the plural by means of the endings, etc., enumerated in 2.21, and the formation of a genitive in 's. Neither of these criteria, however, is absolute and applicable to all substantives; there are some substantives which form no plural, and there are a great many substantives from which a genitive is never formed. As a third criterion might be mentioned the capability of taking an (adjective) adjunct; especially when a word can take one of the articles the and a before it, we seldom hesitate to reckon it among substantives.

8.12. On the other hand we are not entitled to call a word a substantive merely because it can be used as a principal (1.31). The distinction is often overlooked, and in many instances it is obscured by the current grammatical terminology, in which phrases like 'standing as a substantive' or 'in substantival function' are loosely used of pronouns, adjectives, and adverbs employed as principals. In NED, for example, the word there (11) is called a substantive, not only in sentences like "there is no 'here' nor 'there'," in which it is a quotation substantive (8.2), and like "Motion requires a here and a there", in which it has become a real substantive, as seen especially by the plural in the quotation "In the Space-field lie innumerable other theres"; but it is also called a substantive in "over against there", "from there", and "He left there last night", in which cases there retains its proper adverbial force and signification though used as a principal (object of a preposition or a verb). If we were
to call *there* in these combinations a substantive, to be consistent we should call the group *behind the old oak* a substantive in the combination “from behind the old oak” and *between two and three thousand* another in “he left between two and three thousand”: in my system they are simply group principals.

8.13. The formal distinction between substantives and adjectives is more pronounced in English than in any other language of the same family; this is due to the fact that while most of the OE endings in substantives and adjectives have been obliterated in course of time (-e, -a, -an, -um, etc.), the only endings that were strong enough to hold their own, were those containing an *s*, while these *s*-endings were even extended to most of the ‘stems’ which did not possess them originally. Now, the plural ending OE *-as*, ME *-es*, was not at all found in the adjective inflexion, and the genitive ending OE *-es*, ME *-es* was much rarer in adjectives than in substantives and could therefore disappear analogically from adjectives when most of the other adjective endings had been merged into a non-significant *-e*; accordingly when this *-e* was lost, adjectives came to have only one form, while most substantives had *-s* both in the genitive and in the plural.

8.14. In the following instances, therefore, the words in *s* are substantives, and those without that plural ending adjectives; the former have a more specialized signification, though this is not equally obvious in all the examples: *heathen roughs* | *rough heathens* | Sh H5 III. 5.10 
*Normans*, but *bastard Normans, Norman bastards* | Wilde L 152 *Millionaire models* are rare enough; but, by Jove, *model millionaires* are rarer still | NP ’09 *There is a large number of student athletes;* there is a much smaller number of *athletic students* | Gissing G 214 *the most intimate* [notice *most*] of her *intimates* received little hints | Ru P 1.260 he looked for *subordinates* who would be *subordinate for ever.*—Note also in the sg the distinction made in Gals-
worthy M 24 Having been a Conservative Liberal in politics till well past sixty, it was not until Disraeli's time that he became a Liberal Conservative. (The pl would be respectively Conservative Liberals and Liberal Conservatives).

—Chesterton: most official Liberals wish to become Liberal officials.

8.15. Substantives are either substantives proper, which are always substantives, or words belonging to some other part of speech (or word-groups), which have been turned into substantives, often enough only for the nonce.

8.16. To substantives proper belong also substantives derived from verbs, even if they have in Present English no ending to distinguish them from the verb itself. A move, a drive, a find are in every respect just as good substantives as a motion or a movement, etc.; and it is not quite correct to speak, as is often done, of the 'faculty English possesses of using verbs as substantives'. Love is not a verb 'used as a substantive', but represents the OE subst. lufu, which in old times was distinct in form from the verb lufian; though in course of time the two have lost their distinctive endings, the one is as much a substantive, and the other a verb as in the oldest period, and the same distinction holds true also of words which have been formed in recent times on their analogy, see Growth p. 166ff.

But in other instances we are justified in speaking of words of other classes being turned into substantives. (See 8.2—8.5). And we have also groups and parts of words that have become independent substantives (8.6—8.9). Cf. also on the whole 2.3—2.5.

Quotation Words

8.21. Any word, and any word-group, may be turned into a substantive by being taken in the sense 'the word . . .' (or 'the phrase, sentence . . .'). That these quotation-substantives, as I have termed them, are real substantives, appears especially from the possibility of
forming a plural from them, of which many examples are given in 2.48. — On thanks see 5.772.

A few examples of the singular will suffice here: the second ruin might easily be misread as run | Austen M 277 At last—it seemed an at last to Fanny’s nervousness, though not remarkably late—he began... | Shaw D 197 she would go from her home without with-your-leave or by-your-leave.

Here also belong a farewell and an I. O. U. = I once you, i.e. a memorandum of debt (e.g. Di D 499).

8.22. Pronouns may be used as quotation-substantives as in: Sh All’s II. 1.81 write to her a loue-line. What her is this? | Tenn Becket I. 1 It much imports me I should know her name. What her? The woman that I followed hither | Smedley F 2.19 so he left her there. ‘And who may her be?’ inquired Freddy, setting grammar at defiance | Kipl S 116 They use the editorial ‘we’... There is great virtue in that ‘we’.

8.23. A special kind of quotation-word is found in the colloquial (I don’t care) a damn (Caine P 66) or a hang (Ward D 2.12, Vachell H 172, James S 128).

8.24. The names of some games are quotation-words containing an imperatival sentence: hide-and-seek | catch | hop-skip-and-jump (applied to handwriting in Caine C 247). Cf. also a poem by Norman Gale: Love played at Catch-me-if-you-Can In Mary’s eyes... Love played at Kiss-me-if-you-Dare On Mary’s lips... Love played at Find-me-if-you-May In Mary’s breast.

8.25. The following I take also to be cases of quotation-words; they contain an imperative, or very frequently two joined imperatives, or an imperative-sentence (with the verb in the ‘subjunctive’), and are preceded by if is (here is) or it is a case of: Kipl L 238 It’s a toss-up whether she comes again or not | also Mered E 178,343 | here’s cut-and-come again (Swift P, etc.) | Lamb E2 VII It was hit or miss with him | Austen M 51 I thought it would be only ask and have | Hughes T 2.148 It was
touch and go | Darwin L 1.259 it was devil take the hindmost who should get out first | Caine M 260 if I hadn’t had a stick that day, it would have been Heaven help the pair of us | Caine C 81 It is a case of put a penny in the slot, and out comes the word of command | Herrick M 121 it’s dog eat dog in our business (also ib 148).—Cf. also Pinero Q 31 It was a genuine case of done with the old life.

8.26. From these quotation-words may develop regular words, thus give-and-take; the quotation is still obvious in Hughes T 2.19 it is henceforth to be all give and no take; but has been forgotten in Ward R 3.14 under all this delicate give and take both suffered | Ward E 158 an hour’s walking mixed with the give and take of explanations on both sides | Collingwood R 192 the friendly give-and-take of a wide acquaintance. Thus also cut-and-thrust ‘a hand-to-hand struggle’.

Adjectives

8.3. Adjectives are very frequently turned into substantives, as shown by the formation of a plural in s and of a genitive in ’s, see ch. IX. A specially noteworthy case is the one that is used as a ‘prop-word’, see ch. X.

Pronouns

8.41. Pronouns may be turned into substantives. Thus (formerly frequently) he = ‘male being’, she = ‘female’: Bale T 1439 I am non other, but even the very he | Sh Tw I. 5.259 Lady, you are the cruell’st shee alive | As III. 2.10 carue on every tree The faire, the chaste and vnexpressiue shee | Cymb I. 3.29 the shees of Italy | Swift 3.341 the Hees would fight with the females Phillpotts M 40 (and often) a she. — Cf. vol. VII 6.14.

In the 19th and 20th c. it is often the objective case that is used thus substantively: Trollope D 1.94 that other him is the person she loves | ib 94 reference to
some *him*  | Gilbert Orig Plays 1884 129 (vg) Mr. Fitz Partington shall introduce him.—It ain’t a *him*, it’s a *her*  | Roosevelt NP ’13 He feels, as though that child was not the present *him*, individually, but an ancestor.

**8.42.** In this way we have substantivized (Carlyle S 132) the THOU and (ib. 39) that strange THEE of thine, and with special frequency in more or less philosophic style the pronoun of the first person, either in the nominative form as in: Ward D 3.86 Was there any law—any knowledge—any *I*?  | L Morris Poet Works 121 And the *I* is the giver of light, and without it the master must die  | Jefferies H 35 If, when I die, that ‘*I*’ also dies, still even then I have had the exaltation of these ideas—where the substantival character is shown by the adjunct and by the use in the verb of the third-person form,—or in the accusative form, as in Carlyle S 35 Who am *I*; what is this *ME*?  | ib 37 our *ME* the only reality  | ib 92 a certain orthodox Anthropomorphism connects my *Me* with all *Thees* in bond of Love  | Ru Sel 1.503 But this poor miserable *Me*!  | Mered E 489 the miserable little *me* to be taken up and loved after tearing *myself* to pieces!

An English friend once told me about a clergyman who in one of his sermons spoke constantly of your immortal *I*, but was sadly misunderstood by the congregation, who did not see why the *eye* should be more immortal than any other part of the body. It is perhaps to avoid such misinterpretations that the Latin form is sometimes used, as in Thack P 3.363 every man here has his secret ego likely.

When the pronoun is preceded by an adjective, it is sometimes inflected in the usual way (poor *I* had sent a hundred thousand pounds to America; would you kill poor *me*? and similar examples are quoted by Storm EPh 208, note); but in other places we find it treated like a substantive: Sh Sonn 72 vpon deceased *I*  | Cor V. 3.103 to poore *we*, Thine enmities most capitall.

**8.431.** Another pronoun which in certain applications has become a substantive, is *self*. Here only a rapid sketch of some features of the development of *self*
can find its place. In OE the usual construction is that of an independent pronoun (as still in Danish): *Ic sylf hit eom, or ic . . . self; from an early period it became usual to attach it to a dative: Oros 200.33 Nero gestod him self on þæm hiehstan torre. This is still surviving in himself and herself; but from an early period the latter form might be taken by the linguistic instinct to contain the possessive her, and then self would be taken as a sb. As early as Ælfricd we find self with a possessive of the third person plural: Oros 186.7 þæt he heora self onseon nolde. These two circumstances, and perhaps others of a more intricate character, led to the formation of myself and thyself, which replaced me self, the(e) self. In the plural we find self (or selven), which was also a sg form, <selfum, selfa), whether preceded by a dative or a possessive, see for instance Ch E 108, where three MSS have "that we Ne coude nat vs self deuysen how", and three MSS have our self. In the third person them (hem) self (or selven) was used up to the end of the 15th c. In the 16th c. the forms with selves begin to appear (More U generally themselfes, but 227 themselfe; the 2d ed. sometimes has themselues). In the 17th and the beginning of the 18th c. (Shakespeare, Addison, Swift) self is printed as a separate word when preceded by a possessive (my selfe, your selfe, her selfe, our selues, your seluc, also it selfe), but the forms with a dative are printed as one word (himselfe, themselues). Though himself, themselves have always been the literary and standard forms, hisself and theirselfes have been, and are still, frequent in vulgar speech (see for instance Pegge, Anecd. 181; Shaw C 197 Billy dont look half pleased with hisself | id P 222 their­selves). By the side of the more natural oneself the form one's self is by no means rare in printed literature; Addison Spect. no. 163 corrects one self in the 2d ed. into ones self.

8.432. If we look at these forms from the etymological point of view, we must say that whenever self
Substantives.

is preceded by a possessive, and whenever the pl selves occurs, we have the sb. But grammatically we must say that each of the forms myself, (thysel), himself, herself, oneself, itself, ourself, ourselves, yourself, yourselves, themselves is now one indivisible pronoun; in particular the form themselves cannot be analyzed into them + a sb selves. But apart from these we have a real sb self, pl selves in the following cases.

8.433. First when there is an adjective between the possessive and self, as in Sh LL II. 151 your faire selfe | ib V. 1.120 your sweet self | ib V. 2.818 my wofull selfe | R3 I. 2.80 thy cursed selfe | ib III. 1.63, III. 7.195 | Tp I. 2.132 etc. | Sh Cy III. 4.160 woman it pretty selfe | AV 1 Pet 2.24 who his own selfe bare our sinnes.

Thus also in modern poets, though not in natural speech. In Alabama, however, people say his fool self (Payne 284).

A special case is with numerals: Franklin 202 between our two selves | Di Do 363 F. and D., representing, in their two selves, all the other mourners | Lowell 304 forgotten by all but their half-dozen selves.

8.434. In the second place, self is a sb when it is put in the genitive case, as already in OE: Ælfric (Cook’s First Book 197) [Sæian] wolde bǽon him self on his selfes anwealde | Sh R3 IV. 4.421 if your selfes remembrance wrong your selfe | Sh Err II. 2.125 thy deere selfes better part.—This now is completely obsolete.

8.435. Third, self is a sb when it is preceded by the genitive of a substantive; this is obsolete though still used now and then by poets: Greene F 8.140 unto Cyrus self | Sh Cor II. 2.98 Tarquins selfe | H8 I. 1.42 actions self (not very common in Sh) | Keats 2.131 Sorrow more beautiful than Beauty’s self | ib 1.72 dear as the temple’s self | Hewlett Q 47 Betis, whose ancestor was Brutus’ self.
In a slightly different way in Darwin L 1.374 a child, whose parents and self I well knew (not natural).

8.436. A fourth use of the sb self is the philosophical as in Spencer (NED) if it is the true self which thinks, what other self can it be that is thought of? | Conder (ib) Self does not come and go; it abides.

8.441. The pronouns ending in -body and -thing are sometimes turned into substantives. The compounds with body are often used with the signification 'a person of distinction or rank':

Beaconsf L 85 he seemed to know everybody who was anybody | Trollope D 2.15 everybody had been asked, —who was anybody | ib 2.60 Is he,—is he—just anybody? He is a very great deal | Jerrold C 37 I'm threatened to be made nobody of in my own house | ib 54 to think yourself nobody isn't the way to make the world think anything of you.

But it is only when in this signification an article is added in the singular or when a plural is formed that the word becomes a substantive (NED from 1601):

Jerrold C 78 you thought yourself a somebody || Mrs Browning A 162 some five hundred nobodies | Thack V 229 there was everybody that every one knew, and only very few nobodies in the whole room | Trollope D 2.61 they are nobodies | Galton H 46 many men who have succeeded as statesmen, would have been nobodies had they been born in a lower rank of life | Kipl J 1.33 as though ye were somebodies.

This is different from the substantival employment of somebody (as a quotation-word) in Mered H 210 Somebody drove me to Fallowfield . . . Who was the somebody?

8.442. Something and nothing become substantives when they take the indefinite article with or without an adjective or when they form a regular plural; the sense is comparable to that of a somebody, a nobody:

Goldsm 627 he wanted a something—a consequence of form—a kind of a—I believe the lady perceives my mean-
ing | Austen M 202 there would be a something to do | ib 378 at length a something like composure succeeded | Thack N 398 a something embittered her | Hope D 36 of course there was a something | Mered E 84 it informed him of a something in her character that might have suggested to Mrs. J. her phrase . . | Stevenson V 42 you have a something in you loveable and worth preserving.

The same with an adjective before it (NED from 1577):
Fielding T 1.274 if I have taken a little something now and then | Di Do 33 promise me to take a little something warm before you go to bed | ib 196 Mr Toots had a filmy something in his mind | Thack E 2.44 a prophecy that a wonderful something was about to take place . . . he owned that the great something he had been engaged upon had failed utterly | Carlyle R 1.77 he did not know very much, though still a good something.

Somethings (NED from 1642):
Pope 366 the Chaos dark and deep, Where nameless somethings in their causes sleep | Lowell 304 we're the American somethings or other.

S.443. Nothing as a subst.: 
Sh Mids V. 16 the poets pen . . . giues to airy nothing a locall habitation And a name | Sheridan 246 what he has done for me has been a mere nothing | Fielding T 4.50 such a woman as this, with her little, her nothing of a fortune | Austen M 131 it is a nothing of a part, a mere nothing | Tenn 725 What did you ask her? Some daily something-nothing.

In the plural:
Sh All II. 5.33 vses a known truth to passe a thousand nothings with | Austen P 91 pompous nothings | Carlyle G 6 what says the letter? Kind nothings | Benson D 34 a few polite nothings | Stevenson V 17 the thousand and one nothings of the day and hour.

S.444. Everything, too, may be used (half humorously) in the pl: Di F 29 to be sure there were rum every-
Adverbs

8.444. Similar, though not quite the same uses, are found with *anything*:

Di D 645 he had no mother—*no anything* in the way of a relative | Ru Sel 1.261 if he can do anything but put his hat off and on, and give words of command, *the anything* must, at all events, have something to do with the barracks. — Cf. additions vol. VII 17.53.

8.51. Adverbs are sometimes turned into substantives. As *once* = ‘one time’, it may take *this* or *that* examples in NED from the 14th c. on): Sh H6A V. 3.12. Helpe me this once | Stevenson M 46 . . . but once . . . That once he had passed dryshod | ib 168 bear with Felipe this once.

For then *once* (ME *for then ones*), in which *then* is OE dative *pæm*, has been metanalyzed into *for the nonce*, which is no longer felt to be connected with *once*.

*Once* may be the object of a preposition; cf. besides the familiar *at once* also *for once* (NED from 15th c. on) as in Gissing B 437 for once that I feel tenderly, I have a hundred fierce moods, and *in once* (rare, not in NED) as in Jerome T 38 Guessed it in once. But this does not necessarily make it a substantive (8.12).

8.52. A *down* is used in recent language (slang?): Shaw C 78 if she keeps a down on me for what I said to her.—What is a down? A grudge?—Yes. Something of that sort.—Colonial, it is not?—Yes, I believe I picked it up in the colonies | Kipl S 80 He has a down on King for something or other.

*Ups* and *downs* are usual in the signification ‘upward and downward movements’, as in Mrs Browning A 35 such ups and downs | Shaw D 11 by ups and downs | Doyle F 222 I’ve had ups in my life, and I have had downs.
8.53. Similarly the ins and outs = 'the inner and outer details', as in Conway C 132 he knew all the ins and outs of every plot or political event. In a different sense the ins = 'those in power' and the outs 'those out of power' as in Goldsmith 639 I have been dreaded both by ins and outs | Ward M 144 stiff with the angry virtue of the "ins", denouncing the faction of the "outs". Miss Austen uses the outs and not outs (P 42) of the girls who have, or have not, been introduced into society. — Cf. below, p. 500.

In still another sense we find in Amr NP '05 the Armenians are at outs with the Government.

8.54. Instead of the fors and againsts (NED from 19th c.) it is more usual to say the pros and cons.

8.55. An aside = a remark made 'aside', as in Caine C 153 mysterious asides about a friend . . .

8.56. In philosophical language adverbs of time, etc., are often made into substantives: Jefferies H 34 I dwell this moment in the eternal Now that has ever been and will be | Hawth S 174 throughout the long hereafter | Cf also Barrie T 106 in the long ago (ib 126, 369).

8.57. Thus also interrogatory adverbs: Scott A 2.15 "You must tell me the when— the where— the how." "The when was at midnight— the where, in the ruins— the how, was by a nocturnal experiment." | Swinb L 274 the how I was bent on making out | James S 8 having forgotten the connection, the whence, whither and why of his guest.

8.58. Though this very now (Hawthorne 1.420) is only a strengthened now (subjunct), now is here treated like a sb (cf. this very moment). Thus also now and then in every now and then (frequent, e.g. Hope Q 12); cf. also the rarer every here and there (Stevenson B 39).

8.59. Other unclassified substantives from adverbs are seen in: Sh WT IH. 3.61 in the between | Carlyle R 1.23 he handed it her by way of over and above | Hawth Sn 11 Again, however, and again, and yet other
against, she could not help turning her head to the window | (heard:) will by and by do? | the ayes have it.

**Type Pick-pocket**

8.61. A (formless) verb plus its object (without any article) may be made into a substantive. So far as I know, these formations are entirely unknown to Old English, whereas they abound in all the Romance languages: It. bacia-mano, passa-tempo, spazza-camino; Sp. basa-manos, corta-plumas, cumple-años; Fr. couvre-chef (whence kerchief), li-cou, fait-néant, crève-cœur, porte-plume, tire-bouchon, guerit-tout, etc. See on these formations Diez, Gramm. d. roman. spr. 4ed. II. 438; Darmesteter, Formation des mots composés, 1875, p. 146 ff., and Dictionnaire général § 204; Osthoff, Das verbum in der nominalcomposition, 1878, p. 236 ff. The form of the verb is generally the imperative (cf. Lat. fac-simile, etc.), though often perhaps it is merely the bare verbal stem. When such compounds begin to make their appearance in ME, they seem to be modelled on the French formations, but in English it is quite immaterial whether we take the verb to be in the imperative or in the crude-stem form. In Chaucer we find picke-purse, lette-game 'spoil-sport', in Langland cutte-pors, pike-porse, pike-herneis, and the number of these words rapidly increases so that in Shakespeare we find at least 25 of them.

8.62. We may divide these formations into two classes according as they denote persons or inanimate objects, though the distinction is not always sharp, some words being used in both classes.

To the first class, at any rate mainly, belong such words as:

- break-vow, Sh John II. 1.569 that dayly breake-vow
- carry-tale Sh
- cut-purse Sh
- cut-throat Sh
- do-nothing, Hawthorne Sn 68
- find-fault Sh
- kill-courtesy Sh 'a rude fellow'
- kill-devil Marl F 412 I should be cald kill diuell
- know-nothing
- lack-bread Sh
- lack-brain Sh
- lack-land, John
Lackland | lack-latin † | lack-linen Sh | lack-love Sh | make-peace Sh | pick-pocket | pick-purse Sh | pick-thanks Sh | run-the-hedge, Stevenson B 19 | sawbones, nickname for a surgeon, e.g. Stevenson JHF 7 | ‘scape-gallows Di N 544 | scatterbrain, Caine C426 What a scatterbrain I am! | Shakespeare | spendthrift Sh | spoil-sport, Shaw 2.313 Don’t let us be spoil-sports | tell-tale Sh Merch V. 1.123 we are no tell-tales | tell-truth Swift PC 179 | turn-coat Sh | turn-key | turn-spit | toss-pot Sh | want-wit Sh. — Cf. p. 500.

Cf. also Sh LL V. 2.463 Some carry-tale, some please man, some slight zanie, Some mumble-neuces.

These formations are generally more familiar than such formations as peace-maker, and they often seem to originate in an ironical imperative (see Bøgholm, ESt 44.94).

**S.63.** To the second class, or words denoting inanimate objects, we may reckon the following compounds:

be-all Sh Macb I. 7.5 this blow Might be the be all and the end all, cf. also Di Do 193 | breakfast, cf. for the pronunciation [brekfast] I. 4.36 and 9.212 | breakneck Sh | breakwater | catchfly, of plants, see NED, from 1597 | catchpenny | hold-all, e.g. Kipl J 2.108 | kill-time, Caine C 274 such holy kill-times as going to church | make-mirth Mrs Browning A 106 | make-rime Rossetti’s ed. of Adonais 101 one of the least tolerable instances of make-rhyme | makeshift, Thc S 79 foolish makeshifts | pastime | pick-lock Sh | save-all, Swift T’70 that useful instrument, a save-all | scare-crow Sh | stop-gap | sweep-stake(s) in Sh soopstake. — Cf. below, p. 500.

The term dreadnought was originally formed to denote a person, but now it is best known as the name of a type of battleship.

On the plural of these words see 2.45; on adjuncts formed on the same pattern 14.7.

**S.64.** In one case the original mode of composition has evidently been forgotten, namely in hangman. We had the old hangdog ‘a. man who hanged dogs’, as in
Swift J 155 I dined privately with a hang-dog in the City; and hangman was formed in the same manner, man being the object of hang; we should in vain search for parallels to the other possible explanation: 'a man who hangs', as if we had a word bake-man = baker. But the pronunciation [hæŋman] instead of [-mæn] seems to indicate that man ceased early to be felt as the object, and the recent formation hang-woman 'a woman who performs the function of a hangman' (NED, two newspaper quotations) points in the same direction.

8.65. We nowhere find a personal pronoun as the last element in such sbs, but in some cases we have a pronoun as the object, if it is followed by an adverb: forgetmenot (after the F ne m'oubliez mie) | pick-me-up 'refreshing drink' or 'refreshment': Ridge S 77 now it's time for your little pick-me-up | reach-me-down 'ready-made garment' | catch’em-all-alive ‘fly-paper’. Cf. 2.46.

8.66. In a few cases the object of the verb in such combinations is itself a verb (in the infinitive): hear-say, frequent from the 16th c.; More U 199 knowe by heare say | Hardy L 160 a piece of hearsay | make-believe, frequent in 19th c., Caine C 7 a child's genius for make-believe | Tennyson 144 make-believes (the same pl in Stockton R 210). Some write make-belief with the sb as object, thus Di D 605, Barrie T 78 (but ib 267 -ve); pl make-beliefs Street E 23.

8.67. We have also some colloquial substantives, made up of a verb in the crude form and a subjunct, and meaning 'one who —s'. Thus go-between 'one who goes between parties', Sh Wiv II. 2.273, Di Do 389 to be his go-between to you (frequent) | runagate Sh, obs. | runaway Sh, frequent; run might be ptc. | gadabout 19th c. | [start-up Sh Ado I. 3.68, may originally contain the sb start 'tail', rather than the vb; cf. the more usual upstart] | fly-by-night 18th and 19th c. | Bennett W 2.265 one of your stay-at-homes | Shaw 1.179 What an old stick-in-the-mud you are | the 'Die-Hards', an historic nickname

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
of the Middlesex Regiment, in 1911 applied to the 'No Surrender' party in the House of Lords | Bennett W 1.25 Mr. P., the unfailing comfort and stand-by of Mrs. Baines | Herrick M 228 the men . . . were the hold-ups.

The popularity of these formations is accounted for by the awkwardness of adding the ending -er to the whole phrase (though such a word as hold-upper is occasionally formed in US), and a certain disinclination to put -er in between the two parts of the phrase, as is done in the more regular words looker-on, etc. (2.51).

8.68. With these must be classed a lean-to = 'what leans to, a penthouse', NED from 1461 on, also e.g. Defoe R 2.123, Morris N 25, Gosse F 42, and a draw-back 'what draws back, disadvantage', from ab. 1700 (in Swift J 45 in the same sense a pull-back). The meaning of these formations is somewhat different from that of the more numerous class of similar formations (a set-to, a break-down, etc. = the action of setting to, of breaking down), which will be treated in Morphology together with the ordinary substantives derived from verbs (a drive, lift, etc.).

Type Afternoon

8.71. We have a few substantives consisting of a preposition with its object, such as afternoon, overall 'outer garment', out-of-work 'unemployed', undergraduate, counterclock, and with Greek and Latin prepositions Antichrist, pro-Boer. These are different from similar words, in which the first component is an adverb: an afternoon is not a kind of noon, as an aftertaste or an afterglow is a kind of taste or glow; over governs all in overall, but not coat in overcoat.—To the class here dealt with we must refer an at-home (e.g. Di Do 321), though this is really a kind of transferred quotation-word, taken from the words on the invitation-card: "Mrs. X at home . . ."; and further to-night, to-morrow, and to-day in such collocations as Galsworthy P 2.72 she's been looking forward to to-night ever
since you wrote | Dryden (NED) Unhappy he who . . . to to morrow wou’d the search delay; His lazy morrow will be like to day | Conway C 131 I looked forward with impatience to to-morrow | Galsworthy P 4.19 I’ll give him till to-morrow | Fox 1.46 they spent to-day with us [Mrs Browning A 183 all to-night I have strained at you | Wells T 20 and all to day the girl’s foot has been bleeding.]

The substantival character of these combinations is especially obvious from the possibility of a genitive as in Sh R3 V. 3.45 Let vs consult vpon to morrowes business | ib V. 3.206 every one did threat To morrowes vengeance on the head of Richard | Dryden 5.217 by to-morrow’s dawn | Spectator 5 in to-Morrow’s paper | Di Do 62 on to-morrow’s inquiries | to-day’s post | Smedley F 1.355 you call to-night’s an adventure. Note the parallelism in Ru Sel 1.456 part of to-morrow’s work . . . part of next month’s work. — Cf. p. 500 and on pl 2.49.

Some substantives of this class are abbreviations of adjunctal combinations (cf. 14.6), such as the Underground (in London) = ‘the under-ground railway’.

8.72. The preposition to + an infinitive is made into a sb in (a great) to-do from such a combination as Ch B 4441 I wol not han to do of swich matere; cf. F une affaire < à faire); cf. ado < at (Scand.) + do, and the rare substantive the to-be ‘the future’.

Phrases

8.8. Here may also be quoted some instances of phrases that have been turned into substantives, besides the plural ones given 2.46 ff. Kingsley H 232 to their long-lost might-have-been | Barrie T 292 he shuddered to think of the might have been, had a girl, who could love as Grizel did, loved such a man as her father | Page J 414 He’s a has-been | Bunyan G 32 how if all our faith, and Christ, and Scriptures should be but a think so too! Shaw D 179 the Church ’had to execute a complete right-
about-face | Archer A 158 the credit of having sent to the right-about the Invincible Armada (also Philips L 92 from the word of command: right about face!). Cf. p. 501

**Abbreviations**

8.91. Parts of words may also be turned into separate substantives. Just as first-words of compounds may become adjectives (13.6, 13.82), they may be detached as substantives with the same meaning as the whole compound, the second element being left out because the whole context or situation makes it clear what is meant. The psychological procedure is the same as in the numerous shortenings like photo for photograph, pub for public-house, etc., which will be dealt with in another place. Abbreviated expressions will always be especially frequent in the speech of sets of people who live habitually together and continually have to talk about the same things; they are not necessarily slang though of course particularly frequent in slang. When people living in the same village speak of "the Crown", they mean "the Crown Inn", other ellipses belong to the whole English-speaking world, as when the 11.45 train is spoken of as "the 11.45", etc. Some examples may follow (cf. p. 501):

- a copper = a copper coin (she threw a few coppers to the beggar), or = copper cauldron (Di N 87 it's washing-day to-morrow, and they want the coppers filled).
- a nickel = a nickel coin (in America = 5 cents).
- Trinity = Trinity College (Wordsworth P3.53 Trinity's loquacious clock), and similarly the other colleges, etc.
- the Foundling = the Foundling Hospital (Thackeray V 85).
- the Haymarket = the Haymarket Theatre (Wilde In 296).

- a four per cent = a four pct. security (Austen P 135 1000 pounds in the 4 per cents); still shorter four (NP '06 The Bourse was again weak on Wednesday. Fours fell to 79).
shorthorns = shorthorn cattle (Hope Ch 35).
chestnuts = chestnut horses (Doyle S 6.11).
tops = top boots (Di N 76, D 318; now obsolete).
patent leathers = patent leather shoes.
outsides = outside passengers (Di N 50, obsolete).
worsted = worsted stockings (Di N 510 displayed his grey worsteds to the fullest advantage).
clay = clay pipe (Jacobs L 109 he slowly filled a long clay).
straw = straw hat (Ridge L 176 it's my hat . . . it isn't new. I can't afford new things. It's an old straw I had dyed).
sailor = sailor hat (Norris O 580 She was dressed neatly . . . jacket and a straw sailor).
excursion = excursion train (Ridge N 13 they caught, the first excursion on the morning of the great day).
cottages = cottage pianos.
ash-leafs = ash leaf potatoes.
Cumberlandshire = Cumberland speech, generally called Cumbrian (Black Ph 21 Bell, whose broad Cumberlandshire vastly delighted the youngsters | ib 28 Bell was allowed to talk Cumberlandshire to the Doctor’s own face).
dip = dipcandle (GEliot A 198).
Gladstone = Gladstone bag (Jerome T 54 We got a big Gladstone for the clothes).
stage = stage coach (Ward El 480 that's the stage coming down hill)
return = return ticket (we'd better take returns).
dog-skin = dog-skin glove (Black P 207 a pair of old dog-skins).
bye = by-election (NP '05 the General Election may not go as the “byes” have gone); cf. also NED bye or by = by-road (by², bye).
Cf. Dickens D 154 the plate . . . six tea, two salt, and a pair of sugars, I have at different times borrowed money on (= tea spoons, salt spoons, sugar tongs) | id
N 216 Four-and-twenty silver tea spoons, two gravies, four salts.

There is also an obsolete word a common-place = a common-place book (Fielding T 2.48).

The Solomons (London A 17) = the Solomon Islands; the Admiralty's (ib 71) = the Admiralty Islands.

8.92. Sometimes the ellipsis becomes so common that it is scarcely thought of as such:

rifle = rifle gun (which is now never said).
hansom = hansom cab (Hansom cab).
beaver = beaver hats.
Newfoundland = Newfoundland dog.
buttonhole = button-hole bouquet.
cheviots = Cheviot sheep, or cloths.
landau = Landau carriages.
ulster = Ulster-coat.
rubbers = rubber overshoes.
water-colour = water-colour picture.
soda = soda water.
kid = kid glove.
bugle = bugle horn (bugle, obsolete = 'buffalo').
pike or turnpike (Amr.) = turnpike road (Herrick M 21 instead of taking the pike, which was shorter | Read Kentucky Col. 15 the turnpike, smooth and white, stretched out). Char = charwoman (NED Suppl.).

8.93. As the singular form is used in the first element of compounds (7.1), the absence of s often shows a word to be an isolated first-word. Boating men will speak of having a four-oar instead of a four-oar boat, and Chaucer scholars mention the six-text, meaning the six-text edition of the Canterbury Tales. The NED has a quotation "What if he should bring a ten-button instead of an eight!" (= glove). Thus also in GE M 1.71 a four-wheel (= a four-wheel carriage, generally called a four-wheeler) | Thack S 12 where the usage of the four-prong is general (= four prong fork, or four-pronged fork, as it is called on p. 10) | Doyle M 222 he's got a
touch of Martell’s three star (= brandy) | Bennett A 233 measured it [the room] with a two-foot [two-foot rule].

A sixpenny magazine will be spoken of by journalists and booksellers as a sixpenny (Rev. of Reviews 1890, 154 A new sixpenny, the Paternoster Review, will be published early in October); and this new noun forms a regular plural, the sixpennies. I know of no other language utilizing beautifully such simple methods of plural formation as we see in the English series: six pennies—sixpence—sixpences—a sixpenny—sixpennies.

Chapter IX
Substantivized Adjectives

9.1. There are a great many substantives which were originally adjectives (or participles), but which cannot be called substantivized adjectives from the point of view of actual speech-instinct. These include not only those which cannot any longer be used as adjectives, e.g. tithe (OE teogodo ‘tenth’), friend, fiend (old participles of verbs meaning “to love, to hate”), Orient, Occident, fact (from Latin participles), but also many which can still be used as adjectives, if the substantive is now felt to be the “original word”, from which the adjective is felt to be derived, or if the word has developed two more or less differentiated significations, according as it is used as sb or as adj. As examples may serve light, right, half, novel, subject, object, particular, infant, captive, secret, ideal, motive.

In this chapter we shall deal with those instances in which the adjectival origin is still generally felt more or less distinctly by ordinary speakers.

On substantivized other (others) see 17.7.

A. Denoting Persons

9.21. Adjectives cannot now as in former periods of the language be used freely in the sg without a sb or
one (ch. X): instead of a poor (ein armer) or the old (der alte) one has to say a poor man, the old man or a poor one, the old one. Matth 9.33 OE had se dumba spræc and the AV the dumb spake, but the RV of 1881 has the dumb man spake, and the 20th Century Bible the dumb man spoke, which was already found in Wycliffe: the doumb man spak. — Cf. below, p. 501.

In the common case singular we have no formal criterion to decide whether a word is still an adjective or has become a substantive (thus in all the cases enumerated 9.22 ff.). But when the genitive in 's (9.5) or the plural in s (9.3) is formed, we have undoubtedly a substantive.

9.22. Among those cases in which it is still possible to use a sg adjective alone in speaking of a person, I shall first mention the religious expressions the Almighty | the Crucified (Ward E 388).

9.23. One of the adjectives found most frequently substantivized in the sg is the dead with its synonyms, though colloquially the dead man is preferred. It seems impossible to say a dead for a dead man. In all the following quotations the word is in the sg, though this can often be seen only from the whole of the context; all the examples of dead are from very modern writers, who are affecting Biblical English:

Zangwill G 180 the dead stood revealed as he had been in life . . . Every eye was fixed upon the dead man in the picture | Kipl J 2.120 toward the dead man . . . then say the friends of the dead, “Let him hang” . . . For the dead was a strong man . . . and the dead man comes to me | Caine P 215 as if the dead were asleep [there is only one] | ib 218, 219 | Jacobs L 47 the old people buried their dead [== their son] | Hope R 263 he would not look at the dead || Austen M 25 the memory of the dear departed | Di N 25 the dear departed | Di D 47 the departed | Barrie T 271 || Di N 2 the deceased had taken no further notice of his nephew | Di D 521 paying all
the just debts of the deceased | Caine E 362 the deceased has settled her temporal affairs || Zangwill G 78 in the lifetime of the so lamented.

9.24. Other participles in the sg: Kingsley H 259 you alone have come to visit the bereaved and the deserted in his misery || Zangwill G 126 Lucy, the betrothed of the deceased | James S 127 the footfall of Mrs. Damerel's intended was loud on the staircase | Hardy L 184 another woman whom he spoke of as his Intended || Di N 443 appointments . . . up and down its every side the Appointed saunters idly || Gissing B 416 suspend judgment until the accused had offered his defence | Zangwill G 209 he had obtained an interview with the condemned || Kingsley H 209 my firstborn (biblical) | Di Do 193 || Di N 491 information respecting the fair unknown (from the French, la belle inconnue).

9.25. Examples of other adjectives in the sg: Wordsworth 204 When the fatherless was born | Zangwill G 39 In the realm of the blind [pl] the one-eyed is a king (French) | Thack S 129 It shall be a sin for the poorest not to have a pretty girl to love him | Shelley 651 When a lover clasps his fairest (poet.).

9.26. In the following cases there can be no doubt that the words have become real substantives, because it is possible to form a pl in -s; besides they admit of being used with the indefinite article: Austen M 14 to make a third very useful, especially when that third was of an obliging temper | GE A 82 a soft [= ‘idiot’] | Doyle S 5.149 The child was a dear | Caine C 83 I was not such a silly as to let wit about that | Wilde In 172 we are dominated by the fanatic, whose worst vice is his sincerity.

9.31. The OE adjective never had an s in the plural (the pl forms in the nominative were gode, goda, god, gladu and in the weak declension godan, all of which forms have become the modern endingless good). But in the ME period the s-plural spread not only to a great
many original substantives which in OE had other endings, but also to some original adjectives, cf. Gerber, Substantivierung des adj., 1895, p. 14; and in the ModE period this tendency is constantly increasing.

The difference between adjectives that have become substantives (plural in -s) and adjectives merely used as principals (plural unchanged ch. XI), is well brought out in Fielding T 3.133 we moderns are to the ancients what the poor are to the rich. It is not always easy to see why words are treated in one way rather than in the other. Substantivization in general is the sign of a more specific classification, as seen in the difference between the innocents and the innocent 9.35. There is also a greater tendency to use the s-plural of learned words, and the unchanged plural of familiar words, thus mutes and deaf-mutes in contrast to the deaf and dumb, the blind. In the following paragraphs the chief instances of plurals in -s are roughly classified. — Cf. below, p. 501.

9.32. Human beings in general: We mortals (Mered H 159) | humans “formerly much used; now chiefly humorous or affected” (NED); it is frequent in US and begins to be commonly used in England as well, especially because men is ambiguous (= ‘humans’, or ‘male humans’), thus Doyle S 5.44 | Wells U 237 we poor humans | id V 43 among humans (a ‘suffragette’ speaking).

Races etc.: the whites | the blacks | the reds. But not in ordinary language the yellows.

Europeans | Asiatics | Eurasians | Indians, etc.

Chineses (Mi PL 3.438, Defoe R 2.323) and Japanesees (Defoe R 2.292) obsolete, see 11.57.

Savages, natives (Smedley F 1.192 and often: astonish the natives) | Kingsley H 101 We Easterns | Mered H 356 we continentals | aliens.

9.33. Social position, etc.: nobles (Ru Sel 1.398 a distinction ... between nobles and commoners) (p. 501) | the Honorables (Thack V 346) | notables (Beaconsf L 43) | equals | superiors | inferiors | fashionables (Ward M 150,
Thack P 2.72) | commercials (= 'c. travellers', Ridge G 72) |
domestics (Spect 163 -icks = 'servants').

NP '12 where he would get so much money. He answered: "From the higher-ups" [Cf. grown-ups 2.44].

privates (= private soldiers) | regulars | irregulars | heavies (Mered R 13) | ordinaries and specials (i.e. policemen) | orderlies | marines (go and tell it to the marines!).

9.34. Gender: males and females. The substanti-vized female has very often been strongly objected to by purists (see p. 501); it is found in a great many of the best authors (see Lounsbury SU p. 212 ff.). From my own collections: Bacon A 27.32 the males of the family... the females | Sh never as a sb | Mi only once in the sg, SA 1055 | By DJ 15.82 deference to what females say | Lamb E 1.142 respect, which we are supposed to pay to females, as females | Quincey 266 the most magnificent young female | Scott Iv 205 pl | Brontë P 99 these ladies sat side by side with young females destined to be demoiselles de magasin | Di N 176 sg.

9.35. Age: three-year-olds (Kipl J 1.11, cf. ib 2.212) | grown-ups (now very frequent colloquially; found e.g. Shaw Man 33; Quiller Couch M 269). Here may also be mentioned innocents (murder of the innocents = little children; cf., on the other hand, Pope Rape 1.40 the fair and innocent shall still believe).

The moderns as opposed to the ancients, very frequent, Swift T 15, Goldsmith 620 | Tylor A 373 we moderns | Ward F 151 Rubens and Velasquez are moderns | Gissing B 373 he was a modern of the moderns | the mediaevals (Ru Sel 1.143) | the contemporaries (Carlyle H 23, etc.) | temporaries (= t. servants, Di Do 33).


With regard to heathen a distinction is made: the plural without s is used with the definite article in the Bible and elsewhere to designate them as a class:
Kingsley H 332 she knows more than the heathen | Fox 1. 150 the state of the heathen and their hope of salvation | Stevenson JHF 177 do not envy the heathen | Ru C 22 the heathen, in their saddest hour, thought not so | Hope Ch 1. But otherwise heathens is used: they are regular heathens | Kingsley H 227 with thy foot on the necks of heathens | ib 319 (and 376) Down with all heathens! | ib 396 either heretics or heathens. In the same book, p. 233 the heathens were moved with wonder, the plural in s denotes not all pagans, but those present on that particular occasion.

Liberals and Conservatives | Radicals | the Blues (= Conservatives: Thack P 1.38 those zealous Blues). Reds (= Communists, etc.: Ru F 88 we old Reds).—Contents and non-contents (those who vote for and against, in the House of Lords). — Cf. below, p. 501.

9.37. Physical and psychical characteristics: worthies (frequent, the Nine Worthies, 16thc.) | prodigals (Thack V336, N300) | degenerates (Shaw M195) | criminals | rouges | undesirables (Wells F 143) | drunks and disorderlies (frequent in police reports, Review of R. Sept. 1901. 250, Herrick M 13, 44, Carpenter P 72) | unfortunates (Stevenson D 140, Conway C 195, James S 11, Macdonald Fk 305) | respectable (Carpenter C 102 the criminals have become the respectable of modern Society) | efficient and inefficient (Wells A 184, 205) | unsuccessfull (Kidd S 62) | stupids (Hardy F 245) | mutes, deaf-mutes | (general) paralytics (Ellis M 400) | “The Born-Tireds” (Ridge S 98) nonce-word | goodies (frequent; e.g. Caine C 63, 272) | silly-softs (Mered R 265) | my pretties (Goldsmith 657) obsolete.

An obsolete instance is gentles, formerly frequent, especially in addressing women: Sh Shr III. 2.85, H5 Prol 8, Greene F 10.16, 54, Scott A 2.186, cf. ib 188 to raise up the puir folk against the gentles (= gentry).

9.38. Personal relations: familiars (Di Do 66, Stevenson JHF 46) | dears (Thack V 83 the children, little dears); thus very often; very frequent also as a
manner of addressing: my dears (Austen M 15, GE M 1.79, 80, Ward R 1.17, etc.) | beloveds (Mrs Browning 417) | inseparables (Di Sk 340) | intendeds (Di N 129 men fall in love and desert their chosen intendeds) | greats (rare, Quiller Couch M 244 your father and mother and your grandfathers and grandmothers, and right back into the greats and great-greats) | likes: the likes of you, frequent (Tennys For 51, 70, Caine M 349, Bridges E 11 all her likes) | unlikes (Tennys ib 70 their unlikes); cf. 11.34.

9.41. Comparatives are naturally felt as more distinctly adjectival than positives; therefore there are only few of them that can take the s-plural. Elders is at least as old as Ch in the sense ‘parents’ or ‘ancestors’ (cf. G eltern), see Ch B 3387, cf. E 65, 156; Caxton R 96. More U 156 has the contrast: the yonger to their elders, and 165 the yonger . . . the elders, but 164 the elders induces the form the yongers. In Sh Cor elders stands for ‘senators’, I. 1.230, II. 2.46, but in other places Sh has it in the now current sense “those that are older”, generally with a possessive: Shr II. 1.7 my duty to my elders. Trollope D 2.19 among the elders. Without a defining word it is rare: Peele D 455 honoured Of tribes and elders.

Shakespeare has better as a pl in a few places: All III. 1.22 when better fall | H4A IV. 2.73 they’le fill a pit, as well as better. But he also, and more frequently, has the present form betters (with a possessive): Lr I. 4.277 make servants of their betters | Shr IV. 3.74 your betters.

9.42. Superlatives are often used alone in the singular before a partitive of: Sterne 37 the best of brothers | Johnson R 55 if I were Emperor, not the meanest of my subjects should be oppressed | Austen P 37 to the youngest of the family.

In the common phrase “the Devil take the hindmost” the last word is properly in the sg, but it is used as a pl in Garnett T 113 In this age the devil is taking the hindmost, and we are the hindmost.
Superlatives do not occur in the pl with -s to denote persons.

**Genitive**

9.51. The OE adjective had the genitive ending -es only when it was not preceded by a defining word. In most cases when the adjective was a principal, it had the weak inflexion and thus ended in the genitive case in -an (àn godan). In ME the genitive ending -es was, however, gradually extended to adjective principals, which thus became virtually substantives. In AR we have only a few isolated instances like 334 pes unselies sawe (that unhappy person's saying) | 220 of-punchunge of oðres god (of the good of another). In ModE the instances have become somewhat more numerous.

9.52. In juridical language the genitive of such words as accused, deceased is common: a doubt as to the accused's identity | Gretton H 1.431 those who believed in the accused's innocence | Scott IV 466 no emblem of the deceased's birth | NP '94 the deceased's landlord. NED has examples of the dead's from 1465 and 1529; I have found a 19th c. one in Whittier 53 With the dead's unconscious power [= the dead woman's]. Thus also in Scots law dead's part (= the part of one's property that one is free to dispose of by testament).

9.53. Other examples of the genitive of substantivized adjectives. I have marked with stars those cases in which it is also possible to form a plural in s, and in which there is, therefore, every reason to call the word a real substantive. With the exception of the Almighty's these are the only instances in which the gen sg seems perfectly natural.

Fielding 3.495 to beseech the Almighty's favour | GE Mm 98 the Almighty's intentions | Sh Sonn 78.7 Thine eyes ... Have added fethers to the learned's wing [might be gen pl; not possible 'now'] | Peele D 442 To see the guiltlesse bear the guiltles (sg) paine | Sterne 23 to have
no mortal's* help but the old woman's | Thack N 801 Had he not done everything in mortal's power? | Ru T 125 a black's* skull will hold as much as a white's* | London A 10 on the black's mouth | Ru S 168 are his words more cheerful than the Heathen's* | Di D 130 I shall be always near my pretty's resting-place | ib 645 this unfortunate's* manner | Stevenson MB 189 His death was like an antique worthy's* | Kingsley H 316 he felt his old blood as hot as a four-year-old's* | Philips L 253 on my second's yacht [= my second husband's] | Sharp Browning 116 that noble's* [= nobleman's] trial | Holmes A 270 a paralytic's* senseless arm | Ellis M 401 the general paralytic's wife | Bennett W 1.194 a lunatic's* luck | Gissing R 174 the Stoic's* sense | Barrie T 413 his beloved's arm | Yeats 147 Your well-beloved's hair | Phillpotts K 95 the mystery of her belrothed's sudden death.

Thack P 2.145 our contemporary's* establishment [thus frequent in one newspaper's mention of another].

9.541. The genitive of the elder and the younger is not unfrequent:

Thack N 641 How was Barnes to know the reason of the elder's refusal? | ib 764 the old man was pleased with the younger's spirit | Phillpotts M 11 By their mouths these women might have been judged. The younger's was firm to hardness.

9.542. The genitive of the former and the latter is frequent in literature, though not colloquially:

Fielding 3.467 such was the latter's confidence | Thack N 344 Clive and Belsize had returned to the former's quarters | ib 624 such was the latter's general habit of submission.

9.55. The genitive plural is practically never found in those cases in which adjectives and adjectival pronouns can stand alone as principals, though Shakespeare has in manies eyes (Ro I. 3.91) and in manies lookes (Sonn 93.7), and the NED quotes from a letter (1715) to counterquestion both's witnesses. AV Gen 18.29 I will not doe it for four-
ties sake, 31 for twenties sake, 32 for tennes sake. Pinero M 114 has the poor’s box instead of the usual the poor-box. Instead of both’s the usual expression is both their, though both they is not now used: Wilde S 188 It is greatly to be regretted for both their sakes. Instead of all’s one says everybody’s. Genitives like those present’s opinions or some’s opinions or the French’s rights are universally avoided in favour of constructions with of, or else some people’s opinions, etc., will be said.

9.56. But where adjectives can be substantivized in the pl by means of the ending s, a genitive plural may be formed, though it is not very frequent: Sh R3 IV. 4.30 innocents blood (the folio reads innocent) | Thack Sk 31 Windsor Heavies...go to the Heavies’ mess. The only gen pl of this kind that is at all frequent, is others’: Sh Oth III. 3.272 for others vse | Sh Sonn 78.11 In others workes thou doost but mend the stile | By 381 with tears for nought but others’ ills | Ru Sel 1.497 instruments of others’ ills.

B. Neuters

9.6. It is not every adjective that can be substantivized, and sometimes considerable capriciousness prevails, even with regard to the signification in which an adjective can be thus employed. This may be exemplified by some synonyms and antonyms. Evil can be freely substantivized: an evil, this evil, many evils (evils already Ch); but ill is becoming obsolete in the same general sense and is now chiefly used (also in the pl) = ‘calamity’ or (chiefly Sc) ‘bodily disease’; bad is never used in any of these senses, and never in the pl, though it may be called a sb in the phrase go to the bad (Carlyle R 1.225, Caine C 285, Benson D 43) also: Grant Allen, First 46 a deficit of some forty pounds to the bad against me. Good is used as a sb, especially in the signification ‘use’: what is the good of lying? | It is no good trying to conceal it (different from not good) | Stevenson JHF 137
my resolve was fruitful of some good (different from something good) | take that; it will do you good. In the moral sense good is chiefly, but not exclusively, used in contrast to evil: Di Do 400 all distinction between good and evil | Hope D 91 there must be some good in her; even with the numeral one: Meredith E 332 sorrows have done me one good. A third signification is seen in for good 'definitely, finally': Di D 45 she had come for good | Di X 25 Home, for good and all. But this good is not indubitably a substantive. The substantive goods has come to be a word by itself, 'merchandize' (5.782); note the retention of s in the compound goods-train (7.22). We realize the isolation of this word when we read in Thackeray N 329 “The law professes to exclude some goods (or goods, shall we call them?)—well, some articles of baggage, which are yet smuggled openly.” Lowes Dickinson, who wants to use the pl of good in the moral sense, is obliged to write it with a capital G: S 133 virtue that is mean ... art that is base, love that is sensual are not Goods at all; cf. ib 69 if it did not endanger other Goods.

That good is felt to be a sb, is shown by the adjective in Gissing G 420 in that case you would be doing good. Distinct good [= what is distinctly good]. — Cf. below, p. 501.

While the unchanged adjective principal in the plural (the poor) is used only in speaking of persons, there is a stronger tendency to use the s-plural of things than of persons, cf. Sh Hml V. 1.266 Sweets to the sweet.—Many words are used in this way only, or chiefly, in the plural; in the following lists they are naturally given in the pl form.

9.71. Abstracts. The philosophical use of the unknown, etc., will be mentioned in ch. XI, as such adjectives have not become indubitable substantives. As such we must recognize the following on account of the pl ending:

Spencer First Pr 81 an Absolute which existed not alone, but along with other Absolutes, would no longer be an absolute but a relative | Ru U 2 constant elements ...
Let us eliminate the inconstants . . . the accidentals | Dickinson R 16 what may be called fundamentals | Wells F 101 these things are universals | Hope Q 132 the superficients | Henley Burns 333 those unknowns | Archer A 14 he compares incommensurables | Doyle S 6.218 How do all these unusuals strike you?

9.72. Languages. Adjectives like English, French, etc., are used to denote languages either without or with the definite article according to the ordinary rules for substantives: he speaks Spanish well enough | the Spanish he speaks is good enough. [From the Spanish—in speaking of translations]. That these words, though of course not occurring in the pl, have become substantives in this sense, appears from the fact that they can have possessives and adjectives before them: my Spanish is not very good | colloquial French | Philips L 210 he speaks excellent English (more frequent than: speaks English excellently, in which case excellently is a subjunct to the verb).

9.73. Studies, examinations, etc.: mathematics etc. (5.775) | classics || greats and smalls (at Oxford) | intermedials and finals (at American colleges, Page J 36) || unseen (unseen translations, Stedman O 215).

9.74. Substances, materials in general: chemicals (Stevenson JHF 88) | vegetables | greens | eatables frequent, e.g. Defoe R 2.50, rare in sg: no eatable (Landor in NED) | drinkables | sweets, Sh Lucr 867 The sweets we wish for, turne to loathed sours; also figuratively: Sh Shr I, 1.28 to sucke the sweets of sweete Philosophie | Fielding T 1.135 the sweets of marriage . . . its bitters | Austen M 189 the sweets of housekeeping | Marlowe F 112 prince-ly delicates (†, = delicacies) | cordials (Fielding T 2.46) | home-brewed (GE A 82 a chat over his own home-brewed; not pl) || Thack P 3.72 called for “four stouts” (= glasses of stout; thus also two bitters, etc.).

Di N 256 all her movables and valuables (movables also Sh, both frequent in 19th ′c.) | necessaries (Johnson R 38 the necessaries of life; common) | my dues; customs dues.
Colours: Ruskin Sel 1.187 all the greys, and reds, and purples in a peach | ib 180 sober browns and dull greys | Stevenson M 251 the quiet pattern of greens and greys.

9.75. Animals and plants are occasionally denoted by substantivized adjectives: natives = native oysters | greys (Thack VF 305, Hog 84, Di M 349, 350, etc.) = grey horses | thoroughbreds = th. horses.

Evergreens (Carlyle S 56, etc.) | everlastings (Brontë P 174) | quicks (= hawthorns, Tennyson 271 through the budded quicks).

9.76. Parts of the body: Di N 41 [noses]. Snubs and romans are plentiful enough, and there are flats of all sorts and sizes, but perfect aquilines are scarce | Fielding 3.602 a gentle kick on his posteriors | vitals (= vital organs) | genitals | Haggard S 63 he turned up the whites of his eyes.

9.77. Articles of dress (some of these expressions are now obsolete, because the articles themselves have gone out of fashion): academicals (Stedman O 112) | canonicals (GE A 376 the chaplain in his canonicals) | regimentals (Fielding T 2.44, Austen P 37) | woolens (Franklin 8 a dyer of woolens) | ready-mades (Ridge L 70) | blacks (Chesterton F 136 to wear “blacks” for an official enquiry) | unmentionables, unwhisperables and other euphemisms for trousers | tights (= tight trousers, Thack P 1.48, Di X 13, Di D 145, etc.) | smalls (kind of trousers, Di Do 367, Di D 211 knee-smalls) | Hessians (Hessian boots, Thack P 1.48) | the uppers (of shoes) | Ellis M 425 men’s shoes were made rights and lefts.

9.78. Various technical uses. Letters or types: capitals | Italics | initials. — Sounds (in Sweet’s phonetic works): vowellikes | affricates or “stop-opens”. — In metre: longs and shorts. — In music: f sharps and b flats. — In journalism: dailies (= daily papers), weeklies (Doyle M 244), the illustrateds, the comics (= comic papers), cf. penny dreadfuls (= novels). Note in advertisements the contrast
in inflexion in "Nine years' experience on first-class Evening and Dailies".—Shipbuilding: ironclads (Wells A 195).—Mathematics: Spencer A 1.109 in any proportion the product of the extremes is equal to the product of the means.

9.79. Unclassifiable: alls p. 501 | constitutionals (Ridge L 40) | toilet tidies (Wells L 175 two toilet tidies used as ornaments) | anniversary, -ies | a village green | the Rockies (= the Rocky Mountains) | calms | contraries (Congreve 287 dreams are to be understood by contraries) | Wordsw P 11.180 change of them into their contraries) | deeps, often figuratively, as Kipling L 108 his experience of the sordid misery of want had entered into the deeps of him, also Mered E 104 | Page J 34 Germans and other social functions (U.S.: kind of dance or ball) | deads = earth or rock containing no ore | disagreeables (Mered H 99 they had disagreeables) | full: the next full of the moon [Bennett A 51 Here's two fives = 'five pound notes', cf. 5.131].

The Holy of Holies (in this form due to Milton; Wyclif has holi of halowes, AV the most holy place) | Mered E 227 the inner holies of a man | Carlyle S. 201 how many Unholies has your covering art made holy?

9.81. Superlatives are not often used in the pl with s: RJ o 3.268 this is the worst of all worst worsts that Hell could have devised | Mrs Browning A 47 God, that unity of Bests | NP '88 (NED) Fruit should be sorted into bests and seconds and in some cases into thirds. A comparative in the pl is found in Kingsley H 124 all greaters containing the less.

A neuter superlative is found with no: Di D 406 Think of me at my best, if circumstances should ever part us!—You have no best to me, and no worst. (This is nearly a quotation-word.)

9.82. Ordinals are substantivized in fractions: two-thirds (cf. also tenths = tithes, AV Tobit 1.6, 5.13), in musical names for the intervals: fourths, fifths, and in a few special combinations: a first (in a University examin-
ation: Collingwood R 55 he seemed to hope he would get a First | Wells N 102 most of us took Firsts), third = third class carriage, on railway (Hope Q 28 he’s always ridden first-class and he won’t believe there’s anybody worth knowing in the thirds), on the second [day of a month], pl in Macaulay: on two successive thirds of September. Cf. also above 9.81 (seconds, thirds).

9.88. A past participle used substantively: bygone, rare in the sg (Di D 123 it was all a bygone then), but frequent in the pl: let bygones be bygones (similarly Di M 478 | Anstey V 319 why do you bring up bygones like this?). — Cf. above, 2.44.

Genitive

9.9. The genitive is not frequent with substantivized neuter adjectives, because it is on the whole rare with all words that do not denote human (or at any rate living) beings:

Vachell H 281 loving evil for evil’s sake | Henley P 108 the past’s enormous disarray.

Chapter X

The Prop-Word One

The Beginnings

10.11. The origin of the ModE construction a (the) good one has been variously explained, see Gerber, Substantivierung des adjectives (Göttingen 1895); Einenkel in Grundriss and in Anglia 26 (1903) 469 ff = Das englische indefinitum 25 ff.; Luick, Anglia 29 (1906). 339; Einenkel, ib 36 (1912). 539. According to Gerber, the good one is a blending of ME. the best oon = ‘der beste’ and he was a maister oon = ‘er war meister’. But the real ME form of the former construction is oon the best, in which oon strengthens or emphasizes the superlative;
the latter does not really occur in the form given, as it is abstracted from *A wonder maister was he on* (Rob. Gl.). In all the instances given by Gerber p. 10—11 *on* stands by itself after the verb, except only in Oerm 2333 “*ʒho wass ædiz wimmann an All wimmannkinn bitwenenn***”, where we should probably place a dash between *wimmann* and *an*. Besides, it is not easy to see how the two constructions should have been blended (‘contaminated’) and how the result should have been the ModE construction. Luick is on safer ground when he refers to OE (Riddles 50) “*Ic wāt eardfæstne ōne standan, dēafne dumban***”, where *an* is the numeral placed after the adjective in a similar way as elsewhere *sum, tu, twegen* (unhydıg sum | dēore tū | mōdige twegen). About 1000 we find *an* + substantivized adj as *ēne scylدية*, etc. But though we have ME examples of postpositive *oon* when the adj is preceded by *so* (RobBr 3271 *so grete one | Ch T 1.373 so goodely oon | Rose 563 so semly oon*), we do not seem to have any contemporaneous examples of *greter one*. Luick thinks that this is accidental, but I think there is the same psychological reason for this word-order as for *so great a man*: the speaker thinks first of the emphatic comparison; therefore *so* precedes, with which the adj is so intimately connected that it is placed immediately after *so*; then, and not till then, the indefiniteness calls for expression (*ōne, an*). Einenkel, in his latest treatment of the subject, rightly lays stress on such combinations as *swich an, many an, ech an*, while still ascribing to the construction with the superlative OE *ān se betsta* more influence on the development of our idiom than I should accord it. — Cf. below, p. 501.

**10.12.** The decisive innovation was the rise of combinations like *a good one*. This, I think, is to some extent like the use of *it in it rains* or in *I think it necessary to wait*, and like the use of *there in there was peace* or *let there be peace*: in all these cases a word becomes necessary because speakers are accustomed to have some
word in that particular place: *it* and *there* take the place of a subject or of an object, and similarly *one* takes the place usually occupied by a substantive. People were so accustomed to say a *good man*, a *great house*, etc., that they felt a *good* and a *great* as rather bald expressions: the ordinary balance was restored by saying a *good one*, a *great one*. Or, we might perhaps rather say: the balance that was felt wanting in both ME constructions *an* (*one, an, a*) great and *great an* (*one*), was restored by a blending of both. Corresponding developments are found in Danish (*en god een*, *et godt et*; *sadan een*; *hvilken*, originally *hvilk + een* ‘which one’; now also *hvilken een*; even *sikken en een* < *se hvilk en en een*, literally ‘see which an a one’) and in Cape-Dutch (*das ’n mooie ene* ‘that’s a nice one’, *di ander een* ‘the other one’, H. Meyer, Die Sprache der Buren 1901, p. 40). But when once the use of *one* as a prop-word (to use Sweet’s term) had been established, English went further than Danish at any rate, though some dialects (in Jutland) go further than standard Danish and admit, for instance, *den ækle en* ‘that abominable one’ and *din grimme en* ‘you (literally your) hideous one’ (both found in Bregendahl, Dødsnat 95). The chief difference between English and Danish in this respect is the use of the pl *ones*, which to some extent resembles Spanish *unos*, colloquial Danish has a repetition of *nogle* or *nogen*: *nogen gode nogen* ‘some good some’, and correspondingly in the neuter sg *nogel godt noget* ‘something good’.

**10.13.** When Gerber says (p. 55) that “Das XV. und XVI. jahrhundert ist die werdezeit, in welcher sich die neuen verhältnisse schon im ganzen so herausbilden, wie sie noch heute vorherrschen”, he has overlooked some of the most interesting recent developments.

**10.14.** It will be necessary to have terms for a distinction that is important in this as well as in some of the following chapters. I propose to apply the word *anaphoric* to *one* (or any other word) if it refers to some
word already mentioned, while I say independent if there is no such contextual reference. The little one is used anaphorically if it means ‘the little flower’ or whatever it is that has just been mentioned, but independently if it means ‘the child’ without some such substantive being already named. The independent one always denotes a person, while the anaphoric one may refer to a thing.

There is a play on the anaphoric and independent employments in the wish addressed to newly married people: May all your future troubles be little ones.

10.21. The reason why the word one has been chosen to fulfil the rôle of a prop-word is chiefly to be sought in the frequent and quite natural use of one (by itself) to take the place of a substantive just mentioned. This may be called a simple application of the numeral one, and no plural is possible. Examples:

Ch A 3152 he is no cokewold. But I sey not therefore that thou art oon | ib 3161 | Sh Tp V. 191 I chose her when I could not aske my father For his advise: nor thought I had one [= a father] | Sh Hml II. 2.250 Denmark’s a prison. Then is the world one | Goldsmith 619 while he is giving places to all the world, he cannot get one for himself | Di Do 402 the change, if it may be called one, had stolen on her | Di D 310 I haven’t seen a pretty woman since I’ve been here, not the ghost of one.—We could show her the substance of one, I think | Phillpotts K 138 she was now a free agent—if she had not formerly been one | Bennett W 2.184 Matthew stopped, looking a fool and feeling one.

10.22. In the combination of a pronominal adjunct with one (971 in NED: æghwylcum anum | AR 46 of euerich one | Bale T 159, 595 everychone, etc.) the numeral value of one was originally strong, ME euerich one being the equivalent of modern ‘every single one’. This is still seen more or less clearly in the following examples:

Every one:

More U 121 every one of thies famelies (cf. ib 139,
10.22, 10.23.] The Beginnings. 249

159) ib 257 the wyues doo stande everye one by here owne husbandes syde | Defoe R 2.136 he made them every one a shirt | Swift 3.326 every one of which terms Di X 43 God bless us every one! Cf. also 7.812 f. and 16.6.

Each one ("in modern use generally superseded by every one, or by each absol." NED): Sh Tp IV. 46 Each one tripping on his toe, Will be here | Mcb V. 8.74 thankes to all at once, and to each one | Galsworthy C 149 they who chance in the Park . . . and each one, if he has a Love, thinks of her | Bennett W 2.324 the scribes of each one of the Five Towns. — See a genitive 10.83.

Either one is rare: Lowell 331b He would help either one of you out of a slough | Williamson L 174 Nimes or Arles, either one of which would repay weeks of lingering | Mered E 339 he could marry either one of two women . . . whichever one he selected would cast a lustre on his reputation | NP '05 Either one of two causes may produce this | Quiller Couch M 206 I offer him the choice of two farms—either one of them worth twice the rental of Saaron.

Any one: Worth S 59 I could get meals at any one of a dozen boarding-houses in the village.

But in most cases in which anyone, someone, no one are now used the numeral signification is obliterated, and one only serves to make the pronoun into a primary, see ch. XVII.

10.23. When one comes before an adjunct, it may also in some cases retain its numeral force more or less unimpaired, as in:

Ch A 3155 wyves . . a thousand gode ayeyns oon badde | Sh H4B II. 2.20 shirts, one for superfluity, and one other, for vse [now rather: another one, or one more] | Gissing G 448 he emptied the contents of sundry little bottles into one larger [= one larger one].

But in most cases one has a weakened signification in this position, and fulfils only the grammatical function of serving as a primary on which to hang an adjunct.
The construction is found in all those instances in which an adjunct is placed after a substantive.

10.241. Examples of anaphorical one + adjective:
Sh Tp V. 1.269 His mother was a witch, and *one so strong* That could controle the moone | Goldsm 612 a connexion with *one so unworthy her merits* as I am | Scott A 2.361 Oldbuck gave a conscious look to Sir Arthur, who returned it with *one equally sheepish* | Brontë P 78 I could not take my garden with me, and I should scarcely find *one so large and pleasant* anywhere else in town.

More often *one* is not anaphoric, but independent = 'a person'.

Sh H6A I. 2.26 He fighteth as *one weary* of his life | Di Do 78 too serious to be trifled with by *one so much younger* than himself | Morris E 48 the hopeful dream of *one too young* to think death near | Haggard S 107 through fear of offending *one so powerful* | Meredith H 481 how could she take anything from *one so noble and so poor*! | Bennett W 2.151 He looked like *one dead*.

The same *one* before a participle:
Sh John III. 1.278 as fire cooles fire within the scorched veins of *one new burn'd* | Ml H 1.181 she blusht as *one asham'd* | Bunyan G 44 Now was I as *one bound* | Defoe R 181 I stood like *one thunder-struck* | ib 301 looking like *one astonished* | Defoe R 2.200 I lay as one drunk | Scott Iv 51 he was powerfully made, like *one accustomed* to endure the fatigue of war | Fox 2.229 he was *one greatly loved* by those who knew him | Garnett T 11 with her step hasty as of *one pursuing or pursued* | Masefield C 122 with the vacant stare of *one bored*.

10.242. This position of *one* is often found (especially after *as* or *like*) with adjectives indicating physical or psychical deficiencies, although such adjectives are not as a rule placed after their substantives (Cf. 15.473). Thus already in some of the examples just given. Further:

Otway 159 I am *as one dumb* when I would speak of it | Fielding T 4.329 he behaved *like one frantic* | Lamb
R 69 I laughed aloud like one mad, whose mind had suddenly gone from him | Thack N 721 she acted as one distraught | Di Do 96 he looked like one forlorn | Wells T M 123 She lay like one dead.

10.25. The adjunct after one may be a prepositional group. Examples of anaphorical one:
Quincey 101 the situation was one without hope | Di D 344 his position is really one of power | Di D 215 considering the matter as one to be arranged between you and me.

One = ‘a person’, not anaphorical:
Shelley 729 Like one asleep With open eyes ... she lay | Di D 201 I felt, for many days, like one in a dream | Conway C 21 I may have walked as one in a trance | Hardy F 372 his lips moved as those of one in great pain.

This is frequent before an infinitival adjunct:
By DJ 4.54 She was not one to weep | Mered R 339 you are one to want more than money | ib 354 he was not one to suspect anybody | ib 447 | Caine S 1.37 with the air of one about to communicate a novel idea.

10.26. The same one may be followed by a relative clause: Sh Mids II. 1.216 commit your selfe Into the hands of one that loues you not | Lr I. 4.111 for taking one's part that is out of favour — Cf. Appendix 10.68.

Rise of the Prop-Word

10.31. We now come to those applications of one in which it is most distinctly a ‘prop-word’. The dissociation from the numeral is especially clear, (1) when the pl ones is used, (2) when one is preceded by another one, or ones by another numeral, (3) when one is preceded by the or a similarly definite word, for unstressed one is indefinite, as appears from the development of the indefinite article from a weakened form of one.

10.32. An (a) + adjective + one. Early examples: Rob. Br. (Luick) an uncouth one | Sir Ferumbras (Kellner) a fair knyzt a ['he'] was to see, A iolif on wyf oute lak | 1463 (NED) oon of my short gownys, a good oon. — Cf. p. 502.
Examples abound in the 16th and following centuries:

More U 197 precious stones . . . to gette an excellent one | Sh Cy V. 5.292 He was a Prince. A most incivill one | Merch I. 1.79 A stage, where euery man must play a part, and mine a sad one | ib V. 1.20 Stealing her soule with many vowes of faith, And nere a true one | Give me a cigar, but a good one, please.

10.331. Adjective + a + one. This is especially frequent with such; Shakespeare has both such a one (frequent) and such an one (twice); the latter form is still found in the 19th c. as a literary reminiscence, but the only natural form is such a one on account of the pronunciation [wan], cf. I. 11.21.

Sh Mobb IV. 3.66 Better Macbeth, Then such an one to reigne | Spect 7 mother of the present Lord such-a-one | Swift J 121 we have nothing to save us but a peace . . . we cannot have such a one as we hoped | Ru C 160 many a giddy and thoughtless boy has become a good bishop . . . but no such an one ever became a good general.

10.332. So (or as) + adj + a one:

Beaumont 1.91 this heavy trust, Laid on so weak a one | Di D 373 the street was not as desolate a one as I could have wished it to be | Ru F 192 the privilege of seeing beauty is quite as rare a one as that of possessing it | Morris N 125 the great meeting . . . as large a one was held on the Sunday | Spencer A 1.415 the step no longer appeared so questional)le a one. — Cf. p. 502.

too + adj + a one:

Wordsw [ed. Morley] 366 its catastrophe, far too spirit­ual a one for instant sympathy | Conway C 106 the chance was too good a one to be lost.

What a one:

Matt. 8.27 [Rheims] What an one . . . | Mered H 3 but what a one he was! | Ridge S 90 you know what a one he is.

Half a one:

Fielding T 4.67 I have stayed above an hour, and I
did not think I had stayed above half a one | Di X 43
they drew round the hearth in what Bob called a circle, meaning half a one.

many one has now been displaced by many a one; cf. above 2.73.

10.333. With these combinations may be classed (n)ever a one; in dialects (n)ever a is frequent, especially in the forms arra, arry (see EDD), in which the original components are no longer felt:

More U 120 neuer a one of them all hath ... lesse then XX. myles of grounde [A: none] | Sh Tim V. 1.96
There’s neuer a one of you but trusts a knaue | B Jo 1.60
ne’er a one to be found, now? | ib 1.69 ere they should ha’ come in, e’er a one of ’hem | Burns 3.249 O, that’s the queen o’ womankind, And ne’er a one to peer her! | Tenn 124 I have sung many songs, But never a one so gay | Thack E 1.165 birthdays (poor Harry had never a one).

Cp. also the exceptional not a one for not one in Sh Mcb III. 4.131 There’s not a one of them but in his house I keepe a ser-
vant feed.

10.34. The plural of a good one necessarily is good ones. This form is used anaphorically in the following quotations:

More U 123 They bryng vp very fewe horses; nor non, but very fearce ones | ib 236 magistrates ... take neve ons agayne wyth them [in the edition A: neve without ons] | Sh Shr I. 2.171 well read in poetrie And other booke, good ones, I warrant ye | Sh Ado III. 3.121 when rich villains haue neede of poore ones, poore ones may make what price they will | Hml V. 1.118 will his vou-
chers vouch him no more of his purchases, and double ones too | Bacon A 6.27 seventeene cells, very neat ones | Swift J 133 two of my businesses ... were they not worthy ones? | Goldsm 616 don’t let us make imaginary evils, when we have so many real ones to encounter | Fox 2.53 Cromwell letters: he does not mean to take in
any more fresh ones | Doyle S 2.116 this order might lead to other ones [= others]. — Cf. below, p. 502.

The combination is rarer in a non-anaphorical employment:

Ascham S 69 som greate and good ones in courte | Sh Hml III.1.196 Madnesse in great ones must not vnwatch'd go | Oth II. 1.143 foule pranks, which faire and wise-ones do.

10.35. There is naturally no article before the adjective in the vocative:

Sh Cy IV. 2.360 Young one, Informe vs of thy fortune | Alls II. 1.102 | Otway 205 Oh thou unkind one.—

Plural Ascham S 68 ye great ones in ye court | Sh R2 V. 5.15 Come, little ones | As IV. 1.76 Good morrow, faire ones | Cy V. I.2 You married ones.

10.36. One + adjective + one. Here the first one is the numeral:

Sh Cor II. 2.83 That's thousand to one good one | Di Do 207 with one stationary eye in the mahogany face, and one revolving one | Spencer Ed 127 German teachers had rather manage a dozen German boys than one English one.

Similarly in the plural after a numeral:

More U 127 broukes . . . and among othere II sumwhat bygge ons | Ascham S 69 three or foure great ones in courte | Defoe R 213 the two old ones [cats] | ib 358 the wolves . . . twenty lame ones.

10.41. The (or other definite word) + adjective + one. The oldest examples (in the sg) in Gerber are from Greene (the only one) and Peele (the mighty one | the Holy one); but there is at least one in Ch: E 1552 I have the moste stedefast wyf, And eek the meakest oon that bereth lyf. Franz (Sh-Gr² § 363) has not a single example from Shakespeare among the many he gives of one in various connexion. And yet there are some, though probably not very many:

Sh Lr II. 4.75 But the great one that goes vpward,
let him draw thee after.—Cf. also AV Mark 1.24 *the holy One* of God.

Recent examples of the anaphoric singular need not be given here, but a few may be given of the independent one:

Browning 2.655 *Never the time and the place And the loved one all together!* | Caine E 484 *Doesn’t the highest love remember first the welfare of the loved one?* | Kipl S 254 *On my honour, gulped the persecuted one.*

**10.42.** In the plural *the + adj + anaphorical ones* is more common in Sh than in the sg (the first two examples are also quoted by Franz):

Sh H8 II. 2.93 *All the clerkes (I meane the learned ones in Christian Kingdomes)* | Lear II. 1.8 *you haue heard of the newes abroad, I meane the whisper’d ones* | ib IV. 6.99 *I had the white hayres in my beard, ere the black ones were there.*

Later examples:

Swift 3.272 *the poor ones* [= the poor Struldbruggs] are maintained at the publick charge | Swift J 70 *'Tis not the great bulky ones [microscopes], nor the common little ones.*

*The + adj + non-anaphoric ones*:

More U 55 *the yonge ones of greate cattell* | Peele D 455 *the mightiest ones* | Sh Cy III. 6.15 *Thou art one o’ th’ false ones.*

**10.43.** We may have an adjective before and another adjective after *one(s):* Austen P 193 *Stupid men are the only ones worth knowing* | ib 346 *he had no single relation with whom he kept up a connection, and it was certain that he had no near one living.*

**10.44.** The adjective *+ anaphoric one* may be preceded by another defining word (possessive, *this, that,* genitive):

Sh Lr I. 4.179 *thou had’st little wit in thy bald crowne, when thou gau’st thy golden one away* | Otway 267 *have my unhappy days Been lengthen’d to this sad one?*
Nares, Orthoepy 1784. 113 N has . . . a sound which may be called its regular sound, and has by some been considered its invariable one | Brontë P 192 Pelet’s worn-out frame could not have stood against my sound one | Carlyle R 1.226 Emily was Basil’s only daughter, but she was not his wife’s only one | Holmes A 104 if we change our last simile to that very old and familiar one of a fleet leaving the harbour | Ridge G 254 I had to put away my other one [i.e. watch].

Corresponding examples with independent one:

Sh Cymb V. 4.61 his dearest one | Merch III. 2.208 I got a promise of this faire one heere To haue her loue | Carlyle R 1.327 oh, my darling lost one! . . . ‘Let us burn our ships’, said my noble one | Trollope O 151 Mary Lawrie is not your engaged one | Trollope D-2.35 “My own one”, ejaculated Tregear. “Yes, yes, yes; always your own.” | Haggard S 110 I learned wisdom from that dead one.

Thus also in the pl:

More U 39 both the rauen and the ape thincke their owne yong ones fayrest | Sh Mcb IV. 2.69 with your little ones | Tit II. 3.142 when did the Tigers young-ones-teach the dam? | John II. 1.521 What say these young ones? | Mcb IV. 3.215 All my pretty ones? [= children] | Tw IV. 2.37 I am one of those gentle ones, that will vse the diuell himselfe with curtesie | AV Job 39.3 they bring forth their young ones | ib Luke 17.2 offend one of these little ones | ib Mark 10.42 their great ones exercise authority vpon them | Carlyle R 1.9 (and often) we young ones | ib 1.70 the spirits of my vanished ones.

Recent Developments

10.5. All these combinations, in which we have the, a, this, that, a possessive pronoun, or a genitive before an adjective + one, lead up to the use of the same words immediately before the prop-word one. I should be very much surprised if these constructions were much
older than the beginning of the nineteenth century, but recently they have been gaining in importance.

The only example I have of that one before the 19th c. is the following, where one is evidently the numeral, that one being opposed to your summe of parts (together): Sh Hml IV. 7.76 a qualitie Wherein they say you shine, your summe of parts Did not together plucke such envie from him As did that one [Not in folio]. — See p. 502 a substitute for this passage.

10.51. First we have the one followed by an adjunct. These cases resemble those mentioned above (10.23ff.), to which they form the definite counterpart. They differ from them, however, by admitting the possibility of the pl ones.

The post-adjunct is an adjective or participle:

Austen M 94 her conviction of being really the one preferred | Di X 68 “Not the little prize turkey: the big one?” “What, the one as big as me?” | Haggard S 49 the rock, which he knew, and that appeared to be identical with the one described upon the sherd | Stevenson M 164 such high dames as the one now looking on me.

10.521. The adjunct after the one is an adverb or a prepositional group. Examples of anaphorical one:

Austen P 254 from impatience of knowing what the next sentence might bring, she was incapable of attending to the sense of the one before her eyes | Di X 49 Scrooge’s niece’s sister—the plump one with the lace tucker; not the one with the roses | Di N 214 this room and the one up stairs | GE A 361 an encounter that was likely to end more fatally than the one in the Grove | Caine M 410 Bring me a cap—the one with a feather in it... open the drawer on the left, the one with the key in it | Swinb L 215 every day spent here is a heavier irritation to me than the one before | Hope F 16 “who is the young lady sitting by our friend the Father—the one, I mean, with dark hair | Gissing G 278 Each woman I fall in love with is of a higher type than the one before.

Thus also in the plural:

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
Kipl L 184 any letters for me? give me all the ones in fat grey envelopes.
The one is not anaphorical in:
Hardy T 114 . . . replied the one in buff. Plural: Conway C 28 to do a man's duty in succouring the ones in peril.

10.522. The adjunct following the one is an infinitive with to; all my examples show non-anaphoric one:
Austen M 266 she is the *very* one to make you happy | Trollope D 1.36 the Duchess was to be the one to bell the cat | Mered H 416 thinking that he was the one to fortify her faith in Evan | Quiller Couch M 154 Ruth should have been the one to stay behind and I the one to go | James S 39 | Williamson S 201.

10.53. The post-adjunct is very frequently a relative clause; one is anaphoric in most cases: Thack H 6 of all my nephews and nieces, you are the one whose conduct in life has most pleased me | Thack N 635 of all the men in the world the one I like best to talk to | GE A 7 the basket was the one which on workdays held Adam's dinner | Conway C 213 unless your answer is the one I hope for, we shall never meet again | Caine E 163 the daughter of my old friend in England. —The one who died in Elba? | Dickinson S 13 a very different England from the one I have known | Hardy W 83 such an excellent house as the one you live in | Doyle S 6.69 It was a bust like the one which we had seen that morning | Page J 141 The physician came duly, sent up by the one she had telegraphed to | Norris P 122 Laura was a very different woman from the one who an instant before had spoken so gravely | Gissing G 209 a different woman from the one I worshipped.

The pl the ones + rel. clause is recent and fairly rare: Hardy L 208 of all the years of my growing up the ones that bide clearest in my mind were 1803, 4, and 5 | Shaw C 145 I never read articles on such subjects. I have hardly time to glance through the ones that concern me.
The following quotations show the one used non-anaphorically:

Di D 552 you recollect mentioning Sarah, as the one that has something the matter with her spine? | Caine C 96 a follower of the One who forgave the woman | Caine M 145 I saw myself lifted up by the one I loved.

The plural is here very rare; I have only two examples, in one a Manxman, in the other an American is speaking:

Caine M 33 the ones that's telling it are just flying in the face of faith | Bentley T 132 It's only the ones who have got rich too quick, who go crazy.

10.54. The one is very seldom used before a genitive: Fox 2.115 Ledru Rollin has taken the house next to the one formerly Guizot's at Brempton. This would not be possible except for the adverb formerly = the one which was formerly Guizot's.

10.55. In all these instances (10.51—10.54), the one(s) (anaphoric) takes the place of an earlier that, those (16.3); that (those) still has to be used before an of-phrase with the same sense as a genitive. But before other of-phrases the one may be found, though not very commonly: Trollope D 1.46 the first and only strong feeling in the borough was the one of duty. [Not quite the same thing as... was one of duty.] The development of the one is especially valuable, because that could not, of course, be used except anaphorically, and there was thus room for a corresponding independent expression.

10.56. Next, the one is frequently used without any adjunct = 'the right or proper (person or thing)' as in "Hand me his letter". "This one?" "Yes, that's the one." Unfortunately I have no literary quotations in my own collections, and the NED does not seem to notice this usage.

10.57. A one is also used without an adjective; in most cases there is a non-adjectival post-adjunct:

Di N 103 you are a one to keep company [ironically = a nice one to...] | Ridge G 28 I like you, but you
are a one to tread over | Ward F 35 I'm a one for plain speaking || Ridge L 205 "Well", exclaimed her delighted companion, "you are a one, and no mistake".

10.61. Examples of that one (anaphoric): Wordsworth 494 [he] Plays, in the many games of life, that one Where what he most doth value must be won | Di D 369 [geraniums] Dora often stopped to admire this one and that one | Thackeray N 525 I don't understand much about women, but that one appears to me to be an artful old campaigner | ib 619 I felt the greatest desire to give him a kiss, and that one which you had just now was intended for him | Ritchie M 119 I think this present generation of women is a happier one than that one was | ib 132 I cannot tell whether it was this year or that one before it in which we found ourselves returning home | Morris E 44 through the fields, Noting what this and that one yields | Shaw C 110 to fight the other fellow—that one with his head in a big helmet | Williamson S 201 if ever a fib were excusable, that one was. — Cf. p. 503.

Thus also in the pl those ones:
Hughes T 2.268 the dear gardens! What was the names of those ones with the targets up, where they were shooting? | Kipling L 237 you must get some other clothes—those ones aren't fit to be seen.

Cf. vulgar them ones, Doyle St 156 [prayers] you say over them ones that you used to say every night.

10.62. This one anaphoric (I have no examples of these ones): Di T 1.58 There appearing to be no other door . . . going straight to this one | Ru P 3.6 meditating on the charms of the next world, and the vanities of this one | Dickinson S 117 I look like a stranger from another world upon the business of this one | Dickinson Im 14 the desirability of a future life must depend upon its character, just as does the desirability of this one | Wilde In 202 there are other cases, but this one is quite sufficient for my purpose | Chesterton F 68 a much better
story than this one | James S 155 with a condition.—
Another?—This one is comparatively easy. — Cf. 10.83.
This one is hardly ever independent, except in combina-
tion with that, when it means 'various persons': Bennett
A 249 chatting with this one and that. — Cf. p. 503.

10.63. What one (cf. 7.824):

Di N 486 escape from some prison, but what one she
couldn’t remember | Poe 660 Of the innumerable effects,
of which the soul is susceptible, what one shall I, on the
present occasion, select? | Shaw 2.133 all the words belong
to some attitude or other—all except one. What one
is that?

This (interrogative) what one is different from the
(exclamatory) what a one exemplified in 10.332.

Which one and which ones (anaphoric) are very fre-
quent in colloquial PE.

10.64. One is even beginning to be used after a
possessive pronoun.

Trollope D 3.163 When a woman is old . . . But my
one! She's not old | Hope In 135 there was a letter for
her. While he attacked his pile, she began on her one |
Ewing Jackanapes 26 leaning back in his one of the two
Chippendale arm-chairs in which they sat. — Cf. p. 503.

In Aberdeen I once heard an educated lady say
[speaking of carriages] “. . . before our one [stress on our] comes”
and a distinguished scientific man “I was talking of my
one” [stress on my, meaning 'my dog'].

10.65. Similarly after a genitive; I once heard a
lady say “Her parasol is finer than her sister’s one” [one
weakly stressed]; but a friend whom I asked about this
told me that to him the combination would sound much
more natural in such a sentence as this: “Her parasol
is fine, but her sister’s one is finer.”

10.66. Ones may be used after a personal pronoun
in the plural. This is not astonishing when an adj in-
tervenes (as in you great ones, above 10.35, or NP '06 it
is very annoying to us quieter ones); but it is more diffi-
cult to see why ones should have been added to a single we or you. This is found in Scotch dialect, as Dr. Murray once told me (the forms are something like [haizjenz, jau­jenz]), and it is evidently from Scotch that American has taken it. We 'uns and you 'uns are especially frequent in the vulgar speech of the Southern states (see Farmer, Dict. of Americanisms s. v. gaunted, hoosier, Century Dict. 'un, etc.). H. Fletcher, New Menti­culture, 1903, p. 124 makes a negro say: "good old times when all we uns had to do was work, and sing and dance." The usual pronunciation is [wi'(ə)nz, ju'(ə)nz], as Prof. Hempl in­forms me.

The idiom may have originated with you to distinguish clearly the pl from the sg (cf. 2.86. ff.).

10.67. Before one we may now also use substant­tive-adjuncts: a cotton one, the top one, see 13.4, and similarly other words that can be used as first-words of compounds, can be detached and placed before one:

The eight o'clock train is faster than the nine one | Ruskin S 85 the problem of land, at its worst, is a bye one | Gissing G 388 he was wearing his overcoat in default of the under one.

Even a genitive case may be thus employed though this is very rare: Ruskin Sel 1.471 your pretty protestant beads, which are flat, and of gold, instead of round, and of ebony, as the monks' ones were (cf. 10.65).

10.68. New section. See p. 503.

10.7. In colloquial language, the prop-word one, especially after an adj, is very often pronounced [an, an] or even [n] as in Sweet's Primer of Sp E 92 [əˌregjəla 'bædn]. This might be due to the ordinary omission of [w] after a consonant in weak syllables (cf. I 7.3), but is more probably a survival of the old w-less form of one (I 11.21). This pronunciation is evident from the rime in Byron DJ 2.146 a new one : drew on : Juan, and is pretty often indicated in novels by the spelling 'un, especially in some constant combinations like bad 'un, stiff
'un little 'uns; see, for instance, Di Do 134 I will go upon my walk at once. Take a good long 'un, my lad | ib 496 the stiff 'un | Thackeray P 3.236 nothing like a thorough-bred un | ib 355 Have you only found out that now. young un? Warrington said.

It should be noted that with this pronunciation, (one) un tends to be a mere suffix added to the adjective to make it serviceable as a principal, and that there is a curious parallelism between a bad (-f- sb): a bad 'un (without sb) and my (-f- sb): mine (without sb), although the two phenomena have developed in different ways.

I suppose that the Sc word wean 'a child, an infant', which is sometimes supposed to be derived from the verb wean, is nothing else but the adj wee 'little' + a short form of one.

**Importance**

**10.81.** We are now in a position to inquire into the rôle that this prop-word one plays in the economy of the English language. One replaces a substantive, which either has just been mentioned and which it would therefore be inelegant to repeat (anaphoric one), or else which is so vague or general in signification that no ordinary substantive can replace it so well as the completely indeterminate one (independent one). It is in itself a substantive, and has the same inflexions (genitive, plural) as an ordinary substantive. On the other hand it serves to indicate that the word joined to it is not a principal, but an adjunct, and thus in many cases removes the doubt that might otherwise exist in such a 'formless' language as English. We shall now take in turn the advantages derived from the development of one as a prop-word, and finally (10.9) point out a few drawbacks and inconsistencies.

**10.82.** The form shows at once whether we have to do with a singular (one) or a plural (ones) and thus removes the doubt caused by the lack of flexion of Eng-
lish adjuncts. This is seen clearly in the case of *which* (5.54): if we say "Here are some gloves, *which* do you want?" the question is more indefinite than if we say "*which one* do you want?" or "*which ones* do you want?"

Thus also *the great one* and *the great ones*, where ME *the grete* may mean both G *der* *(die, das)* *grosse* and *die grossen*. The comparative frequency of the plural in the early quotations collected by Gerber seems to show that the opportunity it gave for indicating number played a rôle in the development of the idiom.—In Poe 661 "the modus operandi by which *some one* of my own works was put together" the addition of *one* makes *some* sg, while an isolated *some* can only be plural.

With regard to the plural *ones* it is noticeable that in the great majority of early examples collected by Gerber the adjective is *little* or *young* (10 + 8 instances against 5 with *great* and 8 in all with other adjectives). It would seem that the plural first became popular in such combinations as *my little ones* and *her young ones*. Also in the AV these plurals are very frequent indeed (36 + 8 against 28 with other adjectives).

**10.83.** It is of some importance that by the use of *one* the formation of a genitive is rendered easy in cases where it would not otherwise be possible:

Kingsley H 73 Three set on me with daggers, and I was forced to take *this one’s* dagger away | Caine M 413 a poor gentlewoman . . . *this one’s* father has turned his back upon her | Mi A 10 leaving it to *each ones* conscience to read or to lay by | Conway C 148 a dream in which two persons appear, and the dreamer cannot be certain with *which one’s* thoughts he identifies himself | Whittier 439 *many a poor one’s* blessing | Gissing B 44 *a* garret served as bedroom for the two boys, also as the *elder one’s* laboratory | Hardy T 62 *the little ones’* eyes filled with tears.

**10.84.** While *one* as a substantive shows that the whole group plays the rôle of a primary member of the
sentence, it also shows that the word joined to one is a secondary word (adjunct). This is important in those cases in which the word can be a principal in itself. Compare

\[ \text{a little : a little one.} \]
\[ \text{go to the right : go to the right one.} \]
\[ \text{the fat : the fat one. — Cf. below, p. 504.} \]

Note also the difference between what (independent neuter) and what one; in the same way this and that tend to be used only as independent neuters, while this one and that one may either be anaphoric (neuter or personal) or independent personal; while in former periods this might also have the latter function (= G dieser 16.3). While “the last ball before this” would be understood as = ‘before this time’ (this independent neuter), “the last ball before this one” (Caine E 524) means ‘before this ball’.

10.85. Further the combination the top one shows that top has not the same signification as when it stands alone, but means ‘topmost’ as in the top branch; one has a similar effect in Stevenson JHF 67 the middle one of the three windows was open: the middle one = ‘the middle window’, different from the substantive middle = ‘the middle part’. In Elizabeth R 240 . . “in my present condition . . . It’s the glories of your future one that made me laugh” the addition of one limits the signification of future, which otherwise would be taken = the whole of what is to come. Cf. also the distinction between the present one and the present (which has also the signification ‘the gift’). Further Wells F 260 America is an older country than any European one [any European would = any person born in or living in Europe]. | Di D 77 this peculiarity striking me as his chief one. Somewhat different is the case with Masefield M 261 His memory for art was a good general one—where a good general would give a ridiculously wrong meaning.

Evil (the evil) is a neuter sb (9.6), but the Evil One = ‘Satan’ (e.g. Mi PL 9.463, Carlyle H 129).
While in these cases *one* prevents the ambiguity that would arise from a different use of the same word, in other cases it does the same with an accidental phonetic identity, as in *a sound—a sound one, a fair—a fair one*. The latter combination is particularly frequent as a designation for 'woman':

Sh As IV. 1.76 Good morrow, faire ones | Merch III. 2.208 I got a promise of this faire one heere To have her loue | Scott Iv 179 I will rescue the unfortunate and afflicted fair one | Burns 3.250 this fair one . . . every other fair one.

10.86. I must be forgiven for calling the attention of the reader to the ease with which my new terminology allows me to deal with some phenomena, which had previously puzzled me a good deal. According to the usual terminology I should have had to say something like this: *what* is a substantival pronoun, which in *what branch* is made into an adjectival pronoun; in *what one* it must be equally adjectival, while at the same time it is substantivized by *one*. Or: *top* is a substantive; in *top branch* it has become an adjective or an adjective-equivalent, but in *the top one* this substantive that has become an adjective-equivalent is again substantivized. Instead of this I now say: *what* is always a pronoun, and *top* is always a substantive; in *what happened?* and *the top fell down* they are primaries, but in *what branch, what one, the top branch, the top one* they are adjuncts to the primaries *branch* and *one*.

10.87. As already mentioned, substantives indicate more special notions than adjectives. It is in accordance with this rule, that *the poor ones* (with its substantive *one*) is more special than *the poor*.

In consequence of this specialization, also, the combination *my dear one* (found, for instance, in Sh Tp I. 2.17 Of thee my deere one; thee my daughter | Caine E 214, 253, 265 | Wells Tw 113, etc., etc.) is more expressive of feeling than *my dear*, which is now often used very loosely. (Note also *dearest* as a means of address, without or, rarer, with *one*). Another effect of the same specialization is seen in the predicative, where *a . . . one* makes
the expression more definite than it would be if the adjective alone were used, as seen in such a sentence as this "The crowd was, in the main, a well-dressed one."

**10.9.** Important as is thus the rôle of the *one-construction*, it cannot be used in all cases, and in those cases in which it might be used, it is not always used consistently. It is sometimes felt as heavy and clumsy, and this feeling leads to certain expedients or tricks, by which *one* is avoided.

**10.91.** It is a natural consequence of the origin of the prop-word from the numeral that it can replace the names of such things only as can be counted. The following sentence, found in a Swedish philologist's work, is quite un-English: "The material to be taken into consideration is the following one". This explains why *one* is not added in the following sentences, in which the adjectives refer to mass-words or to words of similar import:

I like *red wine* better than *white* | I like bathing in *salt water* better than in *fresh* | Scott A 2.316 in *fair weather* or *foul* | Henley Burns 251 he had known *good luck* and *bad* | Gissing G 200 if the *furniture* is sold, shall I be able to buy *new*? | Macaulay E 4.277 I judge of his *public conduct* by his *private*, which I have found to be void of truth and honour | Dickinson S 15 Our *private business* is intermixed with our *public* | Wilde In 99 the *creative faculty* is higher than the *critical* | Seeley E 129 *the commercial influence* works disguised under the *religious* | Ker E 89 Those ideas can be expressed in *lyric* poetry; not so well in *narrative*.

Note also the use of *ditto* as a kind of substitute for *one*, as this could not be used: Di Do 102 a glance at *ancient history*, a wink or two at *modern ditto*.—In Scotch *thing* is used to represent mass-words as *one* represents thing-words: Aa've sum mair peaper, but yt's uoa *syd guid-thyng* ('not so good') as th.t | Wad ye leyke sum black *ynk*, or sum *bleuw-thyng?*, Murray Sc 198.
10.92. There is some disinclination to use *one* after a comparative and especially after a superlative, including such words as *first* and *next* (cf. 9.41 f.); in the first quotation it would, however, be more natural now to add *one*, and in the two following *one* might be added or omitted without much difference:

Mi T 686 Is this your crowne? I, didst thou euer see a *faier*? | Di N 63 the best . . link between this world and a *better* | Di Do 67 as sweet a child as I could wish to see. I could not wish to see a *sweeter* | ib 26 *the elder took the younger* by the waist | Ru T 12 it is the duty of the upper classes to set an example to *the lower* | Kidd 66 the weaker peoples disappear before *the stronger* | Doyle NP'95 the inner wall was built of bricks . . . *the outer* I had only caught a glimpse of once or twice | Phillpotts K 65 he began to see a *greater than* Thorndike | Swift J 49 in one of my *former* (= f. letters).

The following examples, however, show *one(s)* after a comparative, and also illustrate the inconsistency in its employment:

Austen P 207 *the younger ones* out before *the elder* are married! | Di Do 232 I took a very polished farewell of both ladies, which the *elder one* acknowledged in her usual manner, while *the younger*, sitting with her face addressed to the window, bent her head slightly | Conway C 121 it has, at least, not made my wife's lot a *sadder one* [thus always after a] | ib 136 she had passed into a state far more pitiable than *her former one*.

10.931. Superlatives without *one*:

Austen P 207 your younger sisters must be very young? Yes, *my youngest* is not sixteen | ib 42 *the two youngest* repaired to the lodgings | Di Do 292 two houses . . . *the first* is situated . . | Caine P 27 Some English miss with plenty of this world's goods and none of *the next* | Ward M 140 we may call a man a scoundrel one day and ask him to dinner *the next*.

This is especially frequent when the superlative pre-
cedes a partitive of: the best of men | the best of prose
5.413 | the oldest of friends || Austen M 318 it would be
the extreme of vanity.

10.932. Note also the following familiar instances:
Cowper L (often) and Doyle M 56 in my last [= l. letter] |
Bennett W 2.280 You haven’t heard his latest [= l. joke],
I suppose?

In the following quotation one is perhaps necessary
to show the singular number; besides, without one it would
be taken in the abstract meaning of ‘the end of’ (cf. to see
the last of a person): Norris P 99 it was the last one of
his unaccountable orders of the early morning.

10.94. It must be considered as a survival of the
old free use of an adjective alone, when the lighter con­
struction without one is often preferred to the heavier
with one; this is frequently the case with short familiar
adjectives, especially if the two groups (the one with a
substantive, and the one without) are in close proximity.
In those quotations that are placed after ||, it would pro­
bably have been more natural to use one.

First on this side, then on that | it goes in at one
ear and out at the other | the right hand is clean, and so
is the left | the old world and the new | Seeley E 77 Effect
of the New World on the Old || Mi A 27 God esteems the
growth of one virtuous person more then the restraint of
ten vitious | ib 18 it is but a blank vertue, not a pure |
Johnson R 53 both the wild beasts and the tame retreated
to the mountains | Stevenson A 20 it is a little kingdom,
but an independent.

10.95. The construction with one is somewhat fami­
liar and colloquial; this is probably the reason why the old
construction the dead (9.23) has been preserved as being
more solemn than the dead one would be; cf. on the other
hand the familiar tone of such a group as the little ones.
In such a sentence as Ru U 80 “The righteous man is dis­
tinguished from the unrighteous by his desire and hope of
justice, as the true man from the false by his desire and
hope of truth” the expression is decidedly more emphatic than it would be, if one were added; but the unrighteous and the false may be taken as plurals.

10.961. Where two adjectives are joined to the same substantive, the old construction *a good man and a true* (cf. ME *thirty men and two*) is now supplanted by *a good and true man or (rarer) a good man and a true one* as in:

Sheridan 184 'tis an old observation, and a very true one | Caine M 190 the last of their race should be a strong man and a true one.

10.962. Examples of the older construction, which is still found as a literary archaism to avoid the use of one:

Ch A 531 'A trewe swinker and a good was he | C 713 An oold man and a poure | Sh Alls IV. 5.66 a shrewd knaue and an unhappie | Ro II. 5.56 an honest gentleman, And a courteous, and a kind, and a handsome, And I warrant a vertuous | H 4 B V. 3.6 | Cymb IV. 2.369 | extinct in 18th c.? | Scott Iv 485 a good fellow and a merry | Tenny 295 A gray old wolf and a lean | 331 All in a full fair manor and a rich | Swinburne A 82 many a strong-man and a great | Stevenson JHF 181 it was a fine house, and a very rambling.

The same word-order is sometimes used in cases where the second adjective has no article: Sh R2 I. 1.123 Free speech, and fearelesse, I to thee allow | Tenny 28 She has no loyal knight and true | ib 319 I will seek thee out Some comfortable bride and fair | Morris E 41 on this thine ancient throne and high | ib 53,110 | London W 48 it was a brief fight and fierce.

10.97. Sometimes the use of one is evaded by putting the substantive after the second instead of the first of two substantives:

Wordsworth P 3.558 mingling playful with pathetic thoughts | Lamb E 1.142 In comparing modern with ancient manners | McCarthy 2.16 in the dealings of a strong
with a weak nation \( \Rightarrow \ldots \) a strong nation with a weak one].—It is better English to say: “this does not admit of a logical, but only of a psychological analysis” than “\( \cdot \cdot \cdot \) a logical analysis \( \cdot \cdot \cdot \) a ps. one”, and “when the logical deviates from the grammatical analysis” than “\( \cdot \cdot \cdot \) the l. analysis \( \cdot \cdot \cdot \) the gr. one.”

10.98. This gives us the clue to a frequent phenomenon which has sometimes puzzled foreign grammarians (cf. Poutsma p. 94), namely the use of an isolated genitive case or possessive pronoun as the subject of a sentence, while its principal is placed with the predicative. Instead of “Maggie’s life was a troubulous one” George Eliot (M 1.60) writes “Maggie’s was a troubulous life.” Thus also:

Defoe R 2.251 mine was the notion of a mad rambling boy | Keats 2.65 His was harsh penance on St. Agnes’ Eve | By DJ 12.64 Eve’s was a trifling case to hers | ib 11.32 Juan, whose was a delicate commission | Di D 35 Mrs. Gummidge’s was rather a fretful disposition | Di T 2.185 Yours is a long life to look back upon | Carlyle R 1.9 His was a healthy mind | Stevenson M 266 Yours has been a tragic marriage | Bennett W 2.300 Hers had not been a life at all. — Cf. below, p. 504.

10.99. It should finally be noted that in some cases one is felt to be too vague, and that a more definite substantive is preferred, as in Ru C 9: it might be as advantageous for the nation that the robber should have the spending of the money as that the person robbed should have spent it | Stevenson M 29 I stopped like a man shot (cf. 10.242).

As non-anaphoric one can only be used of persons, thing must be used in the corresponding position in other cases: Carlyle F 3.150 the only thing clear (‘das einzige klare’) is that I have again some notion of writing. Cf. 11.33.
Chapter XI

Adjectives as Principals

11.11. The OE and ME freedom in the use of adjectives (with their adjectival inflexion) as principals has already been mentioned more than once (9.21, 10.94). This freedom has been limited very much in ModE in connexion with the developments mentioned in chapters IX and X, and none of the following constructions would be tolerated in PE:

Ch G 1067 as witnesse thise olde wyse [= these old wise men] | ib A 248 riche [= rich people] | ib B 112 he noght helpeth needfulle [= needy people] in hir neede | More U 164 equall of age be sette together | Sh Tit II. 1.89 Better [= better men] then he haue worene Vulcans badge | Defoe P 20 the out-parishes . . . fuller also of poor [= poor people] || Sh R2 II. 1.129 Whom faire befell in heauen.

11.12. In this chapter we shall speak of those instances which have not been mentioned in 10.9 and in which it is still possible to use an adjective as a principal without either making it into a substantive or adding the substantive one. We have already mentioned that there is often no criterion by which to decide whether we have to do with a substantive or an adjective (9.21). That the words dealt with in this chapter are, however, adjectives, is shown by the possibility of qualifying them by means of an adverb: the really poor as compared with the real paupers; thus also in the neuter: the relatively unknown and the absolutely unknowable; the supremely beautiful.

11.2. Adjectives very often stand uninflected as principals when they go together in pairs. They have then no article in accordance with a general tendency, which is found in other languages as well, to leave out the usual 'formalities' when words are contrasted in more or less stereotyped combinations.
Examples: Sh Wiv II. 1.117 He wooes both high and low, both rich and poor, both young and old | Sh Cor III. 1.228 helpe him young and old | Thack P 1.60 love makes fools of all of us, big and little | Fox 1.149 the wonderful mixture of high and low | NP '12 Old and young marched side by side || through thick and thin | to right and left (frequent, e.g. Quiller Couch M 215, London W 15; without preposition. Gissing B 41 He can hit out right and left).

Thus 'also when one of the contrasted words is a substantive.

Lecky D 1.19 the relations between employer and employed | Hope R 145 the pair, tracker and tracked, met nobody | Page J 399 an intellectual game between hunter and hunted.

Note that Chaucer uses heigh and logh in the sg form (B 1142 Deeth, that taketh of heigh and logh his reute), where now high and low would be taken as plural. In the just mentioned cases also, the substantive is in the sg and not in the pl.

**Singular**

11.31. The chief living use of the adjective as a principal is with the definite article to denote a whole class (cf. 5.4), either in the sg, in which case it is neuter, or in the pl, in which case it denotes living beings: the known = 'everything known'; the poor = 'all poor people'. The former is especially found with abstract notions, and is, consequently, more literary than colloquial. In philosophic language, this usage is to a great extent due to imitation of German.

Carlyle R 1.78 separate firmly the known from the unknown, or misknown | ib H 126 in prizing the blessings of the New, let us not be unjust to the Old | id Fox 2.28 it approaches the impossible, this task of mine! Philips L 30 you had better bow to the inevitable | Scott A 1.150 he is fond of the mystical | Benson D 62 in novels there is always a touch of the heroic in the faithful friend |
Adjectives as Principals. [11.31—11.34.]

the supernatural | Ru Sel 1.65 a deeper feeling for the beautiful | Meredith E 309 I must aim at the highest . . .
to aim at the dazzling and attractive | Shaw 1.196 she has
to bear with disagreeables and take the rough with the smooth | Kingsley H 355 the greater contains the less.

In other cases, the generic notion is not so salient, and we approach the concrete neuter: Norris P 128 he never did or said the expected, the ordinary | Caine C 131 photographs, chiefly of the nude and the seminude.

11.32. Sometimes the adjective approaches the meaning of a quality-noun (in -ness, etc.), as in Austen M 223 all the agreeable of her speculation was over for that hour. But English is not so free in that respect as German or Danish: “he sees the folly (or foolishness) of his action” corresponds to “er sieht das türliche seiner tat”, “han ser det tåbelige i sin handling”.

11.33. When the neutral notion to be expressed is perfectly concrete (a real singular in the strictest sense), the rule is to add the word thing to the adjective:

Fox 2.15 the only thing good [different from the only good] is, that people are made to feel unhappy | Hope D 59 it’s the very latest thing | the only thing (or the best thing) to be done | such a thing | Di D 194 it might have been a better and happier thing for my brother if he had never entered into such a marriage. Cf. something, etc. 17.3 and below, p. 504.

11.34. Only rarely is it in such cases still possible to use the adjective with the as a principal, thus especially with the same (which may be called a pronoun), the like (where it is possible to interpret the as the old instrumental: *ðy*: ‘[something] like that’), and the contrary:

Marlowe F 1307 the same I wish to you | Di D 194 nobody can say the same of us | Mill in Fox 2.249 Your letter was most welcome, and the same may be said of certain other missives | Benson J 176 To get tired and anxious was not the same as losing your personality [thus very frequent] | BJo 1.69 did you ever hear the like? |
11.34-11.38.]

Singular.

Goldsm 658 Was ever the like? | Stevenson JHF 206 I never heard the like of this | Garnett T 56 I should naturally have expected the contrary. Cf. p. 504 and vol. VII. 14.6.

11.35. With a possessive we have a neutral adjective principal in a few phrases: come to one's own (cf. AV John 1.11) | Thack H 85 when rogues fall out, honest men come by their own | hold one’s own | Wells N 218 [she] came up to London on her own [colloquial, also ‘on her own hook’] || I shall do my possible [= my best].

11.36. We have also neutral adjective principals in a certain number of stereotyped prepositional groups: nothing out of the common; cf. the rarer construction Caine C 2 she was taller than the common | Stevenson D 166 in the dead of night | Hardy L 163 her position was growing painful in the extreme | Quiller Couch M 54 the Milo had come from foreign (rare = ‘from abroad’, also ib 90) | to the full, e.g. Ru Sel 1.477 | Caine C 327 the moon was at the full | leave London for good | of old (e.g. GE A 66) | Kipl J 1.5 sleeping in the open | Hope R 103 as soon as the party came into the open | Di Do 215 (and frequent) it touches us to the quick [orig. ‘to the living’, sc. part of the body] | Caine C 19 such talk cut him to the quick | Harraden F 5 to probe her knowledge to its utmost quick | Austen M 200 to listen in quiet [rare] | Ridge L 250 we must get married on the quiet | Le Gallienne Y 191 my real name is Angelica; but they call me Angel for short | Hope Z 42 visit your disreputable cousin on the sly | Sh of a sudden, on the sudden, and on a sudden, Swift T 11 of a sudden, now generally all of a sudden. — Cf. p. 504.

11.37. In slang hard stands short for ‘hard labour’ (as a punishment): Hope D 33 Six months’ ‘hard’ wouldn’t be pleasant | Housman J 218 doing a fortnight hard for interfering with the police.—The ready is used by Fielding 3.431 (large share of the ready) = ‘ready money’, ‘cash’

11.38. A comparative is used as a principal in the phrases get (have) the better of something and a change for the better.
Superlatives in the same way: it is all for the best to make the best of (adverse circumstances, Merriman S 64) if you get the best of port [= the best port], port will get the best of you [overpower you] Ru C 55 going to church in their best [also common: in their Sunday best] Vachell H 258 “England at its best.” “And in its best” Hewlett Q 355 she did her bravest to be discreet | Macaulay H 2.206 he breathed his last a few days after | Mac Carthy 2.213 he had heard the last of the protests [not = the last protest] | Kipling J 2.20 when the last comes to the last | Caine S 2.85 the worst had come to the worst | not in the least (rarely: not in the smallest, once in Stevenson JHF).

In a different way (without any article): he slept most of the time | BJo 1.31 heap worst on evil | from first to last.—In at best, at last, at least, at most the definite article was originally used, and is still occasionally found; but in the ordinary form of the phrases it has disappeared from purely phonetic reasons: at the > atte > at, see | 2.624 and 6.36.

11.39. The neutral idea is often expressed by means of a relative clause with what or (after much, all) that instead of using the adjective as principal: Carlyle R 1.9 he never spoke of what was disagreeable and past | Benson J 205 she had shrunk from what was evil | GE Mm 233 her sense of what was becoming | Hawth 1.485 boys have no reverence for what is beautiful and holy, nor pity for what is sad | Di Do 104 he retained all that was strange, and old, and thoughtful in his character | Stevenson MB 184 bribery lay at the root of much that was evil in Japan.

These combinations are especially useful when the adjective is supplemented by some subjunct, as in the examples from Dickens and Stevenson; also when a different time (tense) has to be indicated: Brontë P 154 a clear morning, animating what had been depressed, tinting what had been pale.
Plural

11.41. An adjective is very often put in the plural (unchanged) with the definite article to denote the whole class: *the poor* as distinct from *the poor ones* (which singles out some among those just mentioned: not all aristocrats are rich; the poor ones . . .). Examples: AV Matth. 26.11 ye haue *the poore* alwayes with you | ib 5.3 Blessed are *the poore in spirit* | Morley M 1.153 England is a paradise for *the well-to-do*, a purgatory for *the able*, and a hell for *the poor* | Di D 13 Lazarus was raised up from *the dead* . . . the churchyard with *the dead* all lying in their graves | Ru Sel 1.3 In England, *the dead* are dead to purpose | ib 1.20 for the better amusement of *the fair and idle* | ib 1.236 *the redeemed* at the judgment | Grand T XV A help to *the helpless*, a guide to *the rash and straying*, a comfort to *the comfortless*, a reproach to *the reckless*, and a warning to *the wicked* | Johnson R 83 those modes to which *the vulgar* give the names of good and evil | Scott A 1.270 the eras by which *the vulgar* compute time | Caine E 260 *the military* have received their orders. — Cf. p. 504.

11.42. Thus very frequently *the many, the few*: Fox 1.195 James Mill rather hated *the ruling few* than loved *the suffering many* . . . Carlyle calls attention to the sufferings of *the many*.

*The absent* may be used in this way: “*the absent are always at fault*”. But *the present* cannot be so used, partly because it might be mistaken for the sb ('gift'), partly because *present* in its local signification is always placed after its substantive; therefore the contrast to *the absent* is *those present*, *the persons (people) present*, or *everybody present* (15.62). (“*Present company always excepted*”).

11.43. Sometimes the adjective is qualified by some addition: Mered E 192 with his poor income helping *the poorer than himself* ['helping those poorer than himself' would be more natural] | Mrs Browning A 246 *Fame's smallest trump* is a *great ear-trumpet for the deaf as posts*. 
**11.44.** Instead of the definite article we may have some other pronoun (in natural PE hardly any other than possessive): AV Matt. 8.22 let the dead bury their dead | Luke 6.20 Blessed be ye poor (20th C. Tr. Happy are you who are poor) || Bacon A 5.14 both for our whole, and for our sick; thus also 6.14, 6.30 | Yonge G 413 she went about among the other poor, teaching them the care of their sick | Masefield C 357 He reproached himself for having neglected his wounded | Kipl J 2.93 they do not kill their weaker for food, but for sport | Dickinson C 13 Your poor, your drunk, your incompetent, your sick, your aged, ride you like a nightmare || Ru U 159 these poor are of a race essentially different from ours. — Cf. Appendix p. 504 section 10.8.

Thus also like after a possessive pronoun: Thack S 155 they and their like are so utterly mean | Shaw 1.132 any man who has learnt how to treat women from you and your like.—Here the likes of them, of you (cf. 9.38) is by some considered as verging on vulgar language.

**11.45.** Sometimes we have a numeral or an indefinite adjective of number before the adjective: Sh H 5 IV. 1.315 Five hunared poore I haue in yeerely pay | Bacon A 4.30 you have many sick amongst you | Caine C 21 we have no poor in my parish.—This, however, is now generally avoided, and one says three kind people, many healthy people, etc. — Cf. below, p. 504.

While poor cannot stand by itself = 'poor people', the addition of idle, etc., makes it possible in Ru C 27 there are idle poor, and idle rich; and there are busy poor, and busy rich.

**11.51.** A special class consists of words denoting nationalities.

Adjectives in -sh are used in the plural with the definite article to denote the whole nation: the English, the British, the Irish, the Welsh, the Cornish (Fox 1.36), the French (ib 1.155 the French care most for persons, the English for things), the Dutch. Thus also the Manx.—Fox 2.195 the Swiss have their mountains, the French their Paris, the English their home. Happy English!
The Spanish is perhaps tending to replace the Spaniards: Seeley E 45 Central and South America fell principally to the Spanish and Portuguese.—Instead of the Scotch the form the Scots is often used; this may be either the pl of the sb Scot or the adj in its northern form; in this sense the Scottish is rare.

A whole class, though not the whole nation, is denoted in the same way: Swift J 187 All the Irish in town were there | Shelley Pr 277 the manners of the rich English are wholly unsupportable.

11.52. Instead of the definite article we may have another pronoun: Sh Alls II. 1.20 our French [comprehensive of the whole nation] | John II. 1.322 our lusty English || Tennys L 3.31 We English and Americans should all be brothers | Carlyle G 123 We English, especially we Scotch, love Burns more than any other poet | Mered H 21 none of you English have music in your smiles | Stevenson Dy 276 I thought you English like what you call a joke | Sh John II. 1.214 these French | ib 261 all these English | Fox 1.100 I won't receive any of these rascally English | Wells F 162 one of these British.

11.53. Sometimes the adjective is used without any defining word: Sh R2 IV. 1.137 The blood of English shall manure the ground | Sh John V. 5.3 when English measure backward their owne ground | Swift J 55 we have a cargo of Irish coming to London | By DJ 6.34 like Irish at a fair | Mered T 85 the usual over-supply of touring English of both sexes. This is now felt to be distinctly unnatural. — Cf. below, p. 504.

11.54. The use of these adjectives after numerals and similar adjectives is not quite natural nowadays: Fox 1.42 there are 200 English in her king's service | ib 1.123 an order to take up all the thirty or forty English then in Rome | Roosevelt A 295 six thousand British | Farquhar B 326 some English that I know, are not averse | Gibbon M 216 with several English | Ward E 62 a good
many other English | NP '05 other representative British and Americans.

11.55. When individual members of the nation are designed, the plural in -men or people is now nearly always used: these two Englishmen | all those French people | Ward M 127 We have had a nasty scene in the house [of Parliament] with the Irishmen | three or four Manxmen.

11.56. After we and you the plural Englishmen, etc., can also be used for the whole nation: More U 51 you Englsishe men | Mi Pr 301 We Englishmen | Fielding T 2.187 the manly instinct of sport which is the strenght of us Englishmen | Conway C 217 We Englishmen can neither understand nor sympathize with a man of his type | Doyle NP '95 you Frenchmen are living on a powder magazine. (Some people would evade the difficulty by saying you in France).

More U 83 and 84 uses the englishmen in speaking of the whole nation. Shakespeare uses once the Englishmen and 10 times the Frenchmen of the whole nation, but only in the first and second parts of Henry VI, for which Shakespeare is hardly responsible; elsewhere he says the English, the French.

11.57. Adjectives of nationality in -ese as well as Swiss are used in the same way in the plural to denote the whole nation, but as they have no plural corresponding to Englishmen, etc., the same form is also used in speaking of individuals: the Andamanese | the Cingalese (Lang C 16) | the Genoese | Review of R Apr '06. 385 Few strangers, except some Japanese, have ventured near the territory | the Maltese | Ru P 1.168 the higher Milanese were happy | the Piedmontese | Defoe R 343 two young Portuguese gentlemen . . . the two Portuguese | Swift 3.376 the honest Portugueze were amazed | Mered H 247 those dear Portuguese | Norris O 458 many small farmers, ignorant Portuguese and foreigners.

A Portuguese is found Defoe R 2.25; now it seems somehow to be avoided, and one says rather a Portugese man.
Chinese belongs to this class, though there is the alternative sb Chinaman, which in the sg is much more common; in the plural Chinamen and Chinese are used indiscriminately: Haggard S 79 as yellow as a Chinese | NP '06 refuse to engage any more Chinese. — Cf. p. 505.

11.58. All other names of nationalities take a plural in -s both when denoting the whole nation and individuals: Greeks, Germans, Italians, Russians, Turks, etc. Sweet S 83 Belgians, Swiss, Dutchmen, and Danes. In some of these, it will be noted, the adjective is different from the sb (Turk Turkish | Dane Danish | Spaniard Spanish), in others they have the same form (thus all in -an).

Names of uncivilized peoples are often used unchanged in the plural: the Eskimo, Bateke, Batungo (all from Westermarck M). — Cf. below, p. 505.

Half-pronominal Adjectives

11.61. While ordinary adjectives can thus only stand alone as principals with considerable restrictions, there is much greater freedom to use in this way quantitative adjectives and adjectives which have points of similarity with pronouns (cf. the use of some, all, both, etc. ch. XVII).

Numerals: seven of them were unmarried, and only two were married.

much: much in that book was obscure.

many: Sh Sonn 10.3 thou art belou’d of many.

more (sg): I shall have more to tell you when we get back | Mi PL 5.679 more in this place To utter is not safe.

more (pl): there are more of them behind | there are more than one who know of it. — Outside of these combinations with of and than generally more people.

most (sg): most of this is nonsense. Only before of.

most (pl): Stevenson M 127 I am worse than most
Adjectives as Principals. Ritchie M 19 Anne, who seemed to know most of the people.

little: little was said that evening.

less: less is known about Kyd than about Shakespeare. least seems only used in this way in the proverb "Least said, soonest mended".

few: few had seen him.

certain (pl) only before of: Carlyle in Tenn L 1.247 I have read certain of them [Tennyson's poems] over again | Gissing G 430 I shall throw overboard certain of my ambitions | ib R XI Certain of his reminiscences.

enough (sg): he had enough to live on. In the same way also sufficient and sometimes ample.
enough (pl) rare: she will have enough to admire her. Cf. Appendix below, p. 505.

II.62. such: What are such as he to me? | Mi SA 1631 from such as nearer stood | Goldsm 659 we don't meet many such.

the former, the latter (sg): frequently of persons, rarer as a neuter: Pinero S 22 he married her and took her away, the latter greatly to my relief. Cf. the genitive 9.542.

the former, the latter (pl) rarer: Hope D 61 She thinks no evil of the most attractive of women, and has a smile for the most unattractive of men. The former may constantly be seen in her house—and the latter as often as many people would think desirable | Doyle S 2.10 | Haggard S 125 the flowers and trees, the latter of which grew singly.—In the pl often these latter: Mac Carthy 2.328 the Conservatives . . . the professing Liberals . . . These latter would accept it.

other: see 17.7.
Chapter XII

Relations between Adjunct and Principal

12.11. The relation between an adjunct (attributive adjective) and its principal (generally a substantive) is not always so easy and simple as in a young lady. Here we may substitute a lady who is young: the adjective thus may without any change in the meaning of the whole be made into a predicative after (a relative pronoun +) is. Though this is not possible in the same way in the case of such pronominal and numeral adjectives as this in this lady, any in any lady, or two in two ladies, yet we feel that all these adjectives stand in the same relation, which we may call the direct relation, to the principal lady (or ladies). See 12.17.

12.12. It is different when we come to such a combination as an early riser, which it is quite impossible to turn into a riser who is early. Here the adjunct is a shifted subjunct of the verb contained in the substantive riser: he rises (vb) early (adv) = he is an early (adj) riser (sb). In the same way the adjunct in perfect simplicity is a shifted subjunct of the adjective contained in the substantive simplicity, cf. perfectly simple. We may call these shifted subjunct-adjuncts. See 12.2.

12.13. A third group contains those cases in which the adjunct qualifies only the beginning of the following word, as in the Pacific Islanders, derived from the Pacific Islands, or in a public schoolboy, cf. a public school (12.3).

12.14. Fourthly we have such cases as a sick room, meaning not a room that is sick, but a room that has something to do with the sick, a room for the sick. We may call them compositional adjuncts, because the adjective and the substantive form a kind of compound, cp. Danish et sygeværelse, G ein krankenzimmer, where the form is different from what it would be if it were a direct adjunct: et sygt værelse, ein krankes zimmer.
12.15. This cannot be sharply divided from a fifth class, “Other indirect adjuncts”, comprising among others such combinations as *all his born days*, *mid-ocean*, and *half this amount* (12.5).

12.16. The freedom with which adjectives are joined to substantives in English, and especially the great extension of the third and fourth classes, are evidently due to the want of inflexion in the adjectives, which therefore are in this respect like a substantival first-part of a compound. In such a language as German or Latin the adjective would have one definite ending indicating more or less distinctly gender, number, and case; but all of these are left indefinite in English combinations like *a heavy sleeper*, the *dirty* clothes-basket, a *public* school-boy, a *practical* joker, etc. A Latin speaker in analogous cases would hesitate where to refer the adjective, and therefore would refrain from such combinations. That there is a legitimate desire to frame them, is obvious since in German in spite of the incongruity of grammar we meet now and then with *eine reitende artilleriekaserne*, *der silberne kreuzbund*, etc. But while an Englishman sees little difficulty with *an old and new bookseller*, a German who would feel inclined to render the same idea would at once be confronted with the difficulty of inflexion, for if he said *ein alter und neuer buchhändler*, the ending -er in the adjectives would connect them too intimately with the -händler, and there is no inflexion available to connect them with buch-. Such occasional formations as *ein ausgestopfter tierhändler*, *ein wohlriechender wasserfabrikant*, are naturally ridiculed and avoided by careful writers, though Goethe has “*ein wilder schweinskopf*” and “*O sähst du, voller mondenschein*” and Heine (Werke, Volksausg. II 19) “*Beide schwatzten jetzt das gewöhnliche geschwätz von der grossen verschwörung gegen thron und altar . . . und reichten sich mehrmals die heiligen allianzhände*” and “*ein ehemaliger baumwollener nachtmützensfabrikant.*” Sometimes also such combinations as *ein armesündergesicht* or
Direct Adjuncts

12.17. This group calls for very few remarks. The purpose for which the adjunct is added is generally that of specifying the principal: this man, young men, the tallest man, etc. A vigorous attempt is more specific than (an) attempt by itself. This is also the case when an adjunct is added to a proper name, though this in itself is highly specialized: young Burns means either a different person from old Burns, or if applied to the one individual shown from the situation or context, it means that man in his youth or with some emphasis laid on the fact of his being still young. Immortal Shakespeare does not mean a different individual from Shakespeare but it specifies one side of the man designed by the name. In other cases the adjunct does not serve to specify in the proper sense of that word, but to indicate how many individuals of the class are included: two men, many men, all men, any man, one man, also a man (quantitative adjuncts). It is of course possible to join both kinds of adjuncts to the same substantive: two young men, these two men, etc. (15.1).

Shifted Subjunct-Adjuncts

12.21. First we take instances in which the adjective used as adjunct has the same form as the adverb that would be used with the verb or adjective contained in the substantive. — Cf. below, p. 505.

Sh Ro 546 the longer liuer (= he who lives longer, cp. R3 III. 4.24 I have been long a sleeper) | Sh H5 IV. 1.6 our bad neighbour makes vs early stirres | Sh Shr IV.
2.11 Quick proceeders, marry | Ru Sel 1.119 the harder workers | Thack P 2. 118 one of the hardest livers and hardest readers of his time at Oxbridge | Collingwood R 272 half the seats taken by earlier comers | Bennett A 203 late comers | Austen M 408 he was always guided by the last speaker | Wells U 143 first offenders | Wells T 71 the late-comer's room || sold to the highest bidder (cf. French, Augier, Les Effrontés (III. 302) on livre cette arme au plus offrant) || Bacon Ess 45 Boldnesse is an ill keeper of promise | Ru C 47 borrowers are nearly always ill-spenders | Hawth 1.493 long travellers, before whom lay a hundred miles of railroad.

In the following quotation Spanish talkers is not = 'Spaniards talking', but = (Englishmen) able to talk Spanish: Masefield C 228 He's the only one who really knows Spanish ... But you could get Spanish talkers here ... you sailed from London without a Spanish talker.

With other endings in the substantive than -er:
Mered E 447 he is a hard student (= studies hard) | Ellis EEP V. 54 a specimen written on the spot by a long resident || Tenn 135 his long wooing her.

12.221. Next we have those cases in which the adverb would have had the ending -ly; in some of the quotations the adjective would also be possible with a substantive that contains no verb (so virtuous a man, etc.), in others the meaning is obviously different:

Ch B 1024 So vertuous a louver | More U 284 viscous liuers | ib 191 so earnest and paynesfull a follower of vertue | Sh Cy III. 3.9 prouder liuers | Sh Macb I. 3.70 you imperfect speakers | Sh Alls III. 6.11 an infinite and endlesse lyar, an hourly promise-breaker | Sh Err II. 2.89 the plainer dealer | Franklin 45 I never knew a prettier talker | Di D 226 Mrs. Strong was a very pretty singer [= sang very prettily]: as I knew, who often heard her singing by herself | Doyle B.158 we were both fair runners | Austen E 55 I am a very slow walker | ib 155 her aunt
was such an eternal talker | Brontë P 70 an incessant and indiscreet talker | Thack N 102 light sleepers | Di Do 222 I'm a heavy sleeper at first, and a light one towards morning | Doyle G 60 a very high and strong snorer | Ru F 89 being on the whole infinite gainers | a strict observer of the rules of etiquette | Darwin L 1.224 he was a dreadful sufferer from sea-sickness (not = dreadful man who suffered . .) | Trollope D 1.258 become deep sufferers | ib 1.182 a probable winner of the Derby | ib 1.276 a fluent speaker | GE A 10 They're curious talkers i' this country | Bennett W 2.57 a glib liar | Hewlett Q 495 you and I have been open dealers with each other | Stevenson JHF 33 a close observer | Spect 88 an universal encourager of liberal arts | NP '12 a wide traveller | Hankin 3.82 I should be your eternal debtor | Spencer E 2.406. the habitual sufferer | Stevenson V 64 the habitual liar | Escott E 417 repeated offenders (Shaw P 230 they are habitual thieves and murderers) | Merriman V 48 she is an impressive dresser when she tries. — Cf. below, p. 505.

A flat denial of her words.

Defoe R 2.25 an exceeding difficulty.

12.222. The word stranger is grammatically a substantive, but it signifies very much the same thing as an adjective and therefore often has an adverbial adjunct; a perfect stranger is not a stranger who is perfect, but one who is quite a stranger (cf. a perfect mystery):

Sterne 11 you and I are in a manner perfect strangers to each other | Fielding T 2.296 she was an entire stranger in that part of the world | Di Do 42 Entire strangers to his person had lifted his yellow cap off his head | Carlyle S 121 they were the entiest strangers | Stevenson C 57 a comparative stranger | Wells T 78 your kindness to a total stranger. — Cf. below, p. 505.

In the same way fool and other substantives are treated in Di D 110 your are a positive fool sometimes | Ward R 280 a precious fool | Hope D 29 Alice was a positive fright | Wilde Im 11 a dreadful invalid | Hope D 15
her particular friend | NP '99 to buy a few absolute necessities.

12.23. When the same substantive has one direct and one shifted adjunct, the latter must be placed nearest, to the sb as in Stevenson JHF [p. ?] an ordinary secret sinner | Coleridge B 30 a young and rapid writer (= a young man who writes rapidly).

The adjunct may of course have a subjunct as in Ru P 1.79 my father was an absolutely beautiful reader of the best poetry.

12.241. It is notable that adjectives indicating size (great, small, etc.) are used as shifted equivalents of adverbs of degree (much, little, etc.). A great admirer of Tennyson, cf. F un grand admirateur de T. Thus in: More U 51 your shepe, that were wont to be .. so smal eaters. now be become so great deuowerers | Sh Tw I. 3.90 I am a great eater of beepe | Bunyan G 12 I had been a great and grievous sinner | Sheridan 99 I am the greatest sufferer | Thack S 13 he was an enormous eater | Ru P 1.156 he was one of the smallest and rarest eaters | Shaw-D *50 large and constant consumers of pâté de foie gras.

Cf. great in great friends (Wilde L 158 we were immense friends) and small in Raleigh Sh 31 Mary Arden was a small heiress (hardly natural).

Much is rare as in Lamb E 2. VII Your long and much talkers hated him.

12.242. Related instances are: Defoe R.2.243 I was a considerable owner of the ship (also 244) | Bennett W 1.295 he had been a considerable owner of property | Fielding 3.446 Bagshot being . . . a considerable winner | Beaconsf I. 219 the Cardinal was an entire believer in female influence, and a considerable believer in his influence over females | Lang C 16 strong believers in the mystic tree-felling || Hamerton F 2.15 a large class of total abstainers between meals. || Defoe R. 83 I was as yet but a sorry workman || Shelley L. 708 he is an excessive bore.
Cp., on the other hand, Stevenson M 280 we are immensely gainers—where we have a subjunct to the verb.

12.243. The adjective utter is never used except as a shifted adjunct corresponding to the adverb utterly. Shakespeare has it in three places: utter darkness, the utter loss of all the realm, to thy soul disgrace and utter ruin of the house of York (H4A III. 3.42, H6A V. 4.112, H6C I.1.254).

Swift T 45 his utter detestation of it | Macaulay E 4.15 all rights were in a state of utter uncertainty | Smedley F I. 216 this utter impossibility | Swinburne L 207 your utter disregard of discipline | Ru Sel 1.183 all other laws or limits he sets at utter defiance (|= sets utterly at d.) | Thack P 3.357 an utter scoundrel.

Also most utter: Bale T 707 to hys most utter damp-nacyon | Haggard S 93 with a look of the most utter tenderness that I ever saw | Habberton Hel B 215 with the most utter in concern. This shows, by the way, that utter is no longer a comparative.

Utmost has somewhat of the same character, being often found in combinations like with the utmost care = "very carefully indeed."

12.25. The adjective is a shifted subjunct of the adjective contained in a nexus-substantive, thus especially often after with, because by this means the crowding of two adverbs in -ly is conveniently avoided: with perfect ease, with absolute freedom, with approximate accuracy is better than the clumsy expressions perfectly (sub-subjunct) easily, absolutely freely, approximately accurately.

Examples: Di D 204 she drove on with perfect indifference | Thack P 255 He went into a second examination, and passed with perfect ease | Stevenson T the smoke, to which we owed our comparative safety | Wells M 50 the entire impracticability of Mr Galton’s two suggestions | Smedley F 2.40 such an entire forgetfulness of self | Austen P 188 I cannot say that. I regret my comparative insigni-
290 Relations between Adjunct and Principal. [12.25—12.271.

fiance | Ridge G 45 at the thought of their comparative unimportance || a positive impossibility.

12.261. Sometimes comparative and apparent are used as adjuncts though logically we should rather expect a subjunct to the adjective: with little comparative loss instead of with comparatively little loss: Peacock S 36 they had little comparative success | McCarthy 2.217 allegations of slight comparative importance || Shaw D 39 neither P's years nor B's majesty have the smallest apparent effect on him | McCarthy 2.305 he had at one time no apparent chance of succeeding.

12.262. Similarly in the following examples, what would logically be the subjunct of a verb (expressed or unexpressed) is joined in the form of an adjective to some substantive: Doyle S 6.148 she had the exact physical [= had exactly the physical] characteristics which H. had divined | London A 67 when I was fourteen I was Dad's actual housekeeper | Kipl S 61 you are thieves—regular burglars [cp. in a different sense: regular verbs] | Doyle S 6.197 we could dimly see the occasional figure of an early workman as he passed us | Roberts M 159 Seen nude, he had the figure of a possible athlete | Shaw D *93 treat every death as a possible and, under our present system, a probable murder | Bennett W 1.230 Cyril the theoretic cypher (= who theoretically was . . .) | Doyle S 6.145 What your motives are, or what exact part you play in this strange business, I am not able to say | Lane Cooper, Function of Leader (1912) 1 the precise service which the scholar renders to the State is by no means evident.

Cf. no = 'not a' (16.74 f.) and such in Hope D 9 I don't call her such a bad-looking girl [= so bad-looking] 16.46.

12.271. When no adjective form is available, the adverb itself may be used as an adjunct to the substantive, the verbal or adjectival idea of which it qualifies. Thus often (cf. similar Danish instances, Dania I 273 f.): More U 199 the ofte use myghte make the werye
therof | Sh As IV. 1.19 my often rumination | AV I Timothy V. 23 thine often infirmities | Mi SA 382 by oft experience | Locke Educ. sect. 66 and see, by often trials, what turn they take | Tenn 319 pang of wrench'd or broken limb—an often chance in these brain-stunning shocks | Carlyle S 28 the greatest and oftenest laugher?

There is an interesting example in Beaumont 4.323, which shows the close relation between the substantive in -er and the verb: She is no often speaker, But when she does, she speaks well.—In the NED oft and often here are reckoned as adjectives: “very common in 16th and 17th c., but rare after 1688”.

Seldom: NED says, “Obs. [as adj.] exc. occas. with agent-n. or noun of action.” Lamb (q) Seldom-readers are slow readers | NP 91 (q) to the seldom speakers.

Soon is not used in itself as an adjective, yet we have the superlative Sh H5 III. 6.120 the soonest winner | Sh Ant III. 4.27 make your soonest hast.

12.272. Almost (cf. Cicero pro Lig. § 36 in hac prope æqualitate fratrum; French cette presque certitude, la presque identite, une presqu’île): Austen S 311 the almost impossibility of their being already come | Thack V 304 an almost reconciliation | id P 672 the almost terror with which she saw the black-veiled nuns | Lang T 20 thirty years had turned the almost Jacobin into an almost Jacobite | Orr Handb. to Browning 317 the almost certainty of death.

Thus also sometimes even where the verbal or adjectival character of the substantive is not clear: Darwin Life 1.336 that grand subject, that almost keystone of the laws of creation | Saintsbury Eliz Lit 171 the almost tragedy of Hero | Di T 2.135 the pretty almost-child’s head.

All-but: Carlyle SR 64 the all-but Omnipotence of early culture and nurture | Gissing R 198 the all but certainty. Cf. below, p. 505.

12.273. Thorough (which is originally an adverb, a bye-form of through, see 1.5.41) is now, in combinations
like his thorough knowledge, thorough honesty, a thorough gentleman (Beaconsf L 478), thorough respecters of themselves (Stevenson JHF 18) etc., felt as a real adjective (cf. Thackeray S 42 a most thorough Snob), and a new adverb is formed in -ly: he knows it thoroughly.

12.274. Less in Byron's (Ch Har II. 66, 592) "When less barbarians would have cheered him less" may formally be either an adjective or an adverb; cf. Ruskin F 152 as he regards the less or more capacity.

12.28. The use of adverbs and adjectives with the verbal substantive in -ing offers some peculiarities, which will be treated elsewhere. Dickens writes (M 347) Mark actually held him to prevent his interference foolishly, until his temporary heat was past. Here interference is constructed like interfering; interference foolish would naturally be an impossible word-order, and his foolish interference would imply a more definite idea than is reconcilable with prevent (as if the adj + subst. were preceded by the definite article).—Ruskin S *30 "reading doubtfully moral novels" is interesting, because it is = reading novels of doubtful morals.

12.29. In the following quotation the adjective unhanged is logically a predicative connected with the subject of the verb continue which is contained in the substantive: Tarkington Guest of Quesnay 156 another, whose continuance unhanged is every hour more miraculous. Cf. also Bennett A 12 her continuance in activity was a notable illustration of the dominion of mind over matter | Hope In 44 Life alone at twenty-six is—lonely | Lamb E 2.178 a process comparable to flaying alive | Haggard S 214 the burial alive of the victims | Lang T 155 his fight, unarm-ed, in Guinevere's chamber, against the felon knights [Note here the commas]. Cf. 15.75 and below, p. 505.

Partial Adjuncts

12.3. The phenomenon that an adjective qualifies not the whole of the substantive it precedes, but only
the former part of it, is pretty frequent with derivatives and compounds. On the formal aspect of some of these phenomena see vol. VI. — We take derivatives first.

12.311. The combination sound sleeper besides being an adjective + a substantive can also be analyzed as a derivative in -er from the combination sound sleep. Such derivatives are not unfrequent; a clear instance is a Quarterly Reviewer, which could not be analyzed as a reviewer who is quarterly; it is written as above in Henderson's Scotch Literature 361, but Huxley in Darwin's Life 2.184 writes the 'Quarterly' reviewer and thus takes reviewer more as an independent word. Further the first-nighters = those who go to "first-nights" at theatres. There is no such word as nighter. — Cf. vol. VI 14.3.

12.312. In the following examples, which are arranged according to the endings, it will be seen that the manner of writing is very inconsistent:

NP '98 the London cheap tripper | Doyle S 5.107 driven out of our own house by a practical joker | Sheridan 284 a close prisoner | Caine E 258 the War Office had called up the old-timers of two successive years | a natural philosopher | Westermarck Marriage 275 the Pacific Islanders | McCarthy 2.121 the Irish Home rulers [= those in favour of Irish home rule, not necessarily Irishmen themselves] | NP '09 Syndicate of white slavers | NP '06 the Free Fooders | NP '06 the Free Staters (= inhabitants of the Orange Free State) | New Englanders | the Little Englanders — defined by Chamberlain, see Review of Reviews Febr. 1899 p. 112: "the Little Englander is a man who honestly believes that the expansion of this country carries with it obligations which are out of proportion to its advantages" | book title 1905 "The Awful Dangers which surround all smokers and intoxicating drinkers" | Peacock S 39 a

NP 1909 a wireless operator.

Escott E 418 the Grand Jurors [= members of the Grand Jury] | Zangwill G 212 [the Home Secretary]: I've
never been a criminal lawyer | Spencer A 1.475 he had himself been a nervous sufferer.

Matthews Amer Fut 278 a meeting packt with Southern sympathizers [= who sympathized with the South in the Civil War] | Shaw D 16 general practitioners.

Fox 2.72 into young-ladylike order.

NP white slavery (cf. white slaver above, p. 293) | Mered E 282 the great-gunnery talk at table.

Ward E 2.44 in some sort of elder-brotherly fashion.

Kipl M 188 it suited him to talk special-corrrespondently.

By DJ 1.211 [magazines] Daily, or monthly, or three monthly (cf. 7.5). — Cf. vol. VI 22.7.

Di Do 25 almost with an air of joint proprietorship.

Thack V 531 she resumed her fine-ladyship | ib 473 the stage of old-fellow-hood | Egerton K 99 vanished scenes of small-boyhood | Thack S 128 swell into bloated old-bachelorhood | Harraden D 27 from girlhood into young womanhood.

Spectator 113 Natural historians | Wilde In 164 a Royal Academician | Steadman Oxf. 213 Indian Civilians (= candidates for the Indian civil service) | NP '09 A Remarkable Civil Servant. The Civil Service has suffered a great loss.

NP '11 as noisy as a far Western bar-room.

Pinero B 10 you needn't be quite so newly married-womanish with me.

Ballantyne First 156 mistakes—geographical, topographical, natural-historical, and otherwise | Carpenter C 70 a fourth-dimensional meditation | London War of Classes 183 the energy of the British merchant is being equalled by other nationals [= people belonging to other nations].

Hawthorne Sn 21 an exceedingly common-sensible way of looking at matters; cf. NED with other quotations, also for common-sensical.

Ward E 437 a piece of her fine-ladyism | Stevenson MP 88 Free-Churchism | Caine C 287 solitary old maidism | GE A 31 Nature, that great tragic dramatist | Fox 1.94 an
admirable fossil geologist | Bellamy L 20 the small capitalist | Shaw J 7 a Local Optionist | a political economist | a yellow journalist | Sweet OET *7 the well known low Latinist, Mijnheer Hessels | White N 40 a new religionist (? Swift T 12 a good sizeable volume). — Cf. below, p. 505.

Darwin Desc 572 female infanticide (also Wells A 94 and U 181, frequent in Westermarck M).

From general paralysis is abstracted the general paralytics (e.g. Ellis Man 399) and from painless dentistry similarly a painless dentist; a man in San Francisco advertised himself as Painless Anderson.

In Hardy L 49 “she had become the Reverend Mrs. Cope” the adjective Reverend really qualifies the “Mr.” which is latent in “Mrs.” (cf. Mrs. John Cope = the wife of Mr. John Cope).

A similar phenomenon with a post-adjunct is found in Tenn 452 knighthood-errant [= knight-errantry].

12.313. The same substantive may have two adjuncts of different order, but the one belonging only to the first part of it must precede it immediately as in London A 93 in approved, returned-Queenslander style.

12.314. With the use of small cordiality (meaning that she was little, i.e. not, cordial) cf. the above remarks (12.241) on great, etc.: Ward M 201 Mary greeted him with an evident coldness. In spite of her small cordiality...

12.321. With compound substantives we have similar phenomena. No difficulty is presented if the adjective belongs to the whole compound (or, as we may say, to the last element of the compound as modified by the first), as in an old clergyman, a young bookseller, a big steamboat, etc. But in other cases the adjective belongs to the first element, or, what amounts to the same thing, the first element of the compound consists of an adjective + a substantive. In some cases stress shows clearly where the adjective belongs, as in everyday speech with half-stress on day, or (as Sweet points out, Transact.
Philol. Soc. 6 June 1879) in *dead letter office* with full stress on *letter*, half-stress on *dead*; if *dead* qualified *office*, it would have had full stress. (Cf. on unity-stress I. 5.311 and 312). But in many cases of free composition, especially with long words, there is no such audible sign of the manner of composition. The usual spelling will sometimes, but not always indicate it, as appears from the following examples. Thackeray (P 2. 2) writes “a Long Vacation tour” and thus by the artifice of a capital letter shows that *Long* qualifies *Vacation* and not *tour*; but in many cases nothing save the natural meaning to be attributed to the combination shows the grammatical relation. — Cf. vol. VII 9.37.

**12.322.** The following examples are loosely arranged according to the firmness of connexion; beginning with those instances in which the adjective and the first-word are closely connected, and ending with those in which the tie is stronger between the two component substantives, and in which accordingly the adjective seems to have been added to a ready-made whole. No fixed boundaries are found, and in such instances as *a public schoolboy* (Wells N 67) the connexion is equally firm on both sides.

*Everyday* speech | Beaconsf L 243 he was a *high churchman* | ib 244 I am a *free churchman* | Thack P 1.199 the news formed the subject of talk at *high-church, low-church, and no-church* tables | Caine C 301 *High Churchmen, Low Churchmen, and No Churchmen* | Carlyle S 197 two *full-length* mirrors | Thack P 1.289 an old *half-pay* officer | *every system of one-man* rule | Di Do 54 the *powdered-head* and pig-tail period | Twain Mississ 112 *old-time* steamboats | Wells A 162 *long distance* electrical typesetting | ib 21 the *first-class long-distance* passenger | Vachell H 39 That bruise over your eye has taken off your *painted-doll* look | Doyle S 6.24 our *black-silk* face-coverings | Macdonnell F 312 confidence in the *good-citizen* qualities of his countrymen.
Black F 43 an all-night club | Doyle S 1.258 an all-night sitting | Darwin Life 1.301 for my some-day work to be so called.

Stevenson JHF 38 an incessant and old-world kindness of disposition' (The and shows that old-world is almost an independent adjective, cf. 13.31).

Bentham (quoted NED) The daily, more than the every other day, papers.

Holmes A 218 she leaves her virtuous-indignation countenance | Shaw D *50 tame stag hunters | ib *58 the tame-stag-hunter | Hughes T 2.208 the elder brother sort of state | Malory 128 he found hym self by a depe welle syde.

a mutual admiration society | Archer A 135 the kernel of the matter lay in the fugitive slave question | Thack P 1.126 fine-gentleman airs | Hughes T 1.68 our coachman is a cold beef man [= prefers cold beef] | ib 69 the bottled beer corks.

Franklin A 52 a pale alehouse | Spectator 171 a Common-prayer Book (now often spelt a common Prayer-book) | a ready-made boot shop | Old and New Bookseller | New and Second-hand Bookseller | Ward D 1.251 the old bookstalls | Arnold Poems 1.135 the golden mace-bearer | an average private schoolboy | Poe S 109 in moderate weather the fastest sailer . . . her qualities, however, as a rough sea-boat were not so good | Fowler, Professor's Children 3 the dirty clothes-basket | Wells M 77 the infantile death rate | Lang T 172 a first-rate historical playwright | old clothesmen.

A considerable shareholder (Thack H 85) must be placed with the use of great above 12.241.

There is a peculiar expression in Swift 3.240 his opposite party-man (= the man of the party opposite to him).

12.323. It will be seen that mistakes in most cases are out of the question, even in such cases as the dirty clothes-basket, where dirty will immediately be referred to clothes, though there is nothing intrinsically impossible in the connexion of the two ideas dirty and
basket. Not even when there are two adjuncts, one belonging to the first-word, and the other to the whole compound, as in some of the quotations, or in Stevenson D 200 the belated baked-potato man or in Ru Sel 1.370 no existing highest-order art, can any misunderstanding really arise as to the meaning of the group.

12.324. The following instances of adjective + sb as first word show a gradual transition to the phrase-adjuncts (quotation adjuncts) to be considered below (14.8):

Caine M 45 I’m a one-woman man, but loving one is giving me eyes for all | Mered H 260 a ‘no-nonsense’ fellow | NP ’06 a “No Nonsense Cabinet”, backed by a three-to-one majority | Sharp, Academy 17/8 '88 mere cleverness—a quality often sneered at, probably for the “sour grapes” reason.

12.325. A pronominal adjunct belongs to the first-word in the familiar questions: What age person is she? What size gloves do you take? Thus also in what countryman (Sh Tw V. 238, cf. Abbott § 423; Defoe R 300 what countrymen they were; Spectator 112; Sh Pericl V. 1.103 what countrywoman). This is also found in Danish (hvad landsmand er han?); but the corresponding combinations with other pronominal adjectives is more peculiar: this countryman (NED from 1570 Thynne; I have only found it as a rusticism in GE A 10 I’m not this countryman | ib 294 whether he was a this country-man; of. Masefield C 297 what strange horses. Are they imported?—No, sir. This country horses), no countrymen (NED 1708), other countryman (NED 1856 Emerson). Thus also More U 29 certeyne of his contrey shyppes | Bacon Ess. on Travel: he doth not change his country manners for those of foreign parts, and probably Ch Ros 6332 What-euer mister man am I.

12.326. I add a few examples in which the meaning clearly shows the adjective to belong to the whole compound (to the last component):
Thack V 236 in his big school-boy handwriting (big qualifies neither school nor boy nor hand) | Holmes A 236 in small school-girl letters | Quincey 81 her sweet Madonna countenance | Shaw M 170 in comfortable bachelor lodgings.

12.331. Genitival compounds (compounds the first-word of which is in the genitive case) are not formally distinguished from mere (free) groups of words the first of which is in the genitive case; an adjective before such a combination may therefore belong either to the genitive word or to the compound. As a rule, however, the genitive case of an adjective + substantive is avoided in all those cases in which the genitive + the following word might be mistaken as a genitive compound. There is nothing to prevent such a genitive as the stout Major's eyes; as eyes cannot be stout, the adjective can go with Major only. But in speaking of the same man's wife, one would say the wife of the stout Major, and the combination the stout Major's wife would be reserved for the case in which the adjective qualifies the (Major's) wife (thus Thack V 250). Similarly twelve peacocks' feathers means twelve feathers, not all the feathers of twelve peacocks, and many beginners' books means many books for (or written by) beginners: on the whole genitive plurals of substantives qualified by adjectives are avoided in English. — Cf. below, p. 506.

12.332. Other examples of adjectives belonging to genitival compounds: Sh As III. 2.11 And how like you this shepherds life? | Cor V. 3.27 those doves eyes | Austen M 219 from being the mere gentleman's residence, it becomes the residence of a man of education, taste ... [doubtful example] | Thack V 299 that snug and complete bachelor's residence | Thack P 1.5 written in a great floundering boy's hand (cf. the examples above of boy hand in the same signification) | Tenn 125 Enoch Arden, a rough sailor's lad | Ward D 2.155 a bright, untranslatable artist's language | Ward R 2.177 that independent exciting student's life | Shaw D 194 a man with ... faithful dog's eyes | Gissing B 83 interrupted by a loud visitor's knock at the front door.
12.333. In Sh Macb II. 2.227 “with these hangmans hands” the number of the word in the genitive case shows clearly that the adjective belongs to the whole compound. But in most cases only the place of the apostrophe shows whether we have the gen sg or pl, and many inconsistencies are found in writing and printing (7.4).

12.334. We have, however, genitive compounds in which the adjective forms part of the first element: New Year’s Eve | Malory 41 vpon neve yeersday | GE M 2.180 Maggie was introduced for the first time to the young lady’s life | Stevenson JHF 179 that is only an old wives’ tale. —Sh H8 III. 1.169 “with these weak womens fears” may be doubtful.

12.335. Sometimes we have two adjectives, the first of which belongs to the whole compound and the second to the first element only:

ML F 574 these are trifles and mere old wife’s tales | Stevenson T 204 a haggard, old man’s smile | Thack P 2.153 I live on my younger brother’s allowance (not = the allowance of my younger brother, but = my allowance as a younger brother).

12.336. A possessive pronoun before a genitive may, of course, belong to it, as in my uncle’s hat = the hat of my uncle, but as soon as there is a possibility of the combination being mistaken for a genitive compound, to which (or to the latter part of which) the possessive might belong, the of-combination is preferred: the heart of her mother, while her mother’s heart = her heart which was a mother’s heart, was like a mother’s. This is sometimes puzzling, as in GE M 2.40 filled for the moment with nothing but the memory of her child’s feelings (= those feelings she had had as a child, not those of her child).

Examples: Ch A 3169 told his cherles tale | ib 3917 in his cherles termes | Sh R3 IV. 1.79 my woman’s heart | Sh Macb I. 5.48 come to, my womans brests | Tw V. 280 in thy womans weedes | Meas V. 358 show your knaes
visage | Greene F IX. 93 Hercules appears in his lion’s skin | ib XIV. 47 in her nun’s attire | Goldsm 646 I put on my housewife’s dress to please you | Thack P 1.265 in his freshman’s year | ib 1.311 he appeared in his bachelor’s gown | Thack V. her woman’s instinct . . . her woman’s eyes | Tenn 194 you look well in your woman’s dress | Di Do 434 her angel’s face | Ward D 2.257 his tradesman’s circumstances . . . his bookseller’s profession | Mered E 287 his chivalrous devotion to his gentleman’s word of honour | Ru Sel 2.34 that John Bull’s manner of yours | Swinb E 890 that I may give this poor girl’s blood of mine. 

Note the singular in Mrs. Browning A 236 ’tis our woman’s trade To suffer torment for another’s ease.

12.337. We may have two substantive genitives after one another, the first belonging to the compound made up of the second and the last substantive:

Wright’s ed. of Sh As 165 Rosalind’s woman’s shape | Thack P 2.344 the girls’ milliner’s bills.

But as a rule of is preferred, as in Ru Sel 1.253 the monk’s visions of Fra Angelico (= FA’s monkish visions).

Compositional Adjuncts

12.41. Adjectives may be first-words in compound substantives. To the eye there is generally no difference between these cases and those in which the adjective stands in the ordinary relation of attribute to its substantive; but in the case of a deaf-and-dumb teacher, dumb would receive stronger stress if it meant a teacher for the deaf and dumb than if it meant a teacher who was so himself. In “a sick room” sick really stands in the same relation to room as dining or bed in dining-room and bedroom; and it is impossible to substitute “a room that was sick”; a similar test shows that in his married life or the single state the adjective is really a first-word. But it must be admitted that in some cases it is not easy to distinguish between this and a direct adjunct.—Cf. p. 506 f.
12.42. Examples: Sh John IV. 1.52 at your sick service | Sh Alls II. 3.118 my sickly bed | Swift P 140 this is my sick dish; when I am well, I'll have a bigger | Mered E 446 in the sick-chamber | Buchanan Anthony 123 he had been out making sick calls all the afternoon | on sick leave | a lunatic asylum | Holmes A 47 persons in insane hospitals | Ru Sel 1.318 ragged schools | Lamb E 1.157 a blind charity (= charity for the blind)! Lang T 88 the subtlety of the mad scenes [in Maud] | the poor law | Shaw D *39 in a poor practice the doctor must find cheap treatments for poor people... the poor doctor.

her married life | Mi PL IV. 750 wedded love | (Di Do 496 the last night of her maiden life) | Ward M 455 walks with Kitty in their engaged or early married days [NB early stands differently from married] | Orr L 254 the first period of Mr. Browning's widowed life | Stevenson V 34 goodness in marriage is a more complicated problem than mere single virtue.

Byron Ch H I. 88 (902) female slaughter [female may, of course, be a subst.] | Ellis M 407: 53 per cent. of male committals were of recidivists.

Lamb E 2.212 The children of the very poor have no young times | Grand T 90 no girl in my young days would have acted so outrageously | Swinb L 85 you don't look at things in a grown-up way | GE M I. 210 grown-up life | (Di D 252 the first really grown-up party that I have ever been invited to) | Shaw J *19 as if men were Protestants by temperament and adult choice | Di Do 110 to fill a junior situation.

late fee letters | Caine C 61 if we can get a late pass.

12.43. Franklin A 177 on our idle days [= the days on which we were idle] | GE A 107 his lazy time after dinner | Fielding T 1.285 drunken quarrels | Mrs Browning A 108 the drunken oaths | Macaulay H 2.129 within living memory [= the m. of people still living] | Hawth 1.477 consign him to a living tomb | Sh Hml V. 2.367 he ha's my dying voyce | By DJ 7.27 the missing list [=
list of those missing after a battle] | Hardy L 29 the discomfort caused at night by the half-sleeping sense that a door has been left unfastened | Thack P 3.407 my waking and sleeping thoughts | Di Do 378 half-waking dreams | ib 379 her waking grief was part of her dream. (These -ings might be considered as ing-substantives as also some of the following):

Goldsm 646 Is it one of my well-looking days | Defoe R 111 the 30th was my well day of course | Darwin L I. 350 worked on all well, days.

Poe S 148 a case of living inhumation | Byron 382 a living grave | id 382 Nor reach, his dying hand—nor dead | Defoe P 51 dead-carts | Fielding 3.571 the dead-warrant, as it is called, now came down to Newgate for the execution of Heartfree (= what is now called death-warrant) | a dead salesman (= he who sells meat without being a butcher) | Caine E 564 the muffled drums had played the Dead March; cf. dadd money, dadd list, NED dead B 6 and D 1.2. 1 below, p. 507.

12.44. Measures are divided into liquid measures and dry measures.

Thack N 301 the Insolvent Court [note the capital I!] | McCarthy 2.105 a well-known criminal lawyer [might also be taken as criminal law + the ending -(y)er, cf. above 12.311] | Carpenter P 41 criminal executions | ib 45 the judgments of the criminal courts | (ib 50 the civil courts) | the condemned cells [= cells for those condemned] | Di T 1.82 a species of Condemned Hold | Keir Hardie (book-title) The Unemployed Problem, 1904 | the Foreign Office | Sheridan 278 the ledger of the lost and stolen office | Bennett C 1.122 lost and found notices.

12.45. A Greek student = a student of Greek: Shelley L 861 Mary has been a Greek student several months | Carlyle F 125 one of my German hearers last

1 Note the equivalent burial alive because alive cannot be preposed (12.9).
year [= one of the hearers of my lectures on G. literature] | Wister R 14 the two Indian police [= white men policing the Indians]. — Cf. below, p. 507.

Quincey Op 24 a young and rising American merchant; by which I mean, that he was an Englishman who exported to the United States | Di N 427 the Brothers Cheeryble were German-merchants | Thack P 3.214 mercers and ornamental dealers | Di D 176 a little shop (it was what we used to call a general shop) | Thack V. 299 a small green shop | at cooperative prices [= prices of cooperative societies] | a musical writer [= writer on musical topics] | a miscellaneous writer | Gosse Mod E Lit 16 it is a critical error to dismiss Troilus and Cressida as a mere paraphrase [cf. a scribal error] | a Great-Western train.

Collingwood R 389 'Modern Painters' had been also on the condemned list | unseen translation | Benson B 43 he underlined one of the notes with a purple indelible pencil | Keats 2.149 the ripe hour came | NP '13 he worked himself into a white heat | Wells L 115 He stared at her in white astonishment | in red-hot- agitation.

12.46. Here we may also place long credit (= credit for a long period) | Galsworthy P 54 [a man charged with assault] I shall feel much safer if he gets a good long sentence.

McCarthy 2.43 a comprehensive system of native education, especially female education | Doyle S 4.15 he was raised to commissioned rank | Wells L 227 I don't want a resident post. “Precious few non-resident shops” | ib 231 a non-resident place | ib 241 resident vacancies.

Sh Macb I. 3.84 the insane root [= root causing madness] | Fox 1.271 the silent system [in prisons].

12.47. The combination old age must also be analysed as a compound, of which old is the first-word (cf. G greisenalter); the use of the adjective extreme before old age points to the same conclusion, as we should otherwise expect the adverbial form extremely:
Other Indirect Adjuncts

12.31. Such combinations of adjectives and substantives as those here mentioned give rise to other more or less singular grammatical combinations. As John’s married life is the equivalent of “the life of John when married” or “of married John”, the adjective which from a formal point of view belongs to life, is felt to qualify John, of. also his dying wish, his lazy time; this leads to other instances of adjectives which really qualify a preceding genitive instead of the substantive with which they are placed. (Instead of a genitive we often have a possessive pronoun) This is particularly frequent with sake:

MI J 1306 for your sweet sake | Sh Meas V. 496 for your louelie sake | LI. V. 2.766 for your faire sakes | Ro III. 3.136, Shr II. 1.61 | Shelley 82 for its hateful sake | Byron 640 Who covets evil For its own bitter sake? | Tenn 292 for his own sweet sake | Di Do 439 for my old sake [= for old sake’s sake’, for the sake of our old friendship] | Swinb T 36 for whose lost sake dawn was as dawn of night.

12.52. This gives us a clue to many passages in Elizabethan poets which have puzzled commentators:

Sh Ven 397 who sees his true-loue in her naked bed [= naked in her bed; properly in her “naked-bed”; several similar examples in Nares s. v. naked] | MI T 2734 how haue ye spent your absent time from me? | Sh Oth III. 4.174 love’s absent hours; cf. without a genitive R2 II. 3.78 to take advantage of the absent time | Sh LL II. 1.81 your fair approach | Sh R2 I. 3.210 his banish’d years [the years in which he was banished, his years of banishment] | Sh R3 II. 2.64 your fatherless distress | Sh As I. 3.43 dispatch you with your safest haste | Sh Oth I. 3.260
his dear absence.—Several examples (some of which are, however, doubtful) have been collected by Al. Schmidt in his Shakespeare-Lexicon p. 1415 ff. Sh Ven 671 “I prophesie thy death, my liuing sorrow”, may perhaps be explained = my sorrow while I live, but Delius takes it = ein schmerz, der fortlebt.

A modern parallel is Di X 221 to keep my tedious company = to keep me (who am tedious) company.

12.53. Without a genitive we have in E1E essentially similar combinations, which are to be explained from the use of adjectives as first words:

Sh Cor III. 3.88 the steepe Tarpeian death [= death by being thrown from the steep T. rock] | Cor III. 1.24 they doe prank them in authoritie, Against all noble sufferance [= noble-sufferance; Wright paraphrases: so that none of the nobility can endure it] | As II. 7.132 two weake evils, age and hunger [= causes of weakness] | HamI 5.21 this eternall blason [= blazoning of eternal (infernal?) things]; further: drowsy grave [= grave of drowsiness], partial slander [= the reproach of partiality], old wrinkles (Merch I. 1.80) cf. old age (12.47). — Cf. p. 507.

It is in imitation of this Elizabethan looseness in the use of adjectives that Tennyson has happier chance = chance of becoming happier, his full tide of joy = the full tide of his joy, etc., see Dyboski, Tennyson’s Sprache u. Stil, 1907, p. 102 ff., 139.

12.54. Here must also be mentioned the idiomatic use of born (see NED born B 2) as in:

Di N 368 declaring that they never had seen such a wicked creature in all their born days | Caine C 64 I never heard the like of it in all my born days | Barrie MO 215 | Kipl S 278, etc.

12.55. The adjective mid is used in the same way as Latin medius to signify the middle of; thus in the compounds midday, midnight, midsummer, midship, midway. In free use with other sbs (as in OE on midre se) it is
now pretty frequent in literary style, though not used in colloquial language. Sh has it only twice (Tp I. 2.239 Past the mid season [of the day] | Tro II. 2.104 mid-age). Milton has it pretty frequently (mid sky, mid air, mid-heaven, etc.). The adj and sb are often hyphened. Modern instances (note the use before adjectives in the two last quotations): Farquhar B 334 up to his mid leg | McCarthy 2.481 In the mid career of the Government the war broke out | ib 2.566 crazy ships which went down in mid-ocean | Phillpotts M 27 at this moment in mid-afternoon | London A 13 it was mid-afternoon | Wells T 9 he cut in on B in mid-sentence | Lowell 323 in the battle’s mid din | NP ’06 in the mid-eighteenth century | Wells A 76 it appeared first in the seventeenth century and came to its full development in the mid-nineteenth. — Cf. below, p. 507.

**12.56.** Thus also the Lower Danube = the lower part of the Danube’, the Upper Rhine cf. on the other hand the direct adjunct in lower (or upper) lip.

With this may be compared the use of early in his early career = ‘the early part of his career’ and Wells M 53 the early Victorian phrenologists. — Cf. below, p. 507.

But English says early (adverb) one morning, where Danish and German may use the adjective: en tidlig morgen, eines frühen morgens.

**12.57.** We have another kind of indirect adjunct with some arithmetical expressions. Double in a double rose, a double knock, a double movement, and in Sh Hml I. 3.53 "A double blessing is a double grace" is a direct, and in a double-dealer is a shifted adjunct, but it is differently used in the following examples, in which it is = ‘twice the amount, or number, of’ and may therefore be followed by the definite article etc. (the NED without reason calls this usage elliptical, with prep. omitted): he paid double the sum required | Di D 3 he was double my mother’s age when he married | Macaulay H 2.167 his army might in a few days be swollen to double its present numbers | Ward E 264 my land brings me just double what it brought
my father [Formerly with to: Swift 3.191 my sallary should be double to the usual pay].

12.58. The word half presents even more complicated phenomena. (1) *Half* is a direct adjunct in such instances as Wordsw P 8.113 a half-hour's roam | Thack N 342 There were a half-dozen sketches of Baden | Di D 114 at the end of the half-year | GE A 190 an interest which brought a half smile upon her lips | Shaw 2.252 with a half laugh, half sob, etc. — Cf. 15.121.

(2) When *half* precedes the article, as it does regularly in half an hour, half a dozen, half a tumblerful (Jerome T 110), etc., it must now be considered as the adjective, but it is possible that it originated in cases in which *half* was an adverb (cf. the word-order in quite a, etc.); it seems to be a subjunct to the verb in Ch E 1428 Womman of manye scoles half a clerk is. (Cf. also Vachell H 70 you're not half such a fool as you look).

(3) But in Ch C 711 “Whan they had goon nat fully half a myle” we have already the modern construction with *half* belonging decidedly to the sb. The same *half* may then (cp. the usage with *double*) stand before another numeral, before the definite article, a demonstrative pronoun or a similar word as in Di M 463 at half a hundred places | Austen P 373 how could he spare half ten thousand pounds? | McCarthy 2.578 the Khedive held nearly half the 400,000 original shares | Caine C 263 shouting in half the languages of Europe | Ch B 4288 halfe his cours | Malory 156 half his landes | Defoe G 110 half his naturall powers are useless | Austen M 393 I have no time to give half Henry's messages | Shaw M 105 a rat with half my brains moves as well as I || Sh Cy I. 6.168 Halfe all mens hearts are his | Sh Cor I. 1.277 Halfe all Cominius honors || Philips L 45 half England knows it | McCarthy 2.530 trades-unions were a scare to half society | Austen M 85 it cannot be half a mile long, or half half a mile || ib 64 before half this was said || Kipl S 170 If half those charges
are true | Austen P 426 she would not say half that re-
mained to be said. — Cf. NED half 1 b.

In another place I shall deal with the repetition of a (an-
other half a crown) and the use of the before half a, etc.

(4) But half is also a sb and as such properly re-
quires of. The frequency of such instances as those
quoted above leads, however, to the adjectival construction
even when half is preceded by one or some other adjunct
showing it to be a sb. We have the three constructions,
one half without of, half as adjective, and one half of
within a few lines of one another in Sh Merch IV. 1.353
seaze one halfe his goods | ib IV. 1.370 halfe thy wealth | ib IV. 1.381 for one halfe of his goods.

Half is a sb in Caine C 307 the muscles of one-half
of his face.

Nineteenth-century quotations for the hybrid between
the sb and adj half: Di D 792 to spend one half the money
it had cost | Mill L 6 one half the great thoughts and noble
feelings which are buried in her grave | Ru P 1.151 one-
half the comfort of a travelling carriage | Kipl S 17 as
though one-half the combe were filled with golden fire | NP '95 one half the world does not know how the other
half lives || Kingsley H 144 she got it for the half what
it was worth | Tenn 507 my ships are out of gear, And
the half my men are sick | ib 411 Even to the half my
realm beyond the seas.

12.59. The same construction is transferred to other
fractions (originally substantives): Wells A 46 an area of
over 2800 square miles, which is almost a quarter that
of Belgium | Hewlett Q 321 I cannot tell you one-quarter
the shamefulness she dared to report | Phillpotts K 101
they didn't know a quarter about him what I did | Hardy
W 231 I've been here this quarter-hour | Hewlett Q 448
at some quarter-mile's distance | Tenn 363 and men
brought in whole hogs and quarter beeves | at a fourth their
value | Wells T M 243 the density of the moon is only
three-fifths that of the earth.
Chapter XIII
Substantives as Adjuncts

The Problem

13.11. The question has often been asked whether cannon in cannon ball is an adjective or not. See, for instance, Sayce, Introduction to the Science of Language 2.332, who says: In "cannon ball" cannon is as much an adjective as black; cf. ib 1.417 "We are told that a school-inspector plucked some children a short time ago for saying that cannon in cannon-ball was a noun instead of an adjective; the pedantry of the act was only equal to the ignorance it displays, and illustrates how often the artificial nomenclature of grammar breaks down when confronted with the real facts of language." At a meeting of the Philological Society of London, on the 1st of April 1881, the theory that cannon was here an adjective, was defended by Morris and Furnivall, whose reasons are not given, and attacked by Murray and Sweet. As both of these latter have given their reasons, we must look at them.


"How early this position-genitive appeared in English, how precisely, it rendered the Latin inflexional genitive, may be well seen on p. 159 of Dr. Morris' Early English Homilies, 1st series, where aqua maris becomes 'see water', aqua nivis 'snow water', aqua fontis 'welle water', aqua roris 'deu water'. School Inspectors and others who know so little of English as to take these position genitives for adjectives, may here see, that in the 12th c., when adjectives were still inflected and thus formally distinguished from nouns, it was no adjective but the simple nouns salt, sea, snow, well, and dew, that stood in their simple uninflected forms, in a genitive relation before another noun."
The only thing proved here is, that in the 12th century these words were no adjectives, but they might have used the intervening seven or eight hundred years to become adjectives. Besides, it is not easy to see why Murray calls sea and snow in sea water and snow water genitives; if they are, how are we to account for the difference between state in state room and states in statesman?

13.13. Sweet (see Proceedings of Philol. Soc., Apr. 1, 1881, and NEGr § 174) holds that the division into parts of speech is based on formal differences, and says, "But as the most marked formal characteristic of adjectives is comparison, and as comparison of stone in stone wall is impossible, even if the meaning of the combination allowed it, while there would be no grammatical objection to making stony road, golden hair into stonier road, the most golden hair, we must refuse to admit that assumptive nouns have any of the really distinctive features of adjectives."

Sweet here seems to prove too much, for he would not refuse the name of adjective to such words as any, this, other, own, several, half, double, triangular, daily, yearly, previous, which do not admit of comparison. His test, therefore, is not infallible; and we shall see, moreover, that some "assumptive nouns" (as he calls them) can be compared (13.54, 13.71), though in most cases the meaning of the words does not admit of any comparison. As, moreover, there are languages in which substantives can be compared, we must look out for some other means of deciding the question.

13.14. To arrive at an answer it is not enough to show that the meaning of a gold chain is the same as that of a golden chain, nor to adduce the equivalents of other languages; Latin catena aurea and German eine steinerner mauer show nothing with regard to English a gold chain or a stone wall, any more than the Latin aqua nivis should have induced Murray to take snow in his 12th century snow water as a genitive. We should also beware of
judging the question off-hand after merely considering one or two self-made examples which may or may not be typical. The proper way to deal with our problem evidently is to collect as many different examples as possible, and to test them not by one characteristic of adjectives, but by everything that we can find to be typical of adjectives, and—this is very important—not of adjectives in general or in abstracto, but of English adjectives in our present period.

13.15. In order to have a name for such a word as cannon in cannon ball I shall here provisionally use the term first-word, which has the advantage that it does not beg the question in any way.—No one doubts that the origin of such combinations as cannon ball or stone wall is to be sought in old compounds of the same kind as G steinmauer, but are they still compounds in the same sense as German compounds?

In this chapter I follow the lines which I laid down in a paper read before the Philological Society of Copenhagen, on the 5th of May 1894. Unfortunately at that time I printed only the introductory part dealing with the transition of substantives to adjectives in Danish (see Dania III 80 ff.). In Growth (1st ed. 1905; 9th ed., section 179 ff.) I could give only one small-page to the subject. Since then similar considerations have been put forward by Kellner, Bausteine I 1906, and Wendt, Syntax 1911; cf. also Bergsten, Compound Substantives 1911, p. 3-7.

13.16. In a few cases one may feel inclined to look upon the words we are concerned with, as old adjectives in -en. As final -n disappeared in ME, we may account for the form silk in silk stockings both from the old sb and from the old adjective (OE seolocen) with loss of -en; similarly with lead in lead pipe. In other words, silk (before a sb) and silken, lead and leaden would then be doublets in the same way as drunk and drunken, maid and maiden. Iron in iron rod may be either the sb in a compound, or the old adjective (as in OE dat pl mid irenum gyrdum); cf. the adjectival use in Milton Lye 111 Two massy keys ... The golden opes, the iron shuts
amain. But this explanation applies only to a few cases, and in the vast majority we must start from old substantival compounds.

**Formal Characteristics**

13.21. *Stone wall* is written as two words, G *steinmauer* as one. This of course is principally a matter of typography and should not in itself carry weight in our discussion. Yet it is a symptom that the two nations look upon the combination in a different light, and we shall now see some more purely linguistic signs of the English feeling that we have *two* words and not *one* word in *cannon ball*, etc.

13.22. Foremost among these must be mentioned stress. As long as compounds have one strong unifying stress either on the first or on the second element (*husband; mankind*), the two elements belong together and form one word. This is the case in G *steinmauer* and Danish *stenmur*: in the latter also we have a phonetic peculiarity (want of the glottal stop found in isolated *sten*) which makes it impossible to look upon it as two words *sten mur*. But in English for at least three centuries (vol I. 5.33 ff.) we have had a tendency to give both elements of free compounds equal (or varying) stress, which shows that to the linguistic feeling they are two words and no longer compounds of two mutually dependent elements.

13.23. Now, even if we had even stress in G *steinmauer*, we should not be able to look upon *stein* as an adjective, because it is invariable, whereas the adjective in *eine steinerne mauer* is inflected and takes -n in some cases. Similarly in Danish, where there is moreover this difference that a substantive, also a compound one, has a postpositive definite article (*stenmur-en*), while the adjective has a prepositive article (*den store mur*). But in English no such differences exist: a first-word and an ordinary adjective are equally uninflected; there is there-
fore nothing on this account to hinder us from looking upon the first-word as a separate word or even from calling it an adjective.

**Coordination**

13.31. We now proceed to some more positive indications that first-words are felt to be parallel to real adjectives. First they may be coordinated with adjectives, connected by and, or, nor:

Sh Hml I.4.50 the sepulcher Hath op’d his ponderous and marble iawes | Macb IV.1.48 you secret, black and midnight hags | H4A III.1.102 the smug and siluer Trent | R2 V.3.61 Thou sheer, immaculate and siluer fountain | Oth I.3.231 the flinty and steel couch of war | Swift P 39 I have rejected all provincial and country turns of wit | Keats 218 In pale and silver silence | Coleridge Anc M 111 in a hot and copper sky | Shelley 207 its [the bell’s] hoarse and iron tongue | ib 255 That they might hide with thin and rainbow wings | id Pr 294 with mercantile and commonplace exactness | Quincey 19 in arbitrary or chance arrangements | Thack V 3 twelve intimate and bosom friends | ib 302 those who take human or womankind for a study | Di Do 9—she had taken the word [party] not in its legal or business acceptation | Brontë P 106 white and taper hands | Tennys 334 a red and cipher face | Ru F 128 in savage and embryo countries | id Sel 1.321 the slopes of arable and vineyard ground | Poe S 263 Marie, whose Christian and family name will at once arrest attention | Hawth S 24 this commercial and Custom-House life | Swinburne A 57 Through a heavy and iron furrow of sundering spears | ib 67 this armed and iron maidenhood | Stevenson J 39 such an innocent and old-world kindness | Doyle B 29 to local and county charities | Ward D 2.97 French artistic and student life | Lubbock P 43 manual and science teaching | Wells A 41 Both the administrative and business community | ib 123 by political or business ingenuity | ib 51 the postal and telephone services | Lecky D 1.100 his personal and party
interests | Kidd S 98 the personal and family history of scientific men | NED (s. v. bye-bye) a colloquial and nursery variant of goodbye | Butler Ess 24 in medieval and last century portraiture | Gosse L 4.327 the frail and silver look of an old man | Archer Am 48 her silvering or silver hair | ib 58 antiquated and rule-of-thumb methods | NP '07 a guard of 100 mounted and foot police | Bennett B 88 her gay and butterfly existence. Cf. also Sh Macb III. 4.142 my strange and self-abuse.

13.32. Equally significant with the conjunction is the comma in the following instances:

Di D 204 he had a long, lank, skeleton hand | GE A 101 the lonely, bare, stone houses | Caine E 2 the snow fell in large, corkscrew flakes | Caine P 97 her tender, sweet, child heart will break | Stedman O 123 a shy, school-boy feeling toward his tutor | Doyle F 29 in brisk, business tones | Hewlett Q 148 a gentle, April sky | Norris O 406 at a small, family hotel | Galsworthy M 179 in the soft, Devonshire drawl.

13.33. Still more independent is the first-word when it is placed before the adjective with which it is coordinated—either with a conjunction:

Sh Cæs I. 2.186 Cicero lookes with such ferret, and such fiery eyes | R2 III. 2.166 Infusing him with selfe and vain conceit; cf. Macb V. 8.70 by selfe and violent hands | Cor III. 2.114 an eunuch or the virgin voice | Carlyle R 2.339 on some Cumberland or other matter | Black F 146 among the evening and weekly papers | Bleek Compar. Gramm. South Afr. L XII the Cape of Good Hope, Natal, and Imperial Governments | Carpenter P 78 a list of Prison and Judicial Reforms | Shaw 1.*6 the most dignified of the London and American publishers | McCarthy 2.106 he got into money and other difficulties | ib 540 he was a great pulpit and Parliamentary orator | Bellamy L 58 various literary, art, and scientific institutes | NP '92 Carpenter's old-time, but valuable book on Physiology | Lecky D 1.75 all national, State, county, and municipal
offices | Roosevelt A 87 interest in National, State, and Municipal affairs | Kidd S 56 the business and professional classes | Keane, NP '03 the tribal, district, or territorial gods | NP: Tourist, fortnightly, and Friday to Tuesday tickets | in such a patchwork and incomplete fashion | the London and provincial papers | home and foreign affairs.

13.34. Or else without any conjunction:

By DJ 3.72 Her orange silk full Turkish trowsers | Scott A 2.39 the fifty Fairport dirty notes | Di D 500 in the drawing-room middle window | Di T 2.30 past the massive stone outer walls | Thack P 1.200 twopenny old gentlewomen | Brontë Prof 275 the chambers have an old-world, haunted air | Carlyle R 1.225 dandy young fellows | Mrs Browning A 109 household quiet work | GE M 2.153 their unfavourable opinion of sister fair ones | Ru F 189 my Gainsborough little girl | Ru (in Collingwood 159) a Yorkshire young lady | Stevenson MB 65 on behalf of some Edinburgh fair one | Pattison Milt 87 a feeling far beyond commonplace filial piety | Doyle S 1.59 an average commonplace British tradesman | Dobson F 11 the average dramatic experiences | Hardy W 96 he had married a stranger instead of one of the town young ladies | Doyle -S 5.75 Was there ever a more mild-mannered, Sunday-school young man? | Shaw P *17 a Boston young lady | Ridge L 42 the eyeglass young woman | Ridge B 47 City young men returned home | Wells Am 167 a specimen American mind | Lecky D 1.*30 an iron physical frame | ib 1.79 a system of wholesale, organised, continuous plunder | Dilke Empire 40 the energy of the United Empire original population | Philpotts M 262 the chance, latter utterances of his mother | Norris O 84 in the open-air, healthy life of the ranches | the British South Africa Chartered Company | a school Latin dictionary | a school Homeric grammar | an evening radical newspaper | his silk high hat | the 1892 general election | the head four boys.

Compare also Sh Lucr 1240 for men haue marble, women waxen mindes.
Note that in "Boston young lady" we have the same position of the two attributes as in "a handsome young lady", because young lady is to some extent felt like one idea (15.15).

In the following examples we have two independent first-words:

Thack N 53 a rich silk Master of Arts gown | Ritchie Mem 241 in her black silk Paris dress.

Use of One

13.4. The "prop-word" one (ch. X) was formerly restricted to pure adjectives, as in a good one; its use in such combinations as a cotton one goes a long way to show that cotton in a cotton gown is felt like an adjective and is no longer simply the first element of a compound substantive. — Cf. below, p. 507.

Scott A 2.29 I carried it [the ram's horn] for mony a year, till I niffered it for this tin one wi' auld George | Lamb E 1.181 pulled it [a chimney-piece] down to set up a marble one in its stead | Di Do 458 the Papers... one of the Sunday ones | Di D 78 a wig (a second hand one he said) | Di X 28 all top couples at last, and not a bottom one to help them | Thack S 172 he takes his own umbrella from the hall—the cotton one | Thack N 301 I tried papers too. I tried a Tory one | Carlyle H 132 through Gustavus-Adolphus contentions onward to French-Revolution ones | ib 189 both the quack theory and the allegory one | id R 1.272 solitary dialogues on the Kent shore (far inferior to our old Fife ones) | id F 2.78 their egg, even if not a wind one, is of value simply one halfpenny | Kingsley H 167 a lady she is, but evidently no city one | Poe 184 The house was a four story one | Tennys L 2.19 the resemblance is just a chance one | Mulock H 1.298 no more silk gowns... I shall not look equally well in a cotton one | Ru Sel 2.89 most of the mountain flowers being lovelier than the lowland ones | Hughes T 2.74 lessons...
particularly the geography ones | Mered H 341 the conference, which gradually swelled to a family one | Mered R 131 our gymnasium [in town] is not to be compared to our country one | ib 194 the autumn primroses . . . the spring ones | Sweet Handb. Phon. § 224 between the glottis stoppage and the mouth one | Black P 2.42 his slight German accent was scarcely so distinct as Sheila’s Highland one | Doyle M 137 he wanted a first-rate riding horse, as neither of the carriage ones would suffice him | Hardy L 214 two officers . . . the head one | Morris N 179 the cast-iron bridges had been replaced by handsome oak and stone ones | Ward E 4 the American girls, even the country ones | Hardy T 15 her lower lip had a way of thrusting the middle of her top one upwards | ib 88 that muslin dress . . . is my best summer one | Garnett Milt 74 the question involves the nineteenth century one of the pope’s temporal sovereignty | Shaw 1.46 I never knew that my house was a glass one | Kipl P 11 Their father had made them a small play out of the big Shakespeare one | Barrie M 16 this is the chaff pillow you’ve taken out of my bed and given me your feather one | Caine M 173 Elm Cottage they’re calling it—the slate one with the ould fir-tree | the question has ceased to be a party or personal one | Norris O 466 he buys himself pale blue suspenders, silk ones | Shaw C *22 I have made no attempt to turn an 1882 novel into a twentieth century one.

All these quotations are recent ones; it is hardly due to mere chance that I have none before the year 1700, for Sh Tp V. 1.273 “This demy-diuell; (For he’s a bastard one)” shows nothing, as bastard seems to have been an adjective from the 13th c. onwards (NED); and BJo 3.231 “the Centaurs . . . though there be a she one there” is not exactly a case in point, as she is no original substantive.

**Use of Adverbs**

**13.51.** As long as the combination of two substantives is felt to be a compound substantive, it can only be preceded by an adjective like any other substantive.
If, therefore, we find an adverb as a subjunct before it, this shows that the first element is detached and felt to be analogous to an adjective. This is the case in the following examples:

Sh Oth I. 3.56 my particular grief Is of so flood-gate and o'erbearing nature | Austen M 83 I am a very matter-of-fact, plain-spoken being | Meredith E 157 I am perfectly matter-of-fact | Fox 2.123 a very matter-of-fact man | GEL 2.15 in a very makeshift manner | Stevenson MP 65 looks with a somewhat vinegar aspect on the whole society | Shaw M 203 the introduction of practically Manhood Suffrage in 1884 | Pinero B 31 there was a purely family gathering | Murray, Athen. July 29, '93 Gladstone's use [of the word cram] is the first undoubtedly Oxford undergraduate one that I have been able to discover | Merriman V. 258 the commerce is of so retail a nature that it seems to pass from hand to hand in mysterious cloth bundles [note here also the position of a] | Ellis M 3 a fairly average picture | ib 54 in the somewhat bird's-eye view we have obtained | Henderson Scottish Verse XI in the more strictly ballad form | Lecky D 1.*25 skill in drawing subtle distinctions ... is said to be a specially Oxford gift | ib 1.46 in purely Government work | ib 1.110 much purely class legislation, intended to support class interests | NP '93 the somewhat zigzag course of this narrative | NP '05 the pleasure garden run on strictly temperance principles | NP '03 on merely business grounds | NP '05 novels of unmistakably home growth | NP '06 the nearly sinecure places | NP from a too exclusively London standpoint | NP '12 there were no avowedly caste laws.

13.52. The difference between "a division on strict party lines" and "on strictly party lines" is very slight indeed; in the former strict (as an adjunct) qualifies the compound party lines, in the latter strictly (as a subjunct) qualifies party. But in other instances the leaving out of -ly would make greater havoc (pure Government work etc.).
13.53. In the following instances it might be said, though I think not correctly, that the adverb qualifies the adjective that is part of the first-word:

Wilde H 114 she has a decidedly middle-class mind | Black P 1.214 a somewhat commonplace square | Jerome T 23 some really first-class nectar | Merriman V 191 Looking at the question from the strictly common-sense point of view | Wells U 283 a lot of very second-rate rhetoric.

13.54. When a word can have so or very before it as in 13.51, it is no far cry to the use of more and most, and as a matter of fact we find it by no means rarely in modern English:

Austen M 222 in a more everyday tone | Austen P 47 a most country-town indifference to decorum | Mrs Carlyle L 2.239 I thought it a most wild-yoose enterprise | Dobson F 125 the most everyday occurrences | Merriman S 26 a most refined and nineteenth century misfortune | Black F 2.5 a much more matter-of-fact demeanour | Shaw P 181 the most matter-of-fact order | Zangwill G 244 was there ever a more madcap expedition than ours? | NP '05 drinking, gambling, or any of the more scarlet sins | the more level road (cf. 13.82). — Cf. below, p. 507.

On the comparative in -er and superlative in -est see below, 13.71.

Isolation

13.61. A first-word may also be used alone, without being followed by any "second element of the compound". This perhaps happens most easily in apposition, when the second element has just been expressed:

Di X 104 his own picture—a full length; a very full length | Spencer F 117 to determine the national transactions, home and foreign | Holmes A 287 English dandyism, schoolboy or full-grown | Roosevelt A 27 any position, whether State or national | Kipl J 2.37 he was a Brahmin, so high-caste that . . . | Finnemore Soc. Life 145 Fish,
both sea and river, fresh and salted, was an important article of diet | NP '94 the Duchess of Teck’s letters, business and philanthropic | NP '10 the vast fleet of merchant ships, steam and sail.

In the two following sentences, too, the second element is clearly understood (note the article):

GE M 2.96 a young fellow may be good-looking and yet not be a six-foot | Doyle S 1.28 was the photograph a cabinet?

13.62. In the following examples the word is used in the same purely predicative manner as an ordinary adjective:

Sh R2 I. 1.41 the more faire and christall is the skie | Cowper L 1.18 the roads, which are all turnpike | Tennys 690 my sight is eagle [not quite natural] | Ruskin Sel 1.320 there is never vulgarity in a whole truth, however commonplace | Meredith Eg 102 I am so commonplace that I should not be understood by you | Doyle S 1.141 the more featureless and commonplace a crime is, the more difficult is it to bring it home | Twain M 164 life having now become commonplace and matter-of-fact | Meredith E 496 making you hard, matter-of-fact, worldly, calculating | Wells T 109 it was all quite clear and matter of fact then | Ru Sel 1.199 things that are dead, second-hand, and pointless | ib 1.371 the image may be first-rate of its kind, but it is not first-rate because it is portable | Seeley E 75 states which are unsafe, insignificant, second-rate | Wilde SM 3 To be a bit better than one’s neighbour was considered excessively vulgar and middle class | Street A 101 my own father is quite middle-class in his attitude towards life | Ward R 1.60 a family that is original and old-world even in its way of dying | Beaconsf L 212 the Bishop was high-church | Thackeray P 1.218 He was low-church, and she never liked him | ib 2.258 our cousin was exceedingly Low Church | Lecky D 1. xviii the Voluntary Schools which are chiefly Church of England and denominational | Ward D 1.258 she’s very Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
High Church | Stevenson C 19 I am Highland, as you see | NP ’93 Mr Benson seems the most eighteenth-century of our later candidates for Parnassus.

Cf. also NP ’06: measures looked upon at one time as purely Labour are being passed by the Liberal Governments.

13.63. Sometimes a first-word may be used alone with the definite article as a plural to designate a whole class, like the adjective in the poor (11.4); the absence of the ending -s shows that the words are no longer substantives:

Wilde In 156 the sins of the second-rate | ib 160 whatever the commonplace may say against them.

13.64. I have only two (recent) examples of the use of such a word placed after anything and nothing as in anything (nothing) easy: Bennett A 96 I hope your mother won’t give me anything fancy to do. I’m no good at anything except plain sewing | Gissing G 67 Nothing brutally clap-trap about it.—One may say: there is nothing commonplace about him. — Cf. below, p. 507.

Adjectival Endings

13.71. The comparative in -er and superlative in -est are found chiefly in some familiar words, which must be dealt with separately:

Arch, from arch-knave, -rogue, etc., hence with the signification ‘cunning, roguish, slyly saucy’; archest in NED from M. Arnold. Cf. also Wordsw P 5.310 see How arch his notices, | Di M 8 she was the most arch and at the same time the most artless creature | Austen M 83 an arch smile.

Cheap is OE. subst. cēap ‘bargain’, cf. German kauf. The old idiom is seen in Greene, F III. 2 we shall have hay good cheap; cf. Dutch goedkoop (comparative goedkooper). Now cheap is never used as a sb, and cheaper and cheapest have long been recognized.
Chief, from French *chief*, *chief*, Lat. *caput*; in such combinations as *chief justice*, *chief mourner*, it came early to be looked upon as an adjective; *chiefer* and, more frequently, *chiefest* are used as early as 1400 (NED); examples: More U 83 the *chiefest* dowte; also 204, 207, 285 Greene F IV. 52 *chiefest* | Milton Vac Ex 18 thy *chiefest* treasure (cf. also II P 51) | Kipling L 3 her *chiefest* friend. Cf. also outside the superlative BJo 1.29 and—what was *chief*—it showed not borrowed in him | Defoe P 43 men servants were the *chief* of their customers.

*Choice* has been in use as an adjunct from the fourteenth century; *choicest* is found, for instance, in Greene F IV. 65, Marlowe T 4642, Swift T 25, Fielding T 1.79, Di N 307 the *choicest* and most resplendent waistcoasts. *Choicer* is rarer: NP '88 other cattle, of *choicer* breed, were carefully herded.

*Coarse* is probably the same word as *course* (Wedgwood) in the sense ‘ordinary’ (as in *of course*); *coarse* (*course*) cloth was distinguished from fine cloth.

*Dainty* originally means a delicacy, from OFr. *daintie* < Lat. *dignitate(m)*; in Chaucer’s “ful many a deyntee hors” (A 168) and More’s “soo deyntyte and deylcated anopynyon” (U 188) we see the transition to the adjectival use. *Daintier, daintiest* may be freely formed.

*Damp*, sb from 1480 in NED; adj in the sense ‘slightly wet’ not till the beginning of the 18th century; *dampier, dampest* frequent. — Cf. below, p. 508.

*Game*: a *game-cock* originally means a play-cock or sport-cock, a cock bred to fight for play; but the word being taken = ‘a courageous cock’ an adjective has been deduced with the meaning of ‘courageous’. Superlative for instance in Di D 799 she gave her evidence in the *gamest* way.

*Shoddy*; the Enc. Dict. has examples (NP 1882) of *shoddier* and *shoddiest*.

*Weird*: OE *wierd* is a substantive and means destiny or fate; the three *weird sisters* = the Norns; Shakespeare
took the expression from Holinshedd and used it in speaking of the witches in Macbeth, and only there. From that play it has entered the general language without being really understood; Todd interpreted it as 'skilled in witchcraft', but the now accepted sense is 'mystic, mysterious, unearthly'. Comparison: weirder, weirdest.

Here should be mentioned also purple (Byron 586 billows purpler than the ocean’s) and square (Brontë P 32 my own features were cast in a harsher and squarer mould than his | Stevenson Jekyll 153 He who can sit squarest on a three-legged stool, he is it who has the wealth and glory | Ellis Man 93 the dental arch is squarer), though in both words the adjective may be just as old as the substantive.

The following are nonce-formations of the same kind:

Trollope: the bosomest of her husband’s friends (quoted by Storm EPh 214) | Wells Am 37 the toppest floor | ib 125 the bottomest end of the scale (generally bottommost, which in the familiar pronunciation with [-mest] is not far from bottomest).

13.72. The endings -ly, -ly, -try, and -ness, which are commonly added to adjectives to form adverbs and substantives, in some instances are also joined to original first-words; most of these forms do not occur before 1800: archly (from 17th c.), archness (from 18th c.);

avergely.

bridally (19th c.), bridalry (Richardson), bridality (BJo, 19th c.); bridal was originally a substantive, = OE bryðealu ‘bride-ale’.

cheaply, cheapness (16th c.).

chiefly (before 1400).

choicey (14th c.).

commonplaceness.

coarsely (coursely, before 1600), coarseness.

daintily (14th c.), daintiness (16th c.).

damply (19th c.), dampness (17th c.).

gallowsness (GE A 61); gallow, also written gallous and thus assimilated with adjectives in -ous, is from gallow-
bird, a gallows fellow; it means in dialects 'depraved, wicked; mischievous, saucy; spirited; smart'.

gamely, gameness (Merriman V 199 gameness is not solely a British virtue).

matter-of-courseness, NED from 1890.

matter-of-factness NED from 1816, 1879.
squarely (Doyle G 131 the squadrons which had stood squarely all day), squareness.

weirdly (Ward D 1.216 the eyes were weirdly prominent), weirdness (ib 1.120 there was a weirdness about the figure).

Conclusion

13.81. These, then, are the facts from which we are to draw our conclusions. It is noteworthy that most of the quotations showing a gradual approach to adjectivity have been found in nineteenth century authors, but Elizabethan quotations show that the tendency was already strong at that time, which is not strange, as the two chief factors in the development were already in existence, namely invariability of the adjective, and accentual separation of the two elements of (some) compounds. The comparatively small number of examples from the intervening period is explicable, I think, from the prevailing classicism, which was opposed to colloquialisms, especially of a more daring character.

13.82. The answer to the question we set out to investigate in this chapter: "Have first-words become adjectives?" cannot be doubtful with regard to those words which can take the endings -er, -est (13.71) or -ly, -ty, -try, -ness (13.72): they have become adjectives to all intents and purposes, and are recognized as such in all dictionaries.

Besides those mentioned in 13.7 we have some other words, which from the corresponding use as first-words
have become adjectives and are classed as such in many dictionaries. Some of them may have developed comparatives in -er and superlatives in -est, or derivatives in -ly and -ness, though I have no examples of them. Addle, obsolete in the original signification 'urine', used in addle-egg and felt there as an adjective, which was then transferred to other combinations with the meaning 'empty, vain'. Crystal (cf. 13.62 Shakespeare); as an adjective a favourite word with Shelley. (Ebon) Level (OFr. livel, ModFr. niveau); level ground; this is quite level; doubtful whether adj. in Sh 2H4 IV. 4.7 every thing liyes leuell to our wish. Main; BJo 1.52 the dressing is a most main attractive. Moot, orig. 'meeting'; a moot point is a point to be discussed at a meeting. Pollard, Di Do [p.?] some pollard willows. Proof, originally 'test, evidence'; from such combinations as proof armour 'armour which has been proved', a proof ball, blade, etc.; as an adjective 'impenetrable, able to resist'; Sh Cor I. 4.25 with hearts more prooue then shieldes; another construction was of proof, as in Sh H5 III. 1.18 English, whose blood is fet from fathers of warre-prooue | Dryden 5.227 Keen be my sabre, and of proof my arms | Di Do 347 armour . . . . it is of proof against conciliation. Scarlet. Ship-shape.

Note that in bridal, crystal as in dainty, shoddy, and in gallows (gallous) the accidental similarity with common adjective endings has been in favour of the transition to adjectives. The same is the case with kindred, originally a subst. (OE *cynræden, ME cunrede, kinrede) 'relationship', with the same ending as in hatred; now felt entirely as an adjective in -ed: kindred souls, etc.; doubtfully so in Sh John III. 4.14 who hath read, or heard, of anv kindred-action like to this?

13.83. With regard to words not thus universally recognized as adjectives, so much is certain that Modern English treats them differently from Old English or German, and that there is not a single characteristic trait of adjectives proper, with the exception of those
mentioned in 13.7, that is not shared by these first-words: inflexion (or rather lack of flexion), separation from the 'second-word', use of adverbs (including more, most) before and of one after them. Only it must be admitted that some of these adjectival characteristics are as yet found only occasionally with first-words, especially the preceding adverb and the power to stand alone as predicatives. What we must assert is, therefore, an approximation to, rather than the full attainment of, the adjectival status. This is covered in the terminology proposed in this volume, if we recognize the words in question as still being substantives, though they function as adjuncts to other substantives. In stone wall we have a group of two words (two substantives), of which stone is the adjunct and wall the principal, while G steinmauer is only one word, stein—thus counting only as part of a word. And the development and free use of such substantival adjuncts forms one of the most characteristic traits of present-day English.

13.84. Those English philologists who speak with regret of the loss of the power to form compound substantives in English as in German, generally overlook the fact that it is only in the free formation of technical compounds that English is inferior to German—an inferiority which is intimately connected with the predilection for classical or pseudo-classical formations—and that there is in English a facility unknown even to German of forming free combinations of substantives, each retaining its own natural stress and pronunciation as well as its proper signification, while one is made subordinate to the other. Through this development it becomes possible to combine several adjuncts more freely than would otherwise be feasible (13.33), clumsy repetitions are avoided by means of one (13.4), and it becomes possible to qualify one part of the combination by placing an adverb rather than an adjective before it (13.51). The chief rôle, however, of these substantival adjuncts is that of supplementing the want in English of an adequate manner of
forming adjectives from substantives to denote the vague relations indicated by Latin -alis, -anus, etc. (Ido -ala, cf. Growth § 131). Therefore we see first-words used parallel to those adjectives of that class which do exist, chiefly of Latin formation, as in Archer Am 81 "an eminent Shakespearean critic . . . a very learned Dante scholar." Cp. also a Yorkshire man with Kentish man.

The same difference is seen also with the participles born and bred, where the substantives are really subjuncts; on the one hand we have:

Scott Iv 382 the other is Yorkshire bred | Thack V 327 I'm an honest girl though workhouse bred | GE Mm 95 midland bred souls | Hardy L 28 he was country-born | ib 194 Both being country born and bred, they fancied . . | Ridge S 67 you're town bred

On the other hand:

Scott Iv 366 I am English born | Norris O 320 a ship . . . American built.

13.85. The use of proper names as adjuncts was formerly more extensive than now, but is still very common:

Malory 94 kynge Pellam was nyghe of Ioseph kynne Greene F IV. 33 to Suffolk side | ib V. 76 the Sussex Earl ib VI. 7 the Lincoln Earl | ib VI. 97 from Windsor court ib VIII. 131 the Albion diadem | Marlowe J 2272 Malta streets | Sh Mids I. 1.173 the Carthage queen | Cæs I. 1.63 Tiber banks | Cor I. 8.8 Corioles walls | ib III. 3.104 Rome gates | Swift J 23 at Molesworth's, the Florence envoy . . . with Delaval, the Portugal Envoy | Defoe R 41 the Portugal captain | Darwin L 1.230 the Portugal laurel | Mered E 38 the Portugal clime | Spect 61 a little Japan table | Ru Sel 1.333 a Turkey carpet | Stevenson J 15 with a strong Edinburgh accent | Thack P 1.15 the whole range of Pendennis portraits | ib 210 some of the Fotheringay presents [= presents given to Miss F] | Carlyle R 1.241 these Wordsworth appearances in London ceased | Hamerton F 2.107 the Tennysonpeerage | GE A 479 news of a fresh Nelson victory.
Shakespeare even uses the names of towns in this way with an adjective before them:

Shrew II. 1.369 within rich Pisa walls | Ro I. 2.35 (Q 1) through faire Verona streets.

This is not possible nowadays, probably because of the use before substantival adjuncts of adverbial forms (13.5).

13.86. Sometimes it makes a difference whether the substantive or the derived adjective is used as an adjunct: a Turkey carpet refers to the kind, while a Turkish carpet would mean any carpet found in Turkey; similarly a Japan table and Japanese table. In the quotation from Swift the Florence envoy means the English envoy to Florence, while the Florentine envoy would mean an envoy from Florence. The East India docks are found in London, while the East Indian docks = the docks in East India. The difference between socialist and socialistic in the following quotation is not quite clear, though the latter may rather mean ‘inclined to socialism’: Kidd Soc Evol 208 “an examination of the socialistic phenomena . . . . schemes loosely described as socialist or socialistic, that have nothing whatever of an essentially [note the ending] socialist character about them”. Nor do I see why Hall Caine sometimes says Icelandic (P 8: four Icelandic students) and sometimes Iceland (ib 27 some Iceland love-songs | 38 a simple Iceland maiden | 92 in Iceland dress, etc.; thus also Merriman Last Hope 316 the Iceland fisheries); the latter is less natural than Icelandic.

13.87. As the knowledge of the Latin suffixes is now more common than in Shakespeare’s time, many of his substantival adjuncts would now be supplanted by derivative adjectives, Rome by Roman, etc. But even now sometimes a substantive is used where an adjective is available. Professor George Hempl once told me that he always had a feeling of displeasure at “Egypt Exploration Fund”, which should be Egyptian, but that it was formed after “Palestine Exploration Fund”, which was all right
as no adjective is formed from Palestine. In some instances we seem to see a sb used as adjunct because its ending was mistaken for an adjective ending, as in Sh Hml III. 1.164 that suck'd the honie of his musicke vowes (ordinarily music is only subst., and musical adj.) or Marlowe F 348 the Affricke shore; Shakespeare also uses funeral as an adj. (or first-word), while funereal is unknown to him.—If compounds of adjective + substantive (commonplace, old-world, first-rate, etc.) and compounds like matter-of-fact are so often used as adjuncts, this is a natural consequence of the impossibility of forming adjectives from them by means of a derivative ending.

Chapter XIV
Adjuncts. Continued

Adjunct and Predicative

14.11. As a rule words that can be used as adjuncts (pre-adjuncts) can also be used in the same form as predicatives. But in some cases there is some slight difference in form between the two employments. The accentual difference between fourteen with stronger stress on the first syllable as a pre-adjunct and with stronger stress on the last syllable as a predicative ('fourteen years | she is just fourteen, I. 5. 44; cf. overhead wires | these wires are placed overhead) is not exactly a case in point, because the stress-shifting is not invariably occasioned by the syntactical function. Compounds like good-natured similarly have rhythmically weaker stress on the second element when used as adjuncts than in other positions. Participles with -en as pre-adjuncts and without -en in other positions (bitten : bit | beaten : beat | stricken : struck | drunken : drunk | hidden : hid, etc.) will be dealt with in the Morphology; the distinction is in no case carried through with absolute consistency. The archaic
form *olden* is only used as adjunct (*olden days, times*), whereas *old* may be used in any position. In the pronouns we have more consistency in the (inverse) employment of the forms with and without -*n* (*mine: my dog*) and of those with and without -*s* (*hers: her dog*), see ch. XVI. A somewhat similar distinction is found in other cases, where the form with *s* is used by itself as an adverb (as a subjunct), while the form without *s* is adjunctal, thus in *homewards: our homeward journey* (14.942) *indoors: his indoor life*. And if finally we compare the use of the plural form with *s* and the corresponding form without *s* in adjunctal use: *billiards: a billiard table* | *three volumes: a three volume novel* (71), we see a general tendency towards the distinction: forms with *s* standing by themselves, and forms without *s* standing in close connexion with other forms.

14.12. There is a distinction which, though developed in a different way, may have been vaguely felt by the speech-instinct in a certain period as parallel to that between *mine* and *my*, namely that between *twain* and *two*. The former originally was the masculine form, OE *twegen*, while the latter is the old neuter, OE *twi*: In ElE, at any rate in Shakespeare, *twain* was never used as a pre-adjunct, but only as a principal (standing by itself) or, more rarely, as a post-adjunct, while *two* could be used in any position. *Two* soon became practically the only form used, and *twain* now is merely a poetical or archaic form.

14.13. Apart from these formal differentiations there are some adjectives that are hardly ever used predicatively, and on the other hand some that are hardly ever used as pre-adjuncts. The former class comprises some ex-comparatives (formal comparatives that cannot now be used as real comparatives, followed by *than*): *latter, former; elder; inner, outer, utter, upper* and the other words formed in the same way from prepositions or adverbs. — See for these words vol. VII Index.
14.14. The second class comprises adjectives that cannot be freely used as pre-adjuncts. With some the reason obviously is that their signification demands a complement: thus ashamed (of something, ashamed to be seen), exempt (from), content (with), glad (of sth, to do sth), thus also the obsolete fain; able, unable (to do sth), mindful (of sth, to do sth). In the rare cases, however, when they are used in a more abstract signification without reference to anything particular, nothing hinders their being pre-adjuncts, as in Darwin (NED) an ashamed person | exempt cases, exempt jurisdiction (obs., NED) | an able statesman | Collins (NED) thy mindful tears. Glad is used as a pre-adjunct in reference to things (a glad summer, not colloquial; glad tidings, frequent in the Bible; glad emotions), but not to persons (Norwegian ‘en glad gut’ must be rendered a happy boy). A pre-adjunct form of content is contented, see Morphology under ed.

14.15. Many words beginning with a can only be used predicatively. This originates with such as are prepositional groups, e. g. alive (< OE on life), asleep, awake, asfloat, aswim, aglow. In the oldest formations of this kind we have on + a substantive; as, however in many cases (asleep, awork, athirst, etc.) the same stem is common to substantives and verbs, the resulting words were felt to be derived from the verbs, and new words of the same pattern were freely formed from nearly any short verb beginning with a consonant, and used as a kind of participle in predicative and post-adjunct positions, while the corresponding participle in -ing may be also used as a pre-adjunct: the fire is a-blaze | a (the) blazing fire, cf. also the beam is aslant | the slanting beam.

The following examples will show the employment of these a-words (some of them are nonce-words):

GE A 204 women’s voices . . are always either a-buzz or a-squeak | Browning 1.518 the slave that holds John Baptist’s head a-dangle by the hair | James TM 19 a storybook over which I had fallen a-doze and a-dream
GE A 444 the sun... shone on the windows and made them *a-flame* with a glory beyond that of amber | Scott Iv 233 he sate with his mouth *a-gape* | Coleridge B 43 with words and images all *a-glow* | Stevenson B 101 I am yet all *a-quake* | Zangwill G 312 he felt himself all *a-querer* | Quincey 160 before people were generally *astir* | Kipl S 121 like bees *aswarm*.

Only rarely do we find words containing *a-* used as pre-adjuncts; *aloof* (*a + loof* sb. ‘windward direction’) is in NED exemplified only from 1608 (*aloofe abodes*) and 1642 (*an aloofe message*); but it is found also in the 20th c.: Masefield C 27 the *aloof lady* | Bennett C 1.268 Superior and *aloof persons* (also ib 1.283, 304, HL 213, 308).

14.16. Curiously enough, the averseness to pre-adjunct employment, which is easily accounted for in the case of groups containing *a* (*on*) object, has been transferred to other words beginning with an *a-* of a different origin: *afraid*, participle of *affray* (OF *affrayer, effrayer* < *ex-fridare*; cf. vulgar *afeared*, as if from *on* + *fear*), *aghast* (ptc. of vb *agast* ‘frighten’, apprehended as = *a* + *ghost*), *averse* (< Lat. *ab* + *versus*), and *alone* (< *al(l)* + *one*). In the latter case, however, the exclusively predicative employment may be due to the composition with *al* (cf. Danish *alene* and G. *allein*), which also are not used as pre-adjuncts.

14.17. It is probable that the accidental identity of *a-* and the indefinite article has something to do with the disinclination to use any of these words attributively. (*An* *a-* was felt as a kind of awkward repetition, and *the* *a-* as a kind of contradiction). At any rate some of them can be used in that position when preceded by an adverb or other word, which, so to speak, hides away the *a*:

Twain Mississ 105 Half a dozen *sound-asleep* steamboats where I used to see a solid mile of *wide-awake* ones | Ridge G 43 wheeling the *fast-asleep* baby | ib. 283
the two fast-asleep servants | Darwin L 1.270 in what a
dead-and-half-alive state I spent the few last days | Stedman Oxf. 144 the dead-alive state of Anglicanism | Ridge
S 69 this dead and alive 'ole | Shaw D *23 half-alive people |
ib 258 the triumphant, pampered, intensely alive woman.

14.18. Finally we find that some of these words
develop a pre-adjunct form without a- (see my remarks
in Festskrift til Thomsen [1894] 21, and Slettengren,
Aphæretic Words in English 84). Whether the eel is
alive and he is alone were actually felt as containing the
indefinite article — an adjective, or whether the co-ex­
istence of such pairs of adverbs and adjectives as aloud:
loud, ahigh: high, around : round led analogically to the
shortening in these cases, the fact is that we get the
new adjectives in a live eel, live coals, a lone feeling, Di
D 36 a lone lorn creetur' (now generally lonely). Cf. the
illustrative passage in London W 81 there were live
things and things not alive . . he must watch out for the
live things. The things not alive remained always in one
place; but the live things moved about. (Rarer as in
Shelley 100 into the plain Disgorged at length the dead
and the alive).

Thus also from astray (some sheep are astray) we
get a pre-adjunct form stray: Fielding T 4.294 a stray
sheep | Thack N 271 stray papers. While this is re­
cognized, the parallel forms slope from aslope and slant
from aslant are rare: Tennyson 328 the slope street | ib
329 the slope city | Whittier 436 In its slant splendour.

Similarly the adjectives pert, and wayward (and vg cute)
have developed from apert, awayward (acute); cf. I 9.96.
Note also that a head wind corresponds to adverbial (and
predicative) ahead; cf. Clough 1.181 a dead-ahead wind
[= 1.182 a strong head wind].

Across (the) country when used adjunctively becomes
cross-country: a cross-country ride. But this of course may
be analyzed as containing the obs. prep. cross or else the
vb cross, cf. 14.7. But: breast-race (race with the boats
abreast) cannot be thus analyzed: Cambridge Trifles 107 if you're used to the Thames and breast-races (Not in NED). — Longshore fishers, from along shore.

Cf. also bashed, aphetic from abashed; a later example than those in NED is Bunyan G 127 with a bashed face.

14.19. Fijn van Draat, Anglia 36.23 f. believes that the reason why words beginning with a- are not often used as pre¬adjudcts is a purely rhythmical one: "The prefix being unstrest., pre-position would lead to a clash of stresses". This at any rate can only be counted a subordinate cause, and van Draat's own examples show that the English are not afraid of these 'clashes'. The above explanation covers the actual cases better than that given by van Draat. He mentions adust (with two examples, before stressed syllables!), but this word (< Lat. ptc. adustus) has never been averse to the pre-adject position, see numerous examples in NED. Thus also alert.—Van Draat goes on: "It is the same with other words that are commonly said to occur predicatively only: Content, exempt, ill etc. If all these just as afraid etc. occur so rarely before the noun, it is due to the fact that relatively few nouns begin with an unstrest syllable." If that were the true explanation, it would be difficult to account for the very frequent use before nouns of obscure, complete, etc. (cf. on stress-shifting I. 5.53), and especially the vast number of monosyllabic adjectives such as great, big, good, hard, blind etc. etc. As there has never been any disinclination to use these as pre-adjudcts, we must look for special (non-rhythmic) reasons in those rarer cases in which the position before a substantive is actually avoided, and I think the reasons given above will meet most difficulties.

Adjectival Groups

14.21. As already stated (14.11) most words that can be used predicatively can also be used as pre-adjudcts. Therefore we find in some cases longish groups transferred from the predicative position into pre-adjudcts in spite of the general aversion felt in English to those long group-adjudcts found so abundantly in German, and on the other hand adverbs (14.9) are also in some cases admitted as pre-adjudcts, because the use of an adverb as subjunct after such a verb as is or becomes
is not formally distinct from the use of a predicative adjective.

First I give examples of group-pre-adjuncts containing an adjective. These are more literary than colloquial, apart from such set phrases as *good-for-nothing* and *good-enough*. Hyphens are often used between the words of such groups when they are placed before their principal.

**14.22.** The order adjective + subjunct before the substantive is found with *enough*: Carlyle S 35 fragments, picked often at *wide-enough* intervals; ib 80 in *dreary enough* humour; Masefield M 213 *It's a common enough state of mind*; Swinb L 101 *we are on good enough terms together*; Black P 2.98 *It was a pleasant enough occupation*.

Frequently, however, *enough* is placed after the substantive, although it is thus farther away from the word it qualifies: Swinb L 201 *the attachment might be a good thing enough for him*; Black P 2.198 *It was a dreary picture enough*; Di N 24 *being a well-meaning woman enough*. Note that in the last quotation it would have been very awkward to place *enough* after *well*.

The same word-order is obligatory with *indeed*: a *very good dinner indeed* (or indeed a *very good dinner*), never a *very good indeed dinner*.

**14.23.** Adjective + preposition and its object: Defoe G 71 *a good man or a good-for-nothing man* (also 85); Thack P 2.187 *a good-for-nothing fellow*; GE M 1.306 *a good-for-nothing son*; GE Mm 227 || NP: *a ready to hand proof*; Shaw J 131 *a true-to-life tragedy*; NP '11 *Lip-reading taught to deaf and hard-of-hearing persons.* — Cf. p. 508.

Similar word-orders are found in: NP '11 *a heavier-than-air machine*; NP '12 *lighter-than-air craft*.

**14.24.** More often we have the order subjunct + adjective before the substantive as in German and Scand.: Di D 766 *it recalled that so-different time when ...*; Wordsw 176 *the sable orbs of his yet-vivid eyes*; Merri-man S 62 *a four-months-long winter*; NP '07 *One ear is
14.24—14.32.] Participial Groups. 337

an inch, the other nine inches long. While the inch high one is a deterioration. | Austen M 207 William, the so-long-absent and dearly loved brother | Ru F 86 the, alas, almost unexceptionable lot.

14.25. Very frequently, the subjunct bears the character of a parenthetic restriction: Wells A 75 considerations which point to the by no means self-evident proposition | NP 93 an if possible more glaring act of revolt | Ruskin S 151 the — to me frightful — discovery | Hardy W 125 she had given up the, to him, depressing idea of going | ib 137 the last hour of that, to Barnet, eventful year | Jackson Shaw 184 in on-the-whole lovable little system | James S 134 Chilver's now independent as he felt it to be, acquaintance with Mrs. D.]

The awkwardness of placing to me after the definite article is not much improved by placing it before the as in Carlyle R 1.53 a woman of to me the fairest descent.

Participial Groups

14.31. Participles with preceding subjuncts are generally a little unnatural as pre-adjuncts, except when the subjunct is an adverb of degree (including well): Sh Tw V. 1.319 The madly vs'd Malvolio | Ru P 2.31 the ravage of a just past inundation | Kipl L 91 like a many-times-repealed kiss | ib 22 his overlong-neglected gear | MacDonald F 261 that well-arranged and admirably carried-out performance.

a well-known author | a much-needed reform | that much-abused being, the general reader | Kipl S 215 a necessary but somewhat neglected factor in our humble scheme.

14.32. More frequently a group pre-adjunct consists of a participle and a subjunct that makes up a necessary part of the verbal idea (complemental subjunct): Sh Tim V. 1.101 he's a made-up-villaine | Goldsm 658 She's all a made-up thing | Shaw 2.290 all this is a made-up case | GE Mm 225 the piled-up produce | Caine E 10 a dammed-up
stream | Ridge G 50 laced-up boots | GE A 89 resting his nose on his master's stretched-out leg | Galsworthy M 265 between her stretched-out arms | Shaw D 161 the driven-out party | Shaw J 240 a cleaned-out gambler | Wilde P 16 the thin beaten-out leaf of tremulous gold | Holmes A 215 the lassitude of tired-out operatives | Wells V 89 the built-out bathroom | GE Mm 27 a walled-in maze | Kipl S 263 a baldish, broken-down captain. — Cf. below, p. 508.

Such a composite participle may be qualified by a preceding subjunct: Puttenham 157 the better brought up sort | Mill Fox 2.251 a most successfully made up party | Shaw D 194 he is a well set up man of fifty | Byron 556 Thy yet unslept-off revels | Hope Q 331 the dull and long-drawn-out ending of a piece | Shaw P 224 a tightly fastened down mouth.

14.33. The old practice in all Germanic languages was to have the subjunct (even when it was a necessary complement) placed before the participle; there are some remnants of this in English, though the adverb and the participle are now written together as one word: Sh R 2 II. 2.50 with up-lifted armes | Stevenson Dy 29 their upturned faces | Sh Wint III. 2.185. Thy by-gone fooleries Gissing R 97 a bygone day (but ib 88 and 128 in days gone by).

14.341. In the somewhat different case of a participle followed by a preposition it seems as if the adjunctal employment originated in the combination with un-: Sh H4A III. 2.141 your unthought-of Harry | Sh Wint IV. 4.549 th'unthought-on accident | Sh Cymb III. 3.24 rustling in unpayd-for silke | Sh John II. 1.560 this unlook'd for, unprepared pompe | Otway 265 thou wert born for yet unheard of wonders | Defoe G 60 What secret unaccounted for possession can it be | Hawthorne S 125 at many an unthought-of moment | Mill Fox 2.259 many hitherto undreamed-of conquests | McCarthy 2.307 in a wholly unthought-of quarter.
14.342. The corresponding positive combinations are on the whole more frequent with a preceding subjunct than without one:

BJo 3.8 the longed-for sun | Williamson L 10 the poor, innocent, sinned-against car (from Sh Lr, where the combination is predicative) || Austen M 209 that long-thought-of, dearly-earned, and justly-valued blessing | Di D 161 on this happy and long-looked-for occasion | Caine E 121 the most talked-of girl in Rome (ib 446).

A long group of this kind is used with humorous effect in Di L 52 a very small and not over-particularly-taken-care-of boy.

14.35. Sometimes we find participles followed by a preposition and its object as pre-adjuncts: Mered E 415 the formal carved-in-wood idol | Matthews A F 206 any of these made-to-order languages.

14.36. With these participial groups we may historically place adjunct-groups with ago, which is an old participle = agone, as in Mrs Carlyle 3.16 photographs of long-ago places or people | Kipl J 2.273 the long ago days (also B 141) | Read K 28 a years-ago liveliness that had been softened into a love of sad fun.

14.37. Present participles with a subjunct are rare as pre-adjuncts: Thack S 74 Dining-out snobs | Barrie MO 154 a going-about body. These of course may be (and should perhaps be) analyzed as containing the verbal substantive dining-out and going-about and not the participle.

14.38. Apart from such combinations as everlasting, ever-running (Sh H 5 IV. 1.293) and never-ending it is not customary to use present participles preceded by a subjunct. But looking is very often preceded by its predicative adjective: a good-looking girl | a healthy-looking boy | Fox 2.142 a much older-looking man. Cp. on the other hand Bennett C 1.231 the seeming-quiet provinces.
Infinitive Pre-adjuncts

14.41. Infinitive pre-adjuncts (with to, thus connected with 14.6) are frequent in the whole ModE period, but generally on condition of being preceded by a subjunct, such as not or never, more rarely another adverb: Lyly C 293 whose deepe and not-to-bee-conceived sighes | Sh Lr I. 4.223 breaking forth In ranke, and (not to be endur'd) riots | B Jo 3.46 your eye descended on so mean, yet not altogether to be despised, an object | Quincey 94 the never-enough-to-be-esteemed General Post-office | Coleridge Sh 216 the never to be too much valued advantage of the theatre | Di T 1.18 As to this, his natural and not to be alienated inheritance | Di Do 487 when she met the never-to-be-forgotten look | Tenn L 3.220 on another not-to-be-forgotten day | Ru F 196 the never to be enough damned guilt | Ru P 1.173 the unabated, never to be abated, geological instinct | Mrs Carlyle F 4.164 unavoidable or not to be avoided current expenses | Hope Ch 214 the eternally-asked, never-to-be-answered question, why people could not mind their own business || Franklin A 82 that hard-to-be-governed passion of youth | Di Do 272 the so-much-to-be-astonished Chicken || Housman J 54 if once your-admit election you must admit also the right of the to-be-elected one to refuse his candidature | NP '95 with respect to this — to-be — celebrated person. — See vb + obj 14.7.

The reason why such combinations as those found in the last two quotations are generally avoided is probably the awkwardness of the encounter of two weak words (the or a + to), especially when followed by the similarly weakly stressed be.

The following adjunct must be classed with the quotation adjuncts mentioned in 14.8: . Archer Am 92 the “to be continued in our next” interest.

14.42. Finally we have rare and hardly natural pre-adjunct groups containing infinitives in Fox 2.20 Hartley Coleridge’s about-to-be-published poems | GE Life 4.196 an impossible-to-be-realised wish | Shaw Fab 7 at
every important port or inland trade centre, and at
every likely-to-be-important port or centre | Shaw D* 59 a
more interesting-to-experiment-on vertebrate | NP '95 among
the stated-to-be-possible writers of these letters.

Other Group-adjuncts

14.51. While in all the preceding group-adjuncts
it was the predicative use that occasioned the use as
adjuncts, this is not the case with the following instances
of group-adjuncts, which are rather to be considered as
extensions of the use of substantives as adjuncts (ch. XIII),
compound substantives or substantival groups taking the
place of simple substantives.

Two substantives connected with and may together
form an adjunct:

a cat and dog life | a horse and cow doctor (some-
where in Hughes T) | Carlyle S 24 a Cause-and-Effect
Philosophy | ib 86 bread-and-water wages | Dowden Sh-
Primer 96 the lyrical boy-and-girl love of Lorenzo and
Jessica | Ward R 2.188 a boy and girl match | Thack
P 1.37 a staunch, unflinching Church-and-King man | ib 3.41
no Faust and Margaret business for me | Carlyle H 66 in
a life-and-death war | Di Ch 32 his scanty pepper and salt
trousers | Di Do 106 a slipper and dogs' collar man | Hope
D 21 to be a groom — it's a cup-and-ball sort of life.

14.52. The words connected with and need not
be substantives:

Di Sk 176 blue and gold curtains | Ward D 1.265
the blue and chocolate paper on the walls | Hardy W 84 a
row of those two-and-two brick residences.

14.53. A substantive + preposition + substantive
may be used as an adjunct if they form a natural
unity:

a man-of-war man [ə mæn ə 'woː man] | Swift T 21 in
the inns of court chapel | Zangwill G 393 I'm no breach-
of-promise lady | Ellis EEP 212 West of England vulgarisms |
Henderson Sc. Lit. 27 a chronicle of north of England
events | Hardy L 100 the end-of-the-age young man | Norris O 217 at that end-of-the-century time (also id S. 162, translation of fin de siècle) | Lecky D 1.22 Gladstone had a wonderful eye—a bird of prey eye | a rule of three sum | Carpenter P 120 the starvation-of-body-and-mind system | the City of London School | Thack V 174 the Sacrifice of Iphigenia clock | Anstey V 50 with an easy man-of-the-world air | Mered E 461 Mrs Mountstuart's woman-of-the-world instances of folly | a penny-in-the-slot machine (used by Shaw P 26 your penny-in-the-slot heroes, who only work when you drop a motive into them) | the Lights on Vehicles Act | Thack S 160 drunkards and five-o'clock-in-the-morning men | NP '87 no flash-in-the-pan legislation will benefit us | Norris O 203 a lazy, cattle-stealing, knife-in-his-boot Dago | Ru S 201 you can't quarrel in a side-by-side push. — Many of these approach quotation adjuncts (14.8).

Cf. also the familiar a four to one chance (e.g. Wells A 200) | a six to one majority (e.g. Bennett W 2.326).

14.54. In many adjunct combinations of (outwardly) the same structure a preposition is omitted before the first substantive, because the sequence prep. + subst. + prep. + subst. would not be tolerated in this place (a call from house to house, parties from Saturday to Monday):

a baker's man, making a house-to-house call every day | a room-to-room telephone | a word-for-word or a line-for-line translation | Carlyle H 18 a face-to-face and heart-to-heart inspection of the things | Saintsbury Eliz. Lit. 64 the decade-by-decade, almost year-by-year acquisition | NP '05 a step by step progress | Caine E 16 the characteristics that give the hand-to-hand touch with the common people | Wells A 45 an average door to office hour's journey of ten or a dozen miles | Hope I 126 they gave Saturday-to-Monday parties | ib 129 she was no mere Saturday-to-Monday visitor | Kipl L 18 the hand-to-hand nature of the battle (also ib 24) | Gissing G 129 the
day-to-day life | Shaw Ibs 12 the 1750—1850 view of the will as original sin | Mered R 35 engaged in man-to-man conversation.

14.55. With the omission of the preposition should be compared NP '89 his thick and thin worshippers (who worship him through thick and thin). On the whole prepositions are often omitted in adjuncts or, what amounts to the same, in compounds, cf. Fox 2.22 a wild horseback party of eleven (= party on h.) | home news (= news from home) | Lowell St 270 Dryden was always a random reader (read at random) | Keats 2.68 Came many a tiptoe, amorous cavalier (on tiptoe) | Mered E 110 your tip-toe curiosity | GE A 1 any chance com'er (by chance) | large-scale butter-making (on a large scale).

14.56. I add a few more loose compound adjuncts: Kipl J 2.265 if you can understand that upside down sort of happiness | Mered H 469 an upside-down old despot | Thack H 9 the “true blue” light six-inside post-coach.

Preposition with object

14.61. A preposition with its object may be used as a pre-adjunct. In afternoon tea we may say that it is not the combination of the preposition after + noon which is thus used, but that the ready-made substantive afternoon is the first-word of the compound afternoon-tea; but in most of the following examples no corresponding substantive exists: Ward F 333 that after-breakfast fog | Beaconaf L 214 the after-luncheon expedition | Thack P. 1.165 his supply of after-dinner whisky-and-water | Scott Iv 68 those over-sea refinements | Wells A 223 dependent on an over-seas food supply | Lamb E 1.199 his o'er-night vapours | Wells L 26 not clearly remembering the overnight occurrences | Caine E 517 the men in overall pinafores | overhead wires | Norris O 356 the open, above-board fury of his mind | the underground railway | an off-shore wind | Di D 304 dressed in an off-hand, easy style || Sweet Trans. Philol. Soc. '77—79, 454
the before Alfred remains of our language | Doyle S 2.106 smoking his before-breakfast pipe | Bentley T 369 my before-bedtime constitutional | Shaw J 264 the very old-fashioned and behind-the-times public school | Mered R 17 a monotonous betweenwhiles kind of talk. The last five examples are nonce-adjuncts, while the preceding ones are everyday expressions. It should be noted that with one exception (behind the times) the object has no article nor any other qualifying word.

The following two quotations show a very rare kind of pre-adjunct, the whole prepositional group being made to supply the want of a special participle: Byron 662 Unto a perishable and perishing, Even on the very eve of perishing, world | Ru P 2.11 he being then an ordained or on the point of being ordained, priest.

14.62. In some cases the preposition in such combinations is preceded by an adverb; thus especially out of and up to: Scott A 2. 199 out-of-door vocations | Fox 2.106 an out-of-doors party | Gissing R 223 out-of-doors coat | Lamb E 1.140 strangers and out-of-date kinsfolk | Hope Q 49 his doubtless out-of-date view | Fielding T 2.85 such out-of-fashion romantic nonsense | Defoe G 109 the most crooked, out of shape tree | NP '06 this out-of-the-ordinary young man | NP '06 few out-of-Parliament speeches | Lamb E 1.226 out-of-place hypocrisy | Doyle S 5.49 the poor out-of-work specialist | NP '07 go in for a right-out-in-the-middle-of-the-kitchen range || Byron DJ 12.32 Each out-at-elbow peer | Thack S 113 this huge, dreary, out-at-elbows place || Shaw P 205 the up-to-date Chicagoan | Amr NP '11 Dar-es-Salaam, the up-to-the-minute capital of German East Africa | Di Do 274 a rough and tough, and possibly an up-to-snuff, old vagabond || NP the costermonger retails his goods at a next-to-nothing profit | NP '10 near-at-hand spectators.

14.63. Where Shakespeare had without door as an adjunct (Wint II. 1.69 Prayse her but for this her without-dore-forme), the expression now is outdoor, which is formed in an different way, as out is not in itself used as
Preposition with object.

14.63—14.66. A preposition; the opposite is *indoor* (which also is irregular instead of *within door*) or sometimes *indoors*. Examples: Austen E 29 no *in-doors* man | Pinero B 76 a rattling good *indoor*, as well as *outdoor* wife | Ellis M 172 driving women out of healthy *out-door* avocations into unhealthy *indoor* avocations. Cf. also Stedman O 99 men invite their *out-College* friends. The leaving out of *with in* without may be compared with that in *drawing-room* for withdrawing-room.

But *inside* (as in Thack P 1. 308 an inside place in the coach) and *outside* (outside passengers, etc.) are differently formed, as in and out do not govern *side* as their object.

14.64. As *up* in *up the tree* and *down* in *down the street* must be considered as prepositions, we must class here also such combinations as Di D 510 an *upstairs* room | Thack V 123 the *upstairs* maid | Trollope D 1.284 one of the *upstairs* sofas | Ward R 2.156 in the *downstairs* room | Ward F 201 the *upstairs* door | Darwin L 1.321 It is *uphill* work writing books which cost money in publishing | a *downhill* walk | Stevenson MB 137 a vast amount of truly *down-East* calculation | Archer A 19 the huge *down-town* buildings | ib 23 the *up-town* riverside region.

*Along* before its objects is shortened into 'long, when the group is used as an adjunct (cf. 14.18), as in Stevenson M 11 a little 'long shore fishing.

14.65. As the past participle *past* (= *passed*) has become a regular preposition, we have corresponding adjuncts consisting of *past* — its object: Sh Alls II. 1.124 our *past-cure* malladie | ib IV. 3.158 what a *past-saving* slae is this? Cf. the modern *a past-due-protest.* — A somewhat similar case is *worth while*, in which *while* is the obj of the adj; it is rarely used as a pre-adjunct: Sinclair R 244 a *worth while* play or book (cf. 14.67 end).

14.66. Even prepositions from the classical languages are used in this way to form pre-adjuncts: Hope Q 274 *ante-marriage* days || Quincey 197 Mr. Anti-
slavery Clarkson | Ru F 128 anti-feminine-slavery colleges; Spencer F 85 chairs unpleasant to sit in — anti-caller chairs they might be named | Wells A 167 an anti-foreign party | Archer A 156 the anti-English bias | NP '12 the anti-suffrage movement is not an anti-woman movement | the Inter-Church Conference | interstate affairs | an inter-island steamer | international, inter-club, inter-team, inter-college or inter-school contests (NED) || GE L 1.21 in the pre-railroad, pre-telegraphic period | Wells A 101 a bunch of pre-Johannesburg Transvaals | Wells A 44 the limit of the pre-railway city | Wells M 89 the good old pre-board school days | Barrie M 222 in your pre-smoking days || Wells U 325 a vindictively pro-foreigner attitude | pro-foreign proclivities | NP a pro-Belgian, or rather pro-King Leopold speaker.

14.67. A few combinations of preposition + object may be used alone (predicatively): Ward R 2.307 she had been off-hand with Mrs T | Bennett W 1.151 I wish to be perfectly open and aboveboard. These may be said to be practically adjectives. — By the side of off-hand we find the anomalous formation in -ed: Masefield C 31 the off-handed ease.

The adjectivification of these and connected groups is sometimes shown by a derivative in -ness: Ru P 2.50 their quiet out-of-the-wayness | Collier E 190 the at-homeness | Cooley Human Nat 304 a sense of congeniality and at-homeness | NP '98 the minuteness and up-to-dateness of his information | Dickinson R 87 the worth-whileness of life | Butler E 196 the language is in the heart-to-heartness of the thing.

**Verb with object, etc**

14.71. In 8.6 we have considered the formation of substantives from (formless) verbs plus their objects. Such substantives like any other substantives may be used as adjuncts; the oldest examples I know are our breakbacke burdens and my breakneck fall, both of them
14.71—14.73. Verb with object, etc.

quoted from Heywood (1556 and 1562) in the NED. In Shakespeare I have found the following examples:

Lucr. 806 the *tell-tale* day | R3 IV. 4.149 these *tell-tale* women | As II. 7.21 with *lack-lustre* eye | Hml IV. 7.123 this 'should' is like a *spendthrift* sigh.

In some cases, it may be doubtful whether the word is a principal or an adjunct, thus Merch I. 3.112 You call me misbeliever, *cut-throat* dog (where a comma before *dog* would be quite natural, changing *cut-throat* into a principal) | Ven. 657 This *carry-tale*, dissentious jealousie (cf. LL V. 2.463).

14.72. In recent times, these combinations have become very frequent indeed; they evidently meet a want by offering a simple means of forming adjuncts from verbal phrases, where the ending -ing would be inconvenient. The parallelism with that ending as used in the simple verb is seen, for instance, in Tennyson Tiresias 44 their *knowing* and *know-nothing* books... in your *know-all* chapel.

Other examples: Cowper L 1.81 a *tie-noig*, square-toe figure | Carlyle S 186 the leaps from raft to raft were too often of a *break-neck* character | id R 2.271 the invalid carriage was evidently a *catch-penny* humbug (in the same way *catch-penny* Goldsm NED 1759) | a *catch-cold* weather (NED) | GEM 2.152 delicious *do-nothing* days | Trollope D 1.218 those stupid *do-nothing* days | Thack N 472 such a *tell-tale* face (also id P 1.278 and very frequent) | Meredith E 286 the paternal *pat-back* order of pity (nonce-word) | Austen S 296 a short and *take-leave* call | *crack-jaw* words | Stevenson MB 227 the *slap-dash* inconsequence of Byron's Don Juan | Egerton K 44 my *want-wit* agitation | Caine C 14 this hospital nursing is going to be a *lock-jaw* business | Di Do 208 a *dreadnought* pilot-coat, and a pair of *dreadnought* pilot-trousers (in this sense obsolete) | Wells L 39 at the *wash-hand* stand.

14.73. A personal pronoun is the object (cf. 8.65) in *catch'em-alive* paper ('em = flies) and in the nonce-formations Kipl MOP 188 he had seen rather more *help-
yourself fighting than most men | Bennett W 1.213 a haughty put-you-in-your-place beauty.

The object of the verb in such combinations is a verb (infin., cf. 8.66) in: hear-say evidence | Sidney 1580 (NED) with hear-say pictures | Ru Sel 2.77 a make-believe light | Sully Study of Childh. 38 a kind of make-believe game (rarely with the sb as in NP '08 this make-belief legislation). Shift is probably the substantive, not the verb in makeshift (legislation, etc.).

14.74. By this adjunctal use of words consisting of verb + object English has departed from the other languages possessing the same kind of substantives (8.61). Owing to the want of inflexion in adjectives they resemble adjectives, and as a matter of fact most dictionaries recognize the more usual ones among them as adjectives Breakneck, which in Shakespeare's time was only a substantive meaning 'a dangerous business' is now hardly ever used except as an adjective meaning 'dangerous'. Thus also dare-devil as in Thack V 345 the dare-devil excitement and chances of her life. Hangdog originally means a man who catches stray dogs to hang them, but as this occupation has disappeared, it is now used only as an adjective 'abject' (Thack P 3.386 with a hang-dog look, Ward D 3.11, etc.).

The adjectival character of these combinations is shown outwardly (1) when they take adverbs like very, most, (2) when they are able to stand alone, as predicatives, etc., and (3) when we have derivatives in -ry, etc. Examples of these phenomena:

(1) GE L 215 in a very makeshift manner | Thack S 117 in the direst and most cutthroat spirits | Doyle M 27 I had a very tell-tale face | id SF 123 It's a most breakneck place.

(2) Haggard S 307 the downward march was still sufficiently break-neck | Di N 674 Look a little brisker, man, and not so hang-dog like | Mered E 285 he would have been hangdog abject | Stevenson MP 31 there is no
feature in man so tell-tale as his spectacles | Kipl S 246

how you can make Latin prose much more cock-eye [= 'squinting'] than it is.

(3) Hope R 188 (and often) dare-devilry | Austen M 353 do-nothingness | Carlyle R 1.160 do-nothingism | Hope In 248 there is a thank-heaveny atmosphere of pronounced density about Lady B. | a catch-coldy person (NED).

14.751. The power of forming adjuncts of this type is extended to other verbal phrases, in which there is no object, and it serves the same purpose of dispensing with participles or verbal substantives in -ing. As lean-to-ing is totally excluded, and as leaning-to cannot be easily used before a substantive (the only parallel I can think of is a lying-in hospital), the simple form lean-to is used as in GE M 1.37 a lean-to pig-sty; lean-to is thus practically a new participle. Similarly stand-up in a stand-up fight (ib 1.210) is practically a verbal substantive, corresponding to running in a running match, while in stand-up collars (ib 1.257) it equals a present participle.

Examples (I have only recent ones):

[Swift T 28 two junior start-up societies, cf. 8.67] 1802 (NED) that die-away Miss | Quincey 277 a stand-up fight (also GE, Shaw 2.31, C 270) | Di D 750 a little, dirty, tumble-down public-house (also Di N 151, GE A 9 Trollope D 2.137, Mc Carthy 2.183, etc.) | Di D 154 and 493 a turn-up bedstead | Di Do 353 a fly-away bonnet | Di N 334 a lay down collar | ib 471 the best button-over jacket (not in NED) | ib 29 his lace-up half-boots (also Zangwill G 303, Philips L 19) | Stevenson Dy 56 a lean-to shed | Di Sk 486 a regular sit-down supper (also Merriman V 242, etc.) | Ridge L 282 and G 89 a hand-round supper | Norris P 50 just a pick-up lunch | Hardy W 6 a sit-still party .... a dancing-party was the alternative | Darwin L 1.391 What a go-ahead nation it is | Trollope O 208 these stand-off sort of fellows | Stevenson VP 84 folios full of knockdown arguments (also id MB 138, Mc Carthy 2.564, Caine M 425, spelt knock-down) | Lecky D 1.19 vote on
what is called the 'turn-about system'. These people, they will say, have had their turn; it is now the turn of the others | the look-out man on board | Bennett W 1.242 the new roll-down iron shutter | Williamson L 84 turnover collars | Shaw J 14* peg-away industry | Masefield C 189 from turn-to time | Herrick M 219 in their hold-up game.

The form run is probably the participle in Defoe R 2.100 the run away savage (also ib. 101), but in a run-away match it is probably the infinitive; perhaps also in recent use as in Shaw C 14 a runaway boy it must rather be taken as ptc than as an infin. Cf 8. 67.

14.752. Austen M 41 an indolent, stay-at-home man (also Thack E 2.121, GE L 3.93, Stevenson JH 135, etc.) | Hope Ch 148 a stick-in-the-mud Tory | NP '94 any fly-by-the-sky scheme | Hardy F 70 poor little come-by-chance children (come might be ptc.) | go-to-meeting clothes.

14.76. We find the same indications of these combinations being taken as adjectives as in a previous section (14.74):

(1) Trollope O 195 the most stay-at-home person that I ever heard of | Doyle S 1.65 I am a very stay-at-home man | Carpenter LC 31 the more go-ahead women.

(2) Ellis Trans. Philol. Soc. 1888. 81 but then America is so go-ahead | Wells U 146 a very go-ahead looking little port | Ward R 1.50 Catherine is so stand-off (also Shaw J 54, 103) | GE M 2.243 the great buildings were as dreary and tumble-down as ever | Norris P 159 Laura is so fly-away (also London A 182).

(3) Shaw J 73 dont be too stand-offish | Barrie W 107 standoffishness | don't-care-ism (NED), don't-carish (Muret's Dict).

14.77. In one case it is not the infinitive that enters into the combination, and we see how the rarely felt want of an active participle corresponding to the (hypothetical) past tense, is remedied: a would-be critic once said. Note here that critic is really the predicative of be; the subject of the sentence is the whole group-prin-
principal a would-be critic; but quite naturally critic comes to be looked upon as a principal, to which would-be is then an adjunct. Cf. Tennyson 561 She the would-be widow wife. When would-be has an adjective as predicative, it similarly fills the rôle of a subjunct, as in Wells L 297 a long rambling would-be clever letter. — Should-be is rare in this way: Quiller Couch Titania 167 The would-be-evening, should-be-mourning suit.

14.78. In mock turtle soup we have originally the adjunct mock-turtle composed of the verb mock and its object. But in many similar combinations the object is felt to be an independent principal, and mock then is taken as its adjunct: Di Do 187 with a smile of mock courtesy | Hawthorne S 213 garments of mock holiness | Caine C 187 in her mock sealskin. Dictionaries now give mock as an adjective meaning 'not genuine' without exactly explaining its grammatical origin. Before an adjective it is even a kind of subjunct: Shaw 1*12 the farfetched mock-Scriptural title | Bennett HL 273 he put on a mock-ruful smile. — Cf. below, p. 508.

The way in which sham from being a verb with an object becomes an adjective is exactly analogous: Congreve 267 his sham-sickness shan't excuse him | Fielding 3.424 from such sham applause | modern pun: champagne [sham pain] to your real friends, and real pain to your sham friends | Meredith E 91 they will not have real greatness above them, so they have sham.

14.791. We have a transitional form between the type tell-tale face and the quotation adjuncts to be soon treated, when an adjunct consists of an imperative sentence, that may sometimes be continued in an indicative sentence; many of the quotations belong to the jocular style:

Hughes T 2.100 a dirty, bargain-driving, buy-cheap-and-sell-dear aristocracy | Vachell H 150 John was of the look-before-you-leap, the think-before-you-speak, sort | NP '06: a wrestling match . . in the ‘catch-as-catch-can’ style | Amr
NP '12 an announcement fashioned after the get-rich-quick literature | Doyle NP '11 in an unctuous, make-everything-easy voice | NP '09 the Broadway pay-as-you-enter cars | Di Pw 1.100 a little man with a puffy Say-nothing-to-me, or I'll-contradict-you sort of countenance | Kipl ST 4 wan av thim lamblike, bleatin', pick-me-up-an'-carry-me-or-I'll-die gurls.

14.792. With give and take, etc. as adjuncts should be compared the corresponding use of such groups as substantives (8.26): Di Do 8 a well-matched, fairly balanced give-and-take couple | ib 225 It's a give-and-take affair | Mered E 175 charming colloquy, the sweetest give and take rattle he had ever enjoyed with a girl. || GE Mm 54 any hide-and-seek course of action | Di N 270 touch-and-go farce | ib 106 the cut-and-thrust Counts in melodramatic performances | Lowell St 250 the hop-skip-and-jump theory of versification.

Quotation Adjuncts

14.81. A quoted phrase, a motto or a by-word may be used as an adjunct (cf. quotation substantives: 8:2). First I give some instances in which the quotation contains no verb:

Norris O 559 we want a yes or no answer | Hazell's Ann. '87 Mr Bright is not what is called a "peace-at-any-price" man | Fox 2.15 Carlyle thinks everything conducted on the least happiness for the greatest number principle | Cooley, Human Nature 5 a decline of public spirit and an every-man-for-himself feeling | NP '12 the two keels to one policy | Collingwood R 58 the 'early-to-bed' plan was impracticable | Thack P 3.129 he took the not guilty side of the case | Smedley F 1.45 with a "quite at home" kind of air | Hughes T 2.247 in a more than usually no-business-of-yours line | Holmes A 322 he is the real, genuine, no-mistake Osiris | Wells U 100 the outright Return-to-Nature Utopians.
Adverbs used as adjuncts.

14.82. Next we have regular sentences with subject and verb, etc., used as quotation adjuncts, as in Lowell 329 With an I-turn-the-crank-of-the-Universe air | Mered H 395 Rose is spiritually self-willed; a 'she will' or 'she won't' sort of little person | Kipl L 82 such an aggressive, cock-sure, you-be-damned fellow | Wells V 68 all the old "Well, and how are we?" note gone | Shaw D*51 using the "you're another" retort | NP Chemist . . . smiling in a won't-you-pay-up manner | Grand T 19 Roderick Random is a kind of king-can-do-no-wrong young man | ib 38 their mother had a comfortable as-it-was-in-the-beginning-is-now-and-ever-shall-be feeling about them.

14.83. While these are nonce-formatione, one sentence has become permanently settled as a pre-adjunct, namely devil-may-care, which may even take the subjunct rather: Hankin 2.15 a handsome, rather devil-may-care young man.

14.84. New section. See below, p. 508.

Adverbs used as adjuncts

14.9. Some (but by no means all) adverbs can be used as adjuncts before substantives. This is especially the case with such short and everyday adverbs as have no corresponding adjectives; this accounts for the frequency of then in this employment as compared with the rarity of now, which has the adjective present to express the same notion. — With this section should be compared the shifted adjuncts mentioned in ch. XII, especially 12.27.

14.91. Adverbs of time.

Then (NED 1653 the then great design, and similar combinations, are grammatically ambiguous as then may be subjunct to great): NED 1584 the then duke of Northumberland | Sh Cor II. 2.93 (only place in Sh) our then Dictator | Franklin 68 the then state of my mind (also 74,113) | Lamb E 2.175 the then Drury-lane theatre (also R 91) | By DJ 4.96 Juan's then ordeal | ib 7.37 | Coleridge B 44 in my then opinion | 'Di Pw 2.78 in his then state of Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
intellectual complication | Carlyle R 141 on the then terms | ib 170 in my then Annandale summers | Ru P 1.254 in my then fashion | Seeley E 69 In the then condition of the world.

now: NED 1444 the saide nowe maistur | not Sh | BJo 3.186 your now mistress | Carlyle R 1.225 one child of the now Mrs Montagu's own | Mered E 100 Crossjay's father, the now captain of marines.

once: NED 1548 the once sacrifice | 1691 the once generalissimo | not Sh | By DJ 10.20 the once thinkers | Thack N 712 her once-husband | Jerome T 82 the once Miss Ramsbotham. — Cf. below, p. 508.

oft, often (for use with verbal substantives, see 12.271) NED 1526: thyne often diseases. Now only in the combination oftentimes (e.g. Defoe G 66), archaic oftentimes, cf. ME oft(e)-sithe(s), e.g. Ch G 1031.

seldom (with verbal sbs, see 12.271) NED 1528 an excedinge seldom gylfe | Sh Sonn 52 (only place in Sh) the fine point of seldome pleasure | Twain M 107 the seldomest spectacle. Now scarcely ever found (rare supplies the want).

14.92. since, rare (NED only 1598, 1700, 1849 Froude): Ru P 2.77 my since experience.

after (cf. compounds like afterthought, after-birth, which cannot be separated from the following combinations): Sh Ro II. 6.2 That after houres with sorrow chide vs not | Sh Sonn 90 And dce not drop in for an after losse | Coleridge B 51 in his after writings (also 6,45) | Di N 40 they might prove of some after use | GE L 2.234 an after sadness belonging to brief-interrupted intercourse | Ru T 161 in after life | Dobson F 5 in after years | Poe S 94 a scene which no after events have been able to efface.

hereafter is not quite indubitably an adjunct in Sh H6 A II. 2.10 that hereafter ages may behold what ruine happened; thus also R.3 IV. 4.390. NED has some examples with verbal sbs.
hitherto (quotations in NED from Mad. d'Arblay, Newman, and Green): Ru F 134 these hitherto seditions.

whilom (archaic and rare): Merriman S 17 the whilom rival of Moscow (also 137).

evermore: Sh Sonn 147 frantick madde with ever-more vnrest; thence probably Tennyson 298 my evermore deight. Not as adj. in NED.

Here may also be mentioned the following compounds: Sh R 2 I. 2.54 thy sometimes brothers wife | Sh R 2 V. 1.37 Good sometime(s) queene (ib. V. 5.75) | Norris O 60 The one-time writing-teacher of a young ladies’ seminary | Hardy L 15 the death of the aforetime vicar of Gaymead | Mered H 56 an erewhile bondsman.

14.93. Late in the sense ‘that was recently’ as in the late Lord Mayor, his late wife is distinct from the originally adjectival use in late hours, of late years; it must originate in the adverbial use, as in John Smith, late Lord Mayor of London, or (Spencer, NED) Late king, now captive; late lord, now forlorn.


Adverbs of place may sometimes be used as pre­adjuncts before verbal substantives implying motion or stay, though nowadays post-position is preferred (15.73):


14.942. We have adjunct forms in -ward corresponding to the adverbs which generally end in -wards in colloquial speech, though very often in -ward in the written language (see Morphology on adverbial -s): Scott Iv 71 of a right onward and simple kind | Macaulay B 191 the history of his downward progress | Tenn 127 their little streetward sitting-room | ib 258 as mounts the heavenward altar-fire | ib 258 an upward mind | Wells A 278
the abyssward drift | Gosse D 196 Fine skies infatuate the upward gazer upon windy days | Wells T 7 his sky-ward stare.

Straightforward is now much more frequent as a real adjective than as an adv.; Mered E 358 I'm the straightforwardest of men.

The adjectival character is shown most distinctly by the possibility of the formations straightforwardly (adv.) and straightforwardness (sb.); but the above-mentioned forms in -ward have not become real adjectives.

14.95. Here in the vg this here boy and there in the (rarer) vg that there boy may be looked upon as a kind of subjunct to this, that, or as an adjunct to the substantive; cf. the post-adjunct which is recognized, as in Sh Hml II. 2.577 this player here. Both are joined together vulgarly in Bennett A 49 This 'ere works 'ere.

hither (very frequent, NED from 1387 on) and thither (less frequent): Swift P 39 the hither end of our metropolis | Huxley in Darwin L 2.179 a few years on the hither and thither side of thirty | Ru Sel. 1.264 on the hither side of the table | Bridges E 47 their hither flight | Mered H 142 the hither shore.

above (frequent = above-mentioned, above-written): Brontë P 11 the above letter. In another sense we have post-position: the Powers above (= in Heaven).

under, beneath: Sh Cor IV. 5.98 all the vnnder fiends (†) | Thack P 3.35 in an under tone | Ru Sel 1.106 the under mountain form | Bennett W 2.143 the under portion || Sh Timon I. 1.44 this beneath world (†). — The under-lip will most often be looked upon as a compound; but that under is felt as a separate word, is seen in Poe 339 the magnificent turn of the short upper lip — the soft voluptuous slumber of the under.

off frequent in the off side | the off leader (the horse to the right) | Kipl L 29 on the off-chance of another round | NP '96 the offest of off chances.

Cf. also off and on: Wordsw P 4.187 the off and on companion of my walk | Black F 2.276 your off and on relation with him. — Cf. below, p. 508.
14.961. *Far* used to be frequently employed as an adjective, thus OE, ME, EL; now it is hardly anything but an adverb, apart from a comparatively few fixed combinations, the *Far West* (*North, etc.*), a *far horizon*, the *far end* (*the very end*). In the Bible, Luke 15.13, where the Authorized and Revised Versions have *into a far country*, the XXth Cent. Translation has *into a distant land*. But apart from a *far country* (often) and a *farre land* (Deut. 29.22) the AV has adjectival *far* only in Mark 13.34 a *farre iourney*. Shakespeare and Milton have *far* only as an adverb. Quotations: More U 27 the *farre contreys* | Swift 3.301 from a *far place* | ib 3.305 from a very *far country* | GE A 38... set up his tent in a *far country* (biblically) | ib 192 he was seated in his *far corner* | ib 193 she hastened her step towards the *far deal table* | Ru S 199 sight of *far horizon* | James S 25 | Merriman S 136 | Shaw C 94 the train came into hearing in the *far distance* | ib 95 the *far sound* of the train | Gissing R 158 those *far memories* | Dickinson R 77 a *far river*.

Now the compounds *far-off* and *far-away* are preferred as adjuncts; they never occur in the AV in that employment. Sh used *far-off* in this way in his first period (Lucr 1386 those farre of eyes), and Milton similarly twice in his first period. We have also other similar compounds as adjuncts: Ritchie M 234 in those *far-back Roman days* | Hardy F 416 to make a bargain for a *far-ahead* time.

In the comparative and superlative, *further* (*farther*) and *furthest* (*farthest*) are freely used as adjuncts, whereas the combinations with *off* are rare except as adverbs.

14.962. *Near* as an adjunct or adjective seems to be derived from the adverb (examples in NED from the 14th c. on): *a near relative*, etc. In America we have an adjunct compound corresponding to those with *far*: Norris O 89 the few *nearby trees* | Worth S 7 in a *near-by town*. — Cf. below, p. 508.
14.963. Though *about* cannot be used adjunctively cf. 14.1 on *a-*, *roundabout* can, as in Thackeray's *Roundabout Papers*.

When Wordsworth (p. 207) writes *the round ocean*, it seems to mean 'surrounding, seen all round, the ocean round us', and thus is an adjunct use of the adverb *round*.

14.97. *Other adverbs as adjuncts.*

14.971. From the predicative use *I am well* it is customary in America, but not in England, to derive a pre-adjunct use: all the *well* passengers | Williamson S 17 a strong, *well* girl | London A 10 the *well* men. As a principal in NP (US) '10 The lame can walk with the same ease as the *well*. — In a different way *well* day 12.43.

14.972. While *well-to-do* is pretty frequent as a pre-adjunct (*w. people, etc.*), *well-off* and *ill-off* are rare in the same position, as in Barrie M 430 some *ill-off body*, though this employment is really presupposed by the use as a primary in Spencer M 73 those who are relatively *well-off* . . . no consolation to the *ill-off*. Cf. p. 508.

14.973. *Ill* was formerly extremely frequent as a pre-adjunct with all kinds of substantives, see e.g. the long list in Schmidt’s *Sh-lex*. This is now obsolete, apart from the proverb *It is an ill wind that blows nobody any good* (Quincey 267 with *which* instead of *that* and without *any*; cf. Di D 205 What wind blows you here? Not an ill wind, I hope?). Poetically, *ill* is thus used in Tennyson 270 Doubt and Death, *Ill* brethren. In ordinary prose, *ill* is now only found as an adjunct in certain fixed combinations, which are to be considered as compounds and are often written with a hyphen (especially *ill-luck, ill-health, ill-temper, ill-will*). I subjoin a list of quotations, giving only the substantive, unless the words are joined by a hyphen in the editions employed: Caxton R 28 *lyf* | Ascham S 69 *men* | Lyly C 289 *face* | Swift J 9 and 58 *company* | *ib* T 112 *ill ways* (= 'bad roads') Defoe P 92 *language* | *id* R 14 *fate* | *id* G 6 and R 2.133
Adverbs used as adjuncts.

So-so is sometimes used as an adjunct in the sense 'indifferent, not quite good': By DJ 13.82 a so-so matron | Coleridge (in Campbell's ed. XXX) I am a so-so chemist. Cf. the predicative use with very in Collingwood Ru 28 Mrs. Ruskin, in a letter, finds the poetry very so-so.

Headlong is pretty frequent adjunctively: Kipl S 128 headlong inquisition | Wells N 45 headlong, aimless and haphazard methods.

Extempore occurs in this use (in extempore verses, etc.) as far back as Ben Jonson (NED). In 18th c. it was
often written *extempory*, the ending being adapted to the ordinary adjective ending.

14.98. The adverb *otherwise* is joined to a post-adjunct in: thoughts wise and otherwise | Thack S 70 kind souls, snobbish or otherwise | Hewlett Q 191 things of interest, moral and otherwise—and from this is deduced the rare pre-adjunct use in Jerome T 112 the wise and otherwise things they did | Ru P 2.234 the fortunate, or otherwise, meaning.

Similarly, from the often-quoted line in Campbell's *Pleasures of Hope*: "like angel-visits, few and far between" (Di Do 113 glimpses few and far between, of Florence) we get the pre-adjunct in Holmes A 41 our few and far-between racing stables | Hardy L 181 such old-fashioned and far-between people.

14.99. Other adverbs are not employed in this way except when they go in pairs: Hardy F 264 taking an *up-and-down survey* before retiring | Wells T 47 he proCLAIMED himself an utter *out-and-out failure* | Doyle S 2.133 like these *out-and-out* pirates who will leave no survivor from a captured ship | NP his *out-and-out* defence of the Establishment | Archer A 25 the flashing *out-and-in* electric advertisements.—Cf. *off and on* above 14.75.

Chapter XV

Adjuncts. Concluded

Two Adjuncts

15.11. One and the same principal may have two or more adjuncts before it. This presents no grammatical interest when they are strictly coordinated, as in Thack N 59 some *pert little satirical* monitor | Di T 1.54 a *stinking little black* court-yard.

The order of the several adjuncts is naturally regulated by the order in which the ideas present themselves
to the mind of the speaker, and no general rule can therefore be established in those cases in which the adjuncts are strictly coordinated. But very often different relations obtain between the several adjuncts and the principal, and then it is possible to give some rules of precedence for certain adjuncts. — Cf. p. 508.

15.121. Adjuncts indicating quantity and number ("quantifiers") precede other adjuncts: much red wine | many (few, five) black hats | every (any) new book | all short notes, etc. Thus also with double: double the amount, and half: half this army | half an army. Note the difference between half another cup (when one has had a whole cup, or more) and another half-cup (when one has had half a cup). — Cf. 12.57, 12.58.

Besides half a crown we have also a half-crown as a compound substantive; thus also a half-dozen (Thack V 53.128, etc.) | ib 352 a half score times | ib 82 in a half-score of walks . . . in a half-hundred of corridors | Twain M 168 a half dollar | Hope D 90 a half-sovereign, three half-crowns, and a shilling | Aldrich S 59 with a half smile on his lip; etc.—Sometimes the two expressions are blended and we get a put twice: Black P 2.36 I shall be lying in this bed, with a half-a-dozen of you round about | Twain M 168 I've told you a half a dozen times before.

15.122. This explains the tendency to place numerals before first, last, next, as in Spect 167 the three next pictures | Franklin 45 the two first | Sheridan 276 the four first acts | By DJ 9.61 The two first feelings | Austen M 241 the two first dances | Austen E 79 the eight first lines | Ruskin P 1.215 the two first books (also Stevenson A 33).

15.123. But there is a conflicting tendency in such cases to place the numeral last and thus connect it with the substantive (cf. the unification of plurals 5.1, especially 5.16), as in Swift T 63 the first three strollers | Kingsley H X the last four years had decided the fate of Rome | Di D 221 for the next two days | Stevenson A 34 In the next four phrases | Shaw D 220 our last four Prime Ministers.—Always the first few years.
Pedants have objected to combinations like the three first lines on the absurd plea that there is only one first line (as if it were not possible to speak of the first years of one's life!). Earle (Engl. Prose 265) prefers the order the first three to the three first, because it is possible to say the first twenty, etc., whereas the twenty first would clash with the ordinal of 21. Sweet (NEGr § 1791) does not see the psychological reason for the two word-orders when he says: "When the two modifiers are about equally balanced, the order may vary, as in the two first weeks, the first two weeks." On the history of both orders see NED first le and Lounsbury SU 127 ff.

15.13. A similar conflict exists with regard to the relative position of other and a numeral; the usual order is to place the numeral first: the two others (cf. 17.75 on the ending -s). Thus Austen M 199 the pleased looks of the three others standing round him | James S 48 to join the two others.

But the opposite order is frequent, even when the unification is not obvious: Sh Cymb III. '3.76 he that strikes The venison first, shall be the lord o' th' feast, To him the other two shall minister | Franklin 47 to mention the other two | Scott Iv 452 three arrows...one...the other two | Stevenson T 140 one of the other four (also 142, 175, B 182) | Wells A 84 what we do not detect in our other two elements.

Without a defining word this is no longer possible as in AV Math 4.21 he saw other two brethren (in 20th C. V he saw two other men who were also brothers); Black Ph 355 "we wished to go on to Lockerbie, so as to reach Edinburgh in other two days" does not seem to be natural (Scotch?). Cf. 17.112 other some.

15.14. Pronominal adjuncts generally precede other adjuncts, as in my new dress | this (the) black ball | the same rickety chair, etc. Note the precedence of the quantitative adjunct in all my money | both your eyes; but on the other hand your two eyes.

The obsolete combination in Bunyan G 11 'for these, and other my ungodly practices' is indefinite, while my other practices would be definite. Thus Sh Wiv II. 2.258, H4B IV. 4.53, Lr I. 4.259.
15.151. In many cases the two adjuncts are not really coordinate, as one, which is then placed last, belongs closely to the substantive and forms one composite idea with it: Quincey 76 poor afflicted human nature | McCarthy 2.240 the Polish cause had been the political first love of many a man | a successful literary career | Galsworthy M 133 broken wooden boxes.

Di N 44 in high good humour | Kingsley H 335 in high good-humour [notice the hyphen] | Stevenson JHF 149 a combination of great prudence and great good luck | Hardy F VII by great good fortune | Bennett W 2.321 by that strange good fortune | Archer A 71 gaily, humorously, and in perfect good temper | Masefield C 35 extreme short sight. (Perfect and extreme here approach the function of an adjective-subjunct, cf. 15.2).

Note also the combinations with a superlative in Shaw Pur 278 with the utmost good humor [Shaw's own spelling] | Mrs Browning A 118 the best good fortune.

15.152. This explains why such adjectives as old, young, little are so often placed after other adjectives, as they form one idea with the following substantive: a clever young man | Sh Hml IV. 1.12 The vnseene good old man | Wells T 46 weak Cockney young men | Thack N 922 your orphan little boy | Di D 775 a mild, meek, calm little man (note the commas between the coordinated adjectives). When little and old come together, little is generally placed before old: a little old man (examples ESt 41.310).

15.16. The common Elizabethan address good my lord, etc., seems to have come about in the same way, my lord having become a kind of composite substantive comparable to the French monsieur. Thus also in Sh Mch Ill. 2.27 Gentle my Lord. This was then extended to similar groups: LL I. 2.71 sweet my childe | ib IV. 1.18 good my glasse (in addressing the mirror) | BJo 1.11 Good my saucy companion | ib 1.103 oh, good your worship.—We have an imitation of this idiom in Mrs Browning A 62 O sweet my father's sister.
The word-order according to the usual rule was also found in E1E (Sh Mcb III. 4.26 I, my good lord | LL V. 2.517) and is now the only natural one.

15.171. In such combinations as how great a man, the word-order must be explained from the fact that how must necessarily be placed first (like any interrogative or relative word), and that the adjective great is naturally attracted to how and therefore comes to be placed before a in spite of the general tendency to place this pronominal adjunct before other adjuncts. (Compare also what a sight!) A similar explanation holds for the word-order in so great a man, too great a sum, from which the same word-order has spread to other instances in which a subjunct of degree attracts an adjective and makes it precede the article. Examples:

How: More U 78 Loke, with how long and tedious a tale I have kept you | Sh Hml III. 2.380 how unworthy a thing you make of me | Defoe R 335 remembering how sincere a friend he was now to me | Poe 119 I could not help thinking how picturesque a group we composed.—How: however dark a night.

15.172. So: Ch B 1024 So virtuous a livere . . ne saugn I never | Sh Gent II. 4.106 so high a servant | Sh Tp III. 2.111 Is it so brave a lasse? | Defoe G 36 no prince ever obtain'd such an elevated character in so short a time | Morris N 16 the weaver, who was scarcely so well mannered a man as the ferryman | Hope In 42 so young and pretty a woman.

Such is etymologically so + like; therefore such a belongs here; it has been so frequent for many centuries that no examples are needed (cf. Sh Gent II. 4.106 below, too, Defoe G 36 above, so); also 16.45 and 16.782.

As: Sh Hml III. 2.60 thou art eene as just a man As ere my conversation ceap'd withall | Mi A 39 in as arrant an implicit faith | Goldsm 639 it was as confounded a bad answer as ever was sent.
15.173. Too: Sh Gent II. 4.106 Too low a mistres for so high a servant. Not so, sweet Lady, but too meane a servant To have a looke of such a worthy mistresse. Di N 331 You have much too open and generous a countenance for that.

15.174. No before an adverb of degree in the comparative: NP '06 Bradshaw was no less great a genius | Collingwood P 366 a cousin of the artist, and in his way no less remarkable a man | Ingram Marlowe 141 No more terrible an exposition was ever offered.

No is also used in the same way before an adjective in the comparative: Sh Merch V. 1.106 no better a musician; cf. below sub no 16.88.

15.175. Rarer combinations: Caxton R 101 what [= how] many a spyly worde haue ye brought forth | Sh Ant V. 2.236 What poore an instrument May do a noble deede | Ch G 648 whan a man hath over-greet a wit | Buchan Sir W. Raleigh 77 he has over nice a sense of honour | Sh Meas II. 2.46 You could not with more tame a tongue desire it | Jerome T 23 he might have asked the question in more serious a tone | NP '06 to make Oxford more serviceable a part of our educational system | Balfour NP '09 it is far smaller a margin than we have been accustomed to || Thack N 139 Excellent a woman as she is, I would not like to live in lodgings where there was a lady so addicted to playing | GE Mill 1.13 Big a puzzle as it was, it hadn't got the better of Riley. — Cf. p. 509.

15.18. The conflict between the tendency to have the adjective immediately after the adverb of degree and the tendency to have the indefinite article as early as possible leads to its being placed between the two parts of a compound in Sh John IV. 2.27 putting on so new a fashion'd robe | Sh Temp IV. 1.123 So rare a wondred father | Goldsm 635 as fine a spoken tailor as ever blew... | Sheridan Sc 63 (= 227) as stern a looking rogue as ever I saw | ib 64 as honest a looking face as any | Rehearsal 107 as far a fetch'd fancie as ever you saw.

On the other hand the habit to have a in this way after so, etc., leads sometimes to the article being inserted even when so is preceded by some other pronoun that is generally incom-
Adjective-Subjuncts

15.21. As already hinted (1.23), the first of two coordinate adjuncts sometimes tends to be subordinate to the second and thus nearly becomes a subjunct though preserving its adjective form. We term these words adjective-subjuncts.

As a starting-point we take the joining together for the sake of emphasis of two epithets that mean nearly the same thing. Here it matters very little whether the more descriptive one is made into an adverb (icy cold) or is simply placed as an adjective before the second adjective (icy cold). The latter construction is generally preferred, at any rate in colloquial English. Examples:

Di Ch 19 It is burning hot! It is scalding hot | Vachell H 244 a blazing hot day | Tenn L 2.117 it is pestilent hot | Caine C 301 he had looked icy cold | Brontë P 168 stony cold and hard | Wilde L 26 the night was bitter cold (cf. Sh Hml I. 1.8) | Di N 314 Sir Mulberry . . declaring with a shiver that it was “infernal cold” | Wells N 206 she would have made a shocking bad nurse | Austen M 224 they are grown up amazing fine girls | Swift P 127 a sad dirty house | Mered H 170 with B. I am excellent good friends | Di Do 269 ashy pale | Wilde D 177 his face became ghastly pale | Hope Z 233 a warm, tight-fitting woollen jersey | snowy white.

Wide open | broad open (not so frequent; Dryden 5.222 with eyes' broad open) | Di Do 81 wide awake . . . broad awake; the latter also e.g. Tennyson 53, Hawthorne T 50, but Hardy W 250 broadly awake.
Burns calls a poem “Address to the Unco Guid or the Rigidly Righteous”, but in the poem itself he writes, “The Rigid Righteous is a fool, The Rigid Wise anither” (1.217).

But in a combination like _icy_ regular (Tennyson 289) the former word must, of course, be a subjunct to the latter and could not be made into the adjective _icy_.

15.221. It is easily seen how in such combinations the first adjective tends to become a subjunct to the second, and as it were, a mere adverb of degree. At first it can only be used as such before an adjective of related signification; but if it is used extensively in such combinations, it is by and by felt as signifying nothing else but intensification, independently of the meaning of the following adjective, and may then be used before all kinds of adjectives. The development has been carried furthest in the case of the two words _very_ and _pretty_.

15.222. _Very_ at first, like _F _vrai, _OF _verai, is an adj. meaning ‘true’; thus still in _the very night_, etc. But already in ME we see the beginnings of the development into the present adverb; it starts from such combinations as Ch A 72 a _verray parfit gentil_ knight, and E 2285 a _verray trewe wyf_; where the transition is easy from ‘real’ to ‘really’ and ‘in a high degree’. In the 15th c. _very_ begins to be used generally as a subjunct before all kinds of adjectives (and adverbs) though Caxton does not seem to use it in this way; and gradually it becomes the favourite intensive, outsting _full_ and _right_ (see Stoffel, Int. 28 ff., Borst G 126 ff.) Milton avoids the adverb _very_ (Ps 6.4 is the only place where it occurs in his poetical works).

15.223. _Pretty_ is not found as an adverb before an adjective in Sh, though All II. 3.212 (I did thinke the... to bee a _prettie wise_fellow) shows how the transition from an adjunct-adjective to an adverb may have begun; from the end of the 17th c. it becomes frequent
in the present sense of 'tolerably, fairly'. Cf. Stoffel Int 147 ff., Borst G 147.

15.23. While these two words have become frankly adverbs and are now used in all styles, the following words are not recognized in the same way as regular adverbs of degree; many of them were very frequent as adjective-subjuncts in the 18th c., but are now used in this acceptation chiefly in familiar or even vulgar speech. With regard to *wondrous* it must be noted that this form may represent the ME adverbial genitive *wondres*, *wonders* (Ch. R 72, cf. More U 253 wonders gladde) rather than an adjective formed by means of the ending -ous.

Examples of *wondrous* and synonyms: Sh (frequent) Mids V. 1.59 wondrous strange snow | Beaumont 4.349 a goodly man? A wondrous goodly! | Mi PL V. 155 this universal Frame. Thus wondrous fair; thy self how wondrous then! | Swift T 127 it shall pass for wondrous deep, because it is wondrous dark | Browning 1.409 (archaic) little though wondrous fat | Bacon A 15.6 wonderfull strange (twice in Sh) | Beaumont 4.354 You are angry; Monstrous angry now; grievously angry (m. twice in Sh) | Defoe R 31 it was a monstrous great one | ib 191 growing so monstrous thick | Austen S 110 a monstrous pretty girl (so often in Miss Austen) | More U 218 the wyttes... be maruelous quycke | Austen S 125 Norland is a prodigious beautiful place, is it not? (also 127).

*Uncommon*, only 19th c. As the quotations show, Sweet (see Storm 733) is right in saying that it is found also with educated speakers: Smedley F 1.190 she took uncommon kindly to the champagne | Thack, GE, Kipl see Borst G 122 | Ward E 279 there are some uncommon good things in it | Hope F 30 (aristocrat:) He's an uncommon fine fellow | Hope Ch 57 uncommon pretty | Hope M 54 He was uncommon seedy this morning.

*Extraordinary*: Rehearsal (1671) 43 'tis extraordinary fine. In NED examples from 1632—1778; now very rare, except in Sc: Wilde Im 8 Bunbury's extraordinary
bad health | Barrie T 127 he is looking most extra-

Ordinar meek.

Rare, colloquial: he's a rare good chap, cf. Storm

EPh 731. — Cf. also Sc unco guid < OE uncup, orig.

'unknown'.

15.24. Precious (very common colloquially, but not
till 19th c.): Brontë P 98 Precious little | Ward F 35
you'll be precious sorry for it | Hope Ch 49 he takes
every thing so precious seriously | Shaw 1.213 society
makes precious short work of the cads | Wells TM 147
life is a dream, a precious poor dream at times.

Mighty, not in Sh, but in BJo (see Borst G 88); very
common in 18th and 19th c.: Congreve 257 mighty rest­
less | Defoe G 125 He is mighty curious | Defoe R 160
I liv'd mighty comfortably | Fielding 3.433 it was mighty
ridiculous | Austen M 196 mighty delightful | Di D 397
mighty learned | Stevenson MB 206 a mighty late hour | id M 159 mighty quick and active. In Amr this is
strengthened into almighty: James A 1.79 The coffee is
almighty hot.

Pure (very frequent in 18th c., see Stoffel Int 14 ff.
with many quotations): Swift P 145 this almond pudding
was pure good.

Jolly, the quotation NED 1549 is a doubtful instance
like the two Shakespearian passages Shr III. 2.215 and
R3 IV. 3.43 To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer. In
19th and 20th c. extremely common, but more or
less slangy; some undergraduates are said to divide
things into the two classes, jolly beastly and beastly
jolly. Cf. Hope D 37 the jam was jolly well worth
the powder | Wells T 29 a jolly queer lot | Wells U 343
I'm jolly glad anyhow | Shaw D 61 you do look jolly
foolish | Galsworthy M 127 how jolly natural! | Masefield
M 195 It's jolly cold, said Roger, with chattering teeth.

15.25. Terrible: Swift P 159 your ale is terrible
strong | Zangwill G 43 (Amr) You're terrible ambitious | Masefield E 20 turble strong (extremely frequent in dial.)
Austen S 135 dreadful low-spirited | Kipl L 244 I’m awful sorry [very rare instead of awfully]. — Cf. p. 509.

Cruel (NED 1632): Swift J 26 yesterday was a cruel hard frost | Doyle S 5.216 (vg) and cruel bad he treated me.—Still frequent in Ireland: that old fellow is cruel rich (Joyce Ir 89).

Beastly (cf. jolly): James S 128 this beastly stuffy place.

Plaguy, in Sh only once, in the possibly spurious Tro (II. 3.187); extremely frequent in 18th c.; in 19th vg or dial.: Swift J 37 Is not this a plaguy silly story? (also 22, 76 etc.) | ib 139 I walked plaguy carefully | Goldsm 617 you’re so plaguy shy. — Cf. p. 509.

Devilish: Congreve 292 you’re devilish handsome | Swift P 116 he’s devilish old (137) | Sheridan 275 he is devilish apt to take the merit | Thack N 303 I’ve been devilish annoyed about it | Stevenson JH 19 I have seen devilish little of the man | Vachell H 295 You’re devilish clever.

Deuced (NED 1779) | Darwin L 1.59 I should be deuced clever | ib 2.43 feel deuced uncomfortable.

Confounded: (NED 1709) | Sheridan 257 'tis confounded hard. Now only -ly.

15.26. Bitter (cf. bitter cold above 15.21): Di Do 304 (vg) bitter poor | Stevenson JHF 78 (vg) this drug is wanted bitter bad | ib 227 he was bitter poor of goods and bitter ugly of countenance.

Indifferent (‘to some extent’; in 19th c. only as an archaism): More U 66 their fare is indyfferent good | Sh Haml III. 1.123 I am my selfe indifferent honest.

Dead. From combinations like dead drunk (Sh Oth II. 3.83, Stevenson M 63), dead tired or dead weary (Kipl L 83), dead-still (Keats, NED), dead-slow (NED 1596), dead sleepy (Di D 15), dead becomes extremely common as an intensive with many adjectives, e.g. Carlyle R 1.157 we were dead silent on that head | Stevenson VP 241 let a stockbroker be dead stupid about poetry | Parker R 36
it seemed dead certain | ib 36 I thought it was a dead-
sure thing | Ade A 94 You’re dead right there | ib 97 he
was takin' it dead easy.

**Stark** (‘stiff, strong’), in Shakespeare (besides the still
usual combinations with *mad* and *naked*) also *stark* *spoyl’d*
Shr III. 2.55. Borst quotes *stark blind* from Trevisa and
*sterke ded* from Caxton. Cf. also: Congreve 296 he’s mad,
stark wild | Defoe R 94 it was stark calm.

Other examples of adjective-subjuncts: Caine C 75
*real* wicked . . *real* stubborn (in the mouth of an American
lady; extremely common in US) | walk *double* quick; ex-
tremely frequent (military) | Sh Mcb IV. 1.83 Ill make
assurance double sure | Barry T 376 (Sc) I’m *mortal* wae
for her | Kipl L 177 Isn’t it *thundering* good? | Swift T 65
he was *extreme* wilful | Defoe R 44 *excessive* dear | ib 46
excessive hot | id R 2.16 I was most *sensible* touch’d | ib
219 a *tolerable* good voyage | Stevenson JHF 79 (vg) *main*
angry | Caine C 332 (vg) You’re *bleedin’* drunk | Kipl S 59
he’ll be *howling* drunk to-night | ib 260 he was *blind*
squiffy [= dead drunk] when he wrote the paper | ib 168
*vile* bad | id P 121 he was *desperate* bold.

Cf. also Storm EPh 728 ff.. Borst G passim.

**15.27.** The important fact about all these adjective-
subjuncts is that they do not occur except before other
adjectives (and transferredly before some adverbs), but
not in connexion with verbs, where the *-ty*-adverb is re-
quired. See for instance Swift J 132 ’tis *terrible* cold . . .
It has snowed *terribly* all night; ib 94 be *plaguy* baul-
ked, cf. the above-quoted instances of *plagu’y*. Sh has
*marvellous* and *wondrous* with adjectives and adverbs, but
*marvellously* and *wondrously* with verbs. Other instances
of difference between the form used with adj. and that
with vb. may be found in Borst’s quotations, e.g. sub
*abominable, abundant, admirable, amazing*, etc. Nor are these
adjective-adverbs found with comparatives; note that *very*
better, *pretty better* never occur, but always *much better,
rather better*. But on the other hand, the forms in *-ly
are of course always allowable, and in recent literary style they are even generally preferred, before adjectives, cf. Swift J 141 'tis still terribly cold.

The adjective-subjuncts treated here (15.2) are distinct from those adverbs which are identical with adjectives (as not being formed by means of the ending -ly); these may be used also with verbs (he walks fast, etc.) and will be dealt with in another place. Some words (among them wide, broad) will be mentioned in both places. Sweet (§ 188) looks upon dark in dark red and greenish in greenish yellow as adverbs; I feel more inclined to call the whole combination a compound adjective.

15.28. A special class of these adjective-subjuncts is formed by passing, exceeding, because in a certain sense the following adj. may be taken as the object of the participle, Sh Shr Intr. I. 64 It wil be pastime passing excellent: a passtime which passes (what may be called) excellent (cf. she is far from pretty, where pretty is the object of from). Passing, and especially exceeding, were very frequent in this way in former centuries; nowadays they are only used as conscious archaisms. (The development offers points of similarity with that of mock, etc., 14.78). — Cf. below, p. 509.

Examples: Sh Ado II. 1.84 you apprehend passing shrewdly | Tenn 44 I loved his beauty passing well || More U 33 an excedynge rare thynge (ib 296) | AV Matth 2.10 with exceeding great joy (frequent in AV and Sh) | Swift 3.347 exceeding hot | Defoe R 83 it rain'd exceeding hard (ib 40, 167, 168, etc.) | Sterne 25 exceeding well | Austen S 134 an exceeding proud woman | Thack P 1.120 a young man of such exceeding small means | Stevenson D 28 exceeding intricate (ib 302).

With verbs (ptc.) we have exceedingly, as in AV Matth 19.25 they were exceedingly amazed | ib Mark 4.41 they feared exceedingly | Defoe R 111 I found myself exceedingly refresh'd | ib 170 I was exceedingly comforted | id R 2.33 he was exceedingly mov'd.
15.28—15.31. New-born, newly born, etc

Therefore, exceeding in Wells Fm 28 his remark amazed me exceeding does not seem to me to be genuine.

15.29. A variant form of adjective-subjunct is found in colloquial and dialectal speech when and is added between the two adjectives, as in nice and warm, see Storm 691 ff. (oldest examples from Swift), Borst G 13 (oldest 1575 from NED jolly) and this work I. 2.428, where it is assumed that the sound [n] is inserted in the same way as in messenger; the rhythmic movement of the formulas is the same. And of course gives a certain sense, but is generally superfluous for the sense. Further examples: GE M 1.35 fine and vexed | Bennett HL 59 I was fine and startled when I saw you | Twain H 1.78 when it was good and dark | ib 1.152 I was good and tired | Bennett C 1.270 It’ll be rare and hot.

Newly may of course also be used in these collocations: Bunyan G 106 my weak and newly converted bre-
thren | Shelley 192 some bright spirit newly born (cf. ib 127 new-born liberty) | Thack P 2.2 the newly-married pair | Hardy L 92 the newly-married couple | Bennett A 198 Mr. Sargent, the newly-appointed second minister.

15.32. Parallel with new-born we have other combinations of adjective-subjuncts and participles: Mi SA 1317 fresh clad | London A 135 his body was fresh-oiled | Austen S 297 Cleveland was a spacious, modern built house | Macaulay H 2.142 three ships, foreign built and without colours | Wells F 156 the percentage of criminals among the "foreign-born" is higher than that among the native-born | Quiller Couch M 300 a private-owned craft.

15.33. From such participles as new-furnished we have by means of subtraction (back-formation) verbs like new-furnish; the oldest example in NED is newe edifie from 1442: Sh Oth IV. 1.287 did the letters . . new create his fault? | Sh Tp I. 2.81 [he] new created The creatures . . Or els new form'd 'em (cf. Err III. 2.39 would you create me new? is new here adj. in nexus-object or adv.?) | Caine M 82 Tom was there, new thatching the back of the house | Gissing B 473 you've been new-furnishing. Cf. p. 509.

Moderate sized or moderately sized

15.34. Some vacillation is found between adjectival and adverbial forms before adjectives formed from substantives by means of the suffix -ed. In one case we have a derivative from the compound (adjective + substantive): blue-eyed from blue-eye + -ed, good-sized; in the other a derivative (by means of -ed) from the substantive alone, to which is added an adverb, because the derivative is an adjective: well-mannered = the adjective mannered (cf. moneyed, talented, minded, etc.) with an adverb, well-sized (cf. Sh Hml III. 2.180 as my loue is siz'd, my feare is so). In the two main lists given below the examples are arranged alphabetically according to the subs from which they are formed, so as to make it easy to find those instances where both formations are found: I
star in each list those words which might with greater or less propriety be analyzed as real participles of actually existing verbs besides being apprehended as possessional adjectives in -ed; the relation between these adjectives and participles is discussed in vol. VI 24.15.

15.351. Adjectival forms (these are by far the more frequent): More U 256 stronge bodyed | able-bodied men | Sh TS III. 2.166 this mad-brain'd bridegroome | Lamb E 1.136 the somewhat original brain'd Margaret | Collingwood R 281 a cottage .. smoky chimneyed | Spect 389 thirteen different coloured hoods | Shaw P 181 a strange colored shadow | Wilde S 118 eating .. with different coloured spoons | Lamb R 10 a sweet-dispositioned youth | Gissing B 122 a hard-featured girl | Ru Sel 1.225 another kind of garden, deep furrowed | Carlyle S 81 this young warmhearted, strongheaded and wrongheaded Herr Towgood | More U 256 faynte harto ... bolde harto | [Mered H 207 a large landed proprietor] | Sh Haml II. 2.493 vnequal matched* | good-natured | Thack N 717 a good-plucked fellow (also Vachell H 155) | Quincey 64 the high-priced inn | Trollope D 3.130 to be thoroughly high principled | Swift J 204 Stella shall have a large printed Bible | Sh H4A IV. 2.33 more dis-honorable ragged then an old-fac'd ancient | Defoe G 145 the error is deep rooted | Ridge S 37 a decent-sized family | Hughes T 2.2 a moderate-sized college | Wells T 13 a modest-sized frontage | Di D 470 an ordinary-sized nightcap | Sh Ado II. 1.355 a pleasant spirited lady | Shaw 1.68 a poor-spirited creature | Stevenson Underw 29 happy starred | Austen E 93 an easy, cheerful tempered man | Spect 396 a strange window'd house.

This form is the only one found with adjectives of colour (white-haired, black-eyed, etc.; Stevenson Underw 63 a blue-behindied ape) and of course also with numerals and pronouns; in neither case is any adverb formed in -ly: Hardy W 156 he had been a one-idea'd character | NP '96 the seven hilled city | Kingsley H 239 some hundred-
wived kinglet | Ml F (1616) 830 with sundry coloured stones | GE A 161 she’s got thy coloured eyes | Mered R 231 this shaped eye or that | Di Sk 137 a brown-whiskered, white-hatted, no-coated cabman | Wells V 8 a no-hatted, blonde young man | Collingwood R 348 both are printed in the same sized paper | many-sided | myriad-minded (Coleridge, of Shakespeare).

Sh Cymb III. 2.5 shows that the words in -ed are felt as words per se: What false Italian, As poysenous tongue’d, as handed.

15.352. Adverbial forms: Hewlett Q 261 A hand so thinly boned. | Wells A 67 a variously buttoned* mandarinate | Ru C 13 every separately Christian-named* portion of the ruinous heap | Ru S 86 beautifully coloured* as well as shaped | Carpenter C 69 a vast number of variously shaped* and colored* bodies | Shaw C 207 a well conducted* and meritorious young woman | By DJ 5.14 Those servile days are not so proudly eyed | Sh John IV. 2.144 I finde the people strangely fantasied | Sh Ado III. 1.60 rarely feature’d | Ru P 2.79 a beautifully featured youth | Ward R 3.239 delicately featured | Gissing B 81 his strongly featured character | Wells F 265 less saliently featured | Bronte P 79 a little and roundly formed* woman | Beaumont (Merm.) 1.244 she is nobly-friende’d | Ru Sel 1.490 kindly hearted | ib 1.256 an entirely well-intentioned man (also Stevenson M 206, Ridge L 191) | Sh Wiv IV. 4.86 well landed | Poe 262 the most minutely lettered names . . . the over-largely lettered signs | well-looked (= good-looking; obsolete, see Storm 705) | GE L 2.286 a well-mannered Frenchman (also Morris N 16, Hope In 171, Shaw B 189, Dickinson R 18) | Hawth 1.383 uncouthly mannered | Shaw C 157 faultlessly dressed and impossibly mannered | Sh Cymb IV. 2.382 thou shalt be so well master’d | More U 210 a man cruelly minded towards hymselfe | Ru T 23 a justly minded [parliament] | ib 192 eagerly-minded to go and steal | Ru S 108 the inconsistently-minded society | Ru Sel 1.490 cheerfully minded people | Spencer F 80 the judicially minded
critically-minded | Sh Wiv IV. 4.88 well monied | Williamson P 185 the handsome, slightly-moustached woman | Whitman 303 the well-muscled woman | London A 92 large men, splendidly muscled | Spenser FQ II. 9.41 to see the maid So strangely passioned | Hope In 320 the more highly priced | Quincey 15 a people more highly principled than the Greeks | Austen M 266 being well principled and religious | Thack N 487 a most highly principled woman | Archer A 37 elegantly proportioned cars | Wells U 103 the room is beautifully proportioned | Stevenson T 106 strangely shaped* | GE M 1.182 a well-sized man | Ru C 105 a moderately-sized park (also Ru P 2.186, Hawth T 130) | Malory 102 he was passingly well vysaged | Chesterton F 187 The long, well-windowed rooms | Hope F 1 The park was well wooded.

Fielding T 1.293 uses the expression "the well-wooded forest", but adds: "This is an ambiguous phrase, and may mean either a forest well clothed with wood, or well stripped of it."

15.353. Adjectival and adverbial forms are sometimes found side by side: Thack S 10 beautifully whiskered and empty headed | Collingwood R 224 less clear-sighted and less widely-experienced thinkers.

15.36. With the participle spoken in active signification we also find both adjectival and (rarer) adverbial forms; spoken takes the place of speeched, which is not found:

Sh Tit II 1.58 Foule spoken coward | Mi A 40 all free spokn truth [different from freely spoken, which would be passive] | Thack P 3.38 that free spoken young gentleman | Goldsm 635 as fine a spoken tailor | Austen E 9 a civil, pretty spoken girl | Austen M 83 a plain-spoken being | Di N 357 you're always so mild spoken | id Do 317 a wonderfully modest spoken man | Galsworthy P 6.29 pleasant-spoken.

Sh Gent I. 2.10 a knight, well-spoken, neat, and fine | NP 'S7 an intelligent well-behaved and nicely-spoken lad.
Post-Adjuncts

15.4. The usual place of the adjunct is now, and has been since the OE period, before the principal. But to this rule there are a certain number of exceptions which will now be considered, though considerations of place hinder me from giving the subject anything like the full treatment found in Birger Palm's able dissertation "The Place of the Adjective Attribute in English Prose" (Lund 1911), to which the reader is referred for many details, in particular with regard to earlier periods. Many of the explanations, and nearly all the examples, given below are independent of Mr. Palm's book.

Combinations like:

I found the room empty
I had my boots soled
with my hands full
after much time spent
I lay, eyes wide open—

will not be treated here, as they do not contain principals-post-
adjuncts, but "nexus" combinations (the first two containing nexus
objects after a verb, the next two nexus objects after a prepo-
sition, and the fifth a nexus subjunct). On Nexus see vol. III ch.
II etc., V 1.4 ff.

15.41. Post-position of adjuncts is very frequent in

groups that go back, directly or indirectly, to Norman
French legal terms, such as:

Sh H5 I. 2.70 heire male | Defoe G 106 heirs male
(also Scott A 2.172, Austen P 36, Symonds Shelley 53,
etc.) | Scott A 1.138 heir female | Congreve 215 issue male.
Sh H5 I. 2.66 heire generall | heir-apparent.
Cousin-german.

Blood royal (Sh H4A I. 2.158, Scott A 2.292, Iv 176,
Hewlett Q 8) | Sh R3 III. 1.164 the Seat Royall | Hewlett
Q 216 a chase-royal | Shaw 1.166 a battle royal.

Hope In 14 a queen regnant | Bennett B 25 is Prince
Aribert a reigning Prince—what, I believe, you call in
Europe, a Prince Regnant?
Bishop elect | the bride elect | Viceroy Designate.
The Lords Spiritual and the Lords Temporal (already Caxton R 117), cf. 15.54.
The life-matrimonial (Di N 1).
fee simple (Sh Alls IV. 3.311 and often).
Money due | Bennett A 22 to pay rent overdue. But in the usual non-legal sense, due is a pre-adjunct: in due time, etc.
malice prepense (e.g. Mered H 69) | malice afore-thought (e.g. Di Do 269) | malice domestic Sh Mcb III. 2.25.
Sh H5 I. 2.12 the law Salike.
Court-martial.
Proof positive (e.g. Mered H 90, Doyle S 2.16, Henderson Sc Lit 73) | proof demonstrative (Seeley E 140).
Finances public . . . finances private (Di T 1.167); 15.54.
The body politic; contrasted with this also the body domestic, Collier E 92. Bacon E 49 and 57 the politique body.
Ambassador Extraordinary (Hewlett Q 441) | Postmaster General and similar titles; in imitation thereof Scott A 1.192 one who was by profession gossip-general to the whole neighbourhood || Poet Laureate, cf. Marl F 272 coniurer-laureate.
The States General (e.g. Macaulay H 2.119).
Cf. also above 2.41, where examples of the pl of such combinations are given, and below, p. 509.

15.42. French influence is responsible for the post-position of other adjectives, e.g.
the art military (Lamb E 1.33, Thack N 26) | the sum total (e.g. Seeley E 5) | angels celestial (Thack N 180) | sign-manual (Caine E 191) | Swift J 146 upon occasions extraordinary (generally preposed) | from time immemorial | the devil incarnate.

In A. Bennett’s books post-adjuncts are frequent, probably on account of the author’s residence in France, e.g. C 2.7 adequate | 38 divine | 222 stately and correct | 225 acute | 227 severe and perilous | 249, 271 unique | HL 356 inconceivable.
15.43. To Latin influence are due some cases of post-position, thus probably *God Omnipotent* (Sh R2 III. 3.85) and *God Almighty*; further such grammatical terms as *verb passive* (e.g. Di D 32), *third person plural*, etc.; in some cases where the last word was in Latin an adjective, it is now in English rather to be considered a substantive (cf. *noun substantive* 2.33).

It is possible also that the word-order now found in most or all European languages *Edward the Third, Napoleon the Great*, etc., goes back to the Latin models, though such combinations may also have arisen independently through apposition; cf. OE (q) *Sidror eorl se gioncga*.

15.44. Numeral adjuncts were sometimes postposed in earlier English: OE *his suna twegen* 'his two sons' | Ch A 527 *his apostles twelve* (cf. ib 210). In ModE this is more or less affected; Kipling: *Soldiers Three*.

This is different from the post-order in *Chapter three* | *page nineteen* | *in the year nineteen* (hundred and) *ten*, where the cardinal numeral is used as an ordinal. As in French (and other languages) this usage has originated from reading the numeral character as written (abbreviated): *Chapter III*, etc.

15.45. When an adjective is often placed after the substantive in addressing a person ('in the vocative'), the reason is that the adjective is an afterthought, and originally it might be considered an independent vocative, thus OE *Beowulf leofa* (Bw 1216) = *Beowulf! thou dear one!* (this explains the weak form, which was originally a substantive, or substantivized adjective): ModE *father dear* = 'father! dear!' though now felt as belonging closely together. Thus Sh *Mids III. 1.87 my dearest Thisby dear* (where we might put commas after *dearest* and (or) *Thisby*) | Sh *Cy II. 3.29 my Lady sweet, arise* | Sh *Hml IV. 1.34 Friends both, go ioyne you with some further ayde* | Kipl S 237 *a day of reckoning approaches, Beetle mine* (cf. 16.24).
15.46. Another afterthought-adjunct is postposed proper, which means 'what may properly be so termed' and is thus a kind of stylistic limitation; in the same way we have in the last quotation snobs pure and simple = 'what may purely and simply be termed snobs'.

By DJ 10.60 through Prussia Proper | Jerome T 46 before the commencement proper of this story | Butler Er 77, some were snobs pure and simple.

The sense thus is distinct from that found in Pope’s “The proper study of mankind” or “the proper motion of a planet”; or of “a simple fellow”, “a simple explanation.”

15.471. An adjective is very often placed after thing, and especially the plural things; this is probably due to the analogy of something new etc. (17.32), where the word-order is occasioned by the close coalescence of some and thing (see also Palm p. 111 ff.):

Sh H5 IV. 1.4 There is some soule of goodnesse in things euill | Mcb IV. 3.23 all things foule | Wordsw P 8.559 as a thing divine | Ritchie M 246 things dramatic and things theatrical are often confounded together | Stevenson A 19 in things temporal | Holmes A 228 carefully instructed in things temporal and spiritual | Mered H 164 she heartily despised things English [thus very often with nationality adjectives] | the only thing required (or . . . needed, needful).

In Wells V 341 “I thank God for all things great and small that make us what we are” we have an afterthought apposition, which should have been inserted between two commas.—Ib 251 “That’s one thing clear” of course is different from “one clear thing.”

15.472. We have the same word-order pretty frequently with matters, especially with long adjectives. Palm (p. 113) is probably right in referring these phrases to French legal phraseology, though contrast (15.54) and analogy with things may have had their share in the development; in recent use these combinations often have a tincture of humorous style:
Ruskin U 37 all other doctrine respecting matters political | Gissing B 15 in matters sartorial he presented a high ideal | Kipl S 264 a cheerful babel of matters personal, provincial and imperial.

15.473. The combination no man living resembles no one living; no man is a kind of compound pronoun like something. Thus also Stevenson JHF 134 "no man morally sane could have been guilty of that crime"; and similarly (cf. 15.63) Kipl S 276 no Sikh living.

After man we also find adjectives indicating physical or psychical deficiencies, especially after as or like. This should have been noted above, 10.242:

Behn 337 he grew like a man distracted (also ib 340) | Di Do 287 like a man entranced | Wells V 284 he dropped his chin like a man shot.

15.481. When participles have become completely adjectives, they are generally placed before the substantive: at a given point | a well-known writer | an interesting remark, etc. When the verbal character of the participle is present to the mind of the speaker or writer, especially when the time of the action and (or) the agent is thought of, there is a greater inclination to place it after the substantive, and this order is also found from rhetorical reasons, where the verbal character is not very prominent, e.g. Johnson R 57 my heart bounded like that of a prisoner escaped | Spencer F 152 the bias of those concerned had vitiated the conclusions drawn | Stevenson V 142 even this is not a good unmixed. — Cf. 15.52, 15.54.

15.482. There are some standing phrases in which the participle is always placed after the sb: Thack H 81 she and they were at daggers drawn (the old phrase was at daggers [gen.] drawing) | a gentleman born (NED Richardson) | Brontë P 47 we are reformers born | Stevenson D 10 the detective born and bred | Housman J 219 Does he know? No more than the babe unborn | Lamb R 4 happy was Rosamund, though a girl grown (cp. a grown-up girl) | for
three days running | Kingsley H 179 his faith had fallen asleep for the time being (also Di Do 192, Kipl J 2.195, etc.). Born may also be preposed: a born poet.

15.483. Adjectives in -able, -ible may be classed with participles; they are not unfrequently placed after the substantive: Thack N 265 her fingers glittered with rings innumerable. — Cf. 15.63.

15.49. Poets sometimes for metrical reasons place an adjective after its substantive, where ordinary prose prefers the opposite order; some of their phrases have become household quotations and may consequently be used even by people who do not know their poetic origin:
Sh H 5 IV. 1.267 in stead of homage sweet | Mi PL 1.63 No light, but rather darkness visible | ib 686 in vision beatific | ib 737 the orders bright | ib 2.560 fore-knowledge absolute | ib 628 Gorgons and Hydras, and Chimeras dire | Pope 261 the Dean invite who never mentions Hell to ears polite (hence e.g. Di D 309 what the unmentionable to ears polite do you think I want) | Shelley 457 A divine presence in a place divine | By DJ 7.84 things immortal to immortal men | Bridges E 161 Athena mistress good of them that know.

Two adjuncts are sometimes in poetry placed one before and one after the substantive. This is pretty frequent in Milton, e.g. PL 1.733 many a towred structure high | ib 5.5 temperal vapors bland | Gray Elegy: gem of purest ray serene. Cp. from prose the word-order no man living (15.473) and the best style possible (15.63); in all day long the last word is perhaps not an adjective.

15.51. Post-order is often rendered desirable or necessary if the adjunct is accompanied by subjuncts, especially if these consist of long groups. The adjunct with its additions is then often felt as an abbreviation of a relative clause and takes the same place as this would have: a nook merely monastic = 'a nook which is merely monastic'. Examples with adjectives:
Sh As III. 2.440 to liue in a nooke meerly monastick | Austen S 314 he replied with an expressive smile, and a voice perfectly calm | Di N 400 with a petulance not unnatural in her unhappy circumstances | Di X 4 people new to the business | Seeley E 131 on the plan then usual | Ru S 3 They never seek an education good in itself | Ru 1.192 a painter otherwise mean or selfish | Gosse P 41 It was a time of controversy so acrid that we can hardly realise the bitterness of it | McCarthy 2.141 the only proposition in the bill not absolutely farcical and absurd | Stevenson V 130 an interruption too brief and isolated to attract much notice | Tenn L 1.191 a man every way prosperous and talented | Kipl S 146 the only masters senior to us | ib 264 a mantelpiece ten feet high | a sight worth seeing.—Thus also: dramatic authors, such as Pinero or Bernard Shaw.

Here also belong combinations with likely + infinitive, as in Swift J 159 it is a fine girl, likely to live | GE A 97 She was the last person likely to be in the house | Swinb L 211 in a way likely to injure others.

15.52. Participles with subjuncts of various sorts are in the same way very frequently placed as post-adjuncts: Li Do 62 in a state almost amounting to consternation | More U 234 to people so instruct and institute very fewe [lawes] do suffice | ib 244 reuenge inuries before to them done | Sh Hml I. 4.16 It is a custome More honour'd in the breach, then the observance | ib IV. 3.9 diseases desperate growne, By desperate appliance are releueed | Johnson R 88 like a man not unaccustomed to the forms of courts | GE A 362 the neglected beard of a man just risen from a sick-bed | ib 209 an old gentleman turned eighty | Shaw 1.172 a young fellow, not long turned twenty, with a charming voice | Macaulay E 4.7 his duties were of a kind ill suited to his ardent and daring character | Birrell Ob 10 No one at all acquainted with his writings can fail to remember it.

Corresponding pre-adjuncts see 14.3.

Combinations of participle + preposition are often
used as post-adjuncts: Sidney A 63 Our tragedies, and comedies (not without cause cried out against) | Sh Lr III. 2.59 a man, more sinn'd against, then sinning | Sh R2 I. 3.155 A heavy sentence . . . And all unlook'd for from your Highnesse mouth | Sh Tw V. 318 I leave my duty a little unthought of | Sh LLL IV. 2.139 the person written unto | Swift T 73 by a long digression unsought for Spencer A 1.395 sympathy for the person smiled at or the person smiled with | Wells F 88 the state is something escaped from | Stevenson M 182 I espied some papers written upon with pencil.

15.53. The length of the group also accounts for postposition in the case of two adjectives being coordinated (often contrasted) by means of a conjunction: Cowper L 1.187 to have broken through all obligations divine and human | Macaulay E 4.7 he expressed his feelings in language softer and more pensive than we should have expected | Kipl L 21 after arrangements financial and political | Ward M 123 a laugh musical but malicious | Ward F 32 Calculations quick and anxious passed through the young wife's brain.

15.54. Even when two contrasted adjuncts belong to separate substantives, they are often thrown after their substantives for the sake of emphasis, as in Sterne 22 in the body national as in the body natural | Di Do 178 he not only rose next morning, like a giant refreshed, but conducted himself, at breakfast, like a giant refreshing | Di D 503 a crust well-earned was sweeter far than a feast inherited | Thack S 47 After Snobs Military, Snobs Clerical suggest themselves [but ib in the superscription: Clerical Snobs] | Fox 2.225 people care so much more for the person doing than for the thing done | Hardy W 66 the deed accomplished was not like the deed projected | Caine E 418 in the world's view a woman soiled is a woman spoiled | Benson D 260 a whitened sepulchre is no better than a sepulchre unwhitened | Kipl S 79 Boys neglected were
boys lost.—Cp. also Ru C 9 the robber . . . the person robbed — and below, p. 510.

15.55. The frequent contrast between past and to come may have been instrumental in making post-order of the former habitual:

Bacon A 14.17 wee forgot both dangers past, and feares to come | Sh John IV. 3.51 All murders past | Spect 583 I have been for five years last past courted by a gentleman | ib 584 for these ten years past | GE S 14 in the night last past.

Thus also post-position is very frequent, though not compulsory, with last, next, and previous:

Stevenson M 28 the wreck of February last | id V 32 what happened last November might surely happen February next (Scotch?).

Semi-Predicative Post-Adjuncts

15.61. In 15.51 above mention was made of the fact that many post-adjuncts are felt as abbreviations of relative clauses, 'as that is (are, was, etc.) might easily be added without changing the sense. This will account for a modern tendency to use any kind of words or groups that are appropriate in the predicative, as post-adjuncts. The connexion between adjunct and principal is then somewhat looser than in other cases, and very often approaches what grammarians term 'apposition'. Among adjuncts of this kind we find not only adjectives, but also substantives (substantive groups 15.71) and adverbs (adverbial groups 15.73) and infinitives (15.8)

15.62. Present is placed before the substantive when it refers to time: the present occasion | his present occupation | the present writer (= 'I, who am now writing'). But when it refers to space and means 'who is (or was) at this (or that) place', it is generally used in the predicative: I was not present at his marriage. Hence it is used in that sense as a semi-predicative post-adjunct: the members
present voted for the measure | Austen P 65 in any other person present; hence also it is impossible to use the plural form the present in this sense instead of those present. This distinction is not old; Ch E 80 “in his lust present was all his thought” refers to time and would now be his present lust. In Peele D 481 “Behold things present and record things past; But things to come...” we have the word-order peculiar to contrasts (15.54).

15.63. Very often an adjective like possible, which only implies a limitation of another adjunct (generally a superlative) is placed after the substantive (thus producing a word-order analogous to that mentioned in 15.48): in the best style possible (= the best style that is possible; also: in the best possible style) | the only person visible | Stevenson T 56 the toughest old salts imaginable | the earliest document extant.

15.64. From such cases of ‘apposition’ as By DJ 3.51 He enter’d in the house no more his home we are led easily to the following instances of a possessive pronoun with own or without, but then with some subjunct, as a post-adjunct: Quincey 72 some needy Frenchman living in a country not his own | Macaulay B 211 he had paid the penalty of faults not his own | Macaulay E 4.12 every separate member began to move with an energy all its own | Froude C 1.375 little tea-parties over which she presided with a grace all her own | Wells V 82 each [feminine experience] had had a quality all its own || Carlyle S 81 waste not the time yet ours | Tennyson 411 when you yield your flower of life To one more fitly yours | ib 99 O my Amy, mine no more | Ward E.191 two statues glorified by the moonlight into a grace and poetry not theirs by day | London W 114 he gave them the trail as a privilege indubitably theirs. — Cf. p. 510.

15.65. The words “in apposition” in the following sentences are also to be considered as semi-predicative post-adjuncts: Carlyle F 3.206 It was a head all cheeks, jaw, and no brow | By DJ 11.57 With poets almost cler-
gymen, or wholly.—Cf. also Ker E 147 one of the earliest poems of a type something between the song and the moral poem | Bennett C 1.272 A power not himself drew Edwin to the edge of the pavement.

15.66. From the predicative use in he is fifteen = 'he is 15 years old', we get post-adjuncts like the following: Quincey 45 as a solitary act of observation in a boy not fifteen | Vachell H 288 men forty were not likely to work in that boyish fashion (misprint for of forty?).

15.67. In the often quoted line from Campbell's Pleasures of Hope, "Like angel-visits, few and far between" the latter words, though not a post-adjunct in the original context, are now often taken as such (cf. 14.98). In the following instances the post-order seems referable to such constructions as "sounds there were (few or) none": Quincey 244 and sounds few or none fretted the quiet | Harrison R 68 in spite of the indignation of architects and critics not a few | Henley Burns 234 He had faults and failings not a few: Cf. none 16.631.

15.68. The combination of a substantive with the indefinite article followed by a superlative with the definite article, is easily understood if we expand the post-adjunct into a whole clause: a subject which is the most painful. Examples: Fielding 3.423 fear, a passion the most repugnant to greatness | Franklin 145 it formed a scene the most resembling our ideas of hell that could well be imagin'd | Byron DJ 3.51 A thing to human feelings the most trying | Scott Iv 175 an argument the most persuasive to their minds | Quincey 75 In Somersetshire, which is a county the most ill-watered of all in England | Austen S 183 treating their disengagement as a deliverance the most real, a blessing the most important | Di N 253 The storm had given way to a calm the most profound | GE A 263 Adam reopened the subject in a way the least difficult for him to answer | Thack N 397 Miss E. chose to appear in a toilette the very grandest and finest which she had ever assumed | Lang T 183 The Revenge keeps green the me-
mory of an exploit the most marvellous in the annals of English seamen.

We have parallel instances, in which the substantive, though indefinite, does not admit the indefinite article, thus especially in the plural: Quincey 3 under the mere coercion of pain the severest | Scott Iv 85 upon accusations the most absurd and groundless | Di Do 72 under circumstances and in combinations the most completely foreign to its purpose.

15.69. A somewhat similar use of a definite post-adjunct after a substantive with the indefinite article is seen in the following quotations (the opposite to commonplace = ‘not at all c.’): Brontë P 21 [a man] of an appearance the opposite to commonplace | ib 56 with an air the reverse of civil | Ru Sel 1.217 facts the direct reverse of those represented.

15.71. A peculiar kind of descriptive substantival group post-adjuncts has developed in recent times from the predicative use (which is discussed in vol. III 18.7) in “when he was my age | what colour are his eyes,” etc. Examples:

Thack V 309 an old gentleman held a boy in his arms about the age of little Rawdon | GE A 190 many a man twice his age | Swinb L 199 the usual boy’s weakness for women twice his age | Austen E 156 her eyes, a deep grey, with dark eyelashes, had . . . | Merriman S 14 the dirt rubs off and leaves the hand quite a good colour | ib 14 This is an Englishman. You never see fingers this shape in Russia | Twain M 22 many towns the size of ours were burned | Hardy F 407 it left a hole the size of a wafer | Gissing R 191 nowhere could I discern a cloud the size of a man’s hand | Mered R 42 a rope thick enough for a couple of men his size and weight.

15.72. In the following quotations the post-adjuncts are originally detached first-words of compounds (cf. 13, especially 13.64 and 13.82): Bradley M 175 a large number of words originally slang | Alden U 47 paupers in re-
cept of relief, indoor and outdoor, . . . | Jackson S 57
an accomplished public speaker, both indoor and open-air | Stevenson M 124 the house next door should fly on fire.

15.73. We now come to adverbial semi-predicative post-adjuncts, as in Sh R2 IV. 1.188 [two buckets, filling one another, The emptier euer dancing in the ayre, The other downe, vnseeene, and full of water:] That bucket downe, and full of teares am I = 'that bucket, which is down and full . . .' From such combinations as the house here, the man in the street, etc., the transition is gradual to the following: Caine E 186 One of the parties already there might serve | Carlyle S 20 a thing commendable, indeed, but natural, indispensabe, and there of course | Di N 508 he looked very fiercely at a sparrow hard by | By DJ 5.79 After the manner then in fashion there | Quincy 100 with elements only yet perhaps in the earliest stages of development | Phillpotts K 49 a valet out of employment [cf. an out-of-work labourer 14.62] | the latest thing out | Austen M 42 A girl, not out [ = not introduced to society] has always the same sort of dress | ib 43 girls not out | Caine C 124 he was an idol out for an airing. Cf. p. 510.

15.74. Thus frequently out followed by a participle: Caine C 148 the streets were thronged with little family groups out shopping | Chesterton B 184 the sensations of a schoolboy out fishing [out fishing originally out a (on) fishing with the verbid substantive].

15.75. From he was out hunting we get the following very free use of out hunting added to a substantive; it can hardly be called a post-adjunct as it is really connected with another (not expressed) subject: Harrison R 202 there was . . . no fear of a fall out hunting, for he could not sit a hack; cf. Ru P 1.289 no fear of my breaking my neck out hunting.

Another free addition of out is found in the colloquial phrase: her day (Monday, evening, etc.) out = 'the day when she (the servant) is allowed to go out'. Bennett HL 108 It was Florrie's afternoon out | Stockton R 41 it was our boarder's night out | ib 84 this is his afternoon 'out'. Cf. life alone 12.29.—Cp. also Kipl P 160 their very first day out [= the first day they were out], my men complained.
15.76. Other prepositional and adverbial groups as post-adjuncts: Austen M 42 one does not like to see a girl of eighteen so immediately up to everything | Stevenson JHF 133 it began to grow into a thing of course | Hope In 35 the only thing for it was to be amused | Ru T 46 to submit to a passage of Scripture not to their fancy | Hawth S 103 something outlandish, unearthly, or at variance with ordinary fashions | Hope M 32 an individual hard-up is a pathetic sight.—A thing of course is not exactly on the same footing as a man of honour.

In some cases it seems easier to use a group as a post-adjunct if it is accompanied by a subjunct, than when standing alone; thus in Macaulay H 2.170 they showed their hostility in a way very little to their honour —where the combination a way to their honour would not in itself be tolerated.

15.77. As I am off = I am going off, and he was back (home) = he was (had) come back (home), we have a corresponding use of these adverbs as post-adjuncts; thus also not long from = 'having come recently from': Black F 2.119 He was like a schoolboy off for holidays | Caine C 227 I feel like a sailor home from sea | ib 391 people home from the races were going into taverns | Caine E 506 a young officer, home for his Easter holidays, stepped out of the train | Caine P 18 A young sailor named Hans Thomsen, lately home from a voyage, was... | Chesterton B 44 the affectionate indulgence of a circle of maiden aunts towards a boy home for the holidays | Caine C 299 Lady Ure, back from the honeymoon, received the guests | Kipl P 53 my own men-at-arms, not six months in England | Doyle S 118 a very young man straight from the University | Besant First 6 it was sold to Rice, then a young man, not long from Cambridge, and just called to the bar. Cf. the predicative use in Doyle S 4.103 he is more than a private, and is not long from India.
Infinitive Post-Adjuncts

15.8. Among semi-predicative post-adjuncts special mention must be made of infinitives with to. The infinitive may be active or passive in form, but the former in some instances has an active, in others a passive significance. Some instances of infinitive post-adjuncts after one have already been given in 10.522.

15.81. The infinitive with to denotes simple futurity and stands as a kind of future participle. This is found with few verbs only, most frequently with to come, which is often contrasted with past and present; on the other hand it is not possible to say, for instance, the girl to laugh meaning 'the girl who will (or is going to) laugh'. Examples: Sh H4A 1.3.171 in time to come | Bacon A 14.17 wee forgot both dangers past, and feares to come | Bunyan G 148 that I might escape the wrath to come | Wordsw P 6.242 with us in the past, The present, with us in the times to come (cf. ib 9.169, 14.110) | Haggard S 183 what proportions of fact, past, present, or to come | Hewlett Q 252 towards a day-to-come of insult || Ru Sel 1.41 in the olden days of travelling, now to return no more | McCarthy 2.547 one central university to which existing colleges and colleges to exist hereafter might affiliate themselves | Ritchie M 156 for the first time I heard the name of this good friend-to-be | Bennett A 76 she dreamed ... of a spirituality never to be hers. — Cf. p. 510.

The phrase kingdom-come = 'life after death', which is now used as a variant of the kingdom to come, is taken from the Lord's Prayer, where of course come is the subjunctive. Thackeray E 2.124 parsons frightened us with kingdom-come | Bennett B 214 you never know when you mayn't be in kingdom come | Phillips K 105 helping the poor lady to Kingdom Come.

15.821. The infinitive means 'that is to, that might, would, or should . . .', thus especially after words implying what is proper or typical: Sh Tp II. 1.314 'twas a din to fright a monsters eare | Austen P 352 she is not the kind of girl to do such a thing | Austen M 14 their
schemes were sometimes of a nature to make a third very useful | ib 24 the very age of all others to need most attention and care | Macaulay E 4.45 Clive was not a man to do anything by halves (thus also ib 4.291, Hope Q 95, Caine C 416) | Di D 565 they must be made of stuff to stand wear and tear | Di X 55 a cheap funeral . . . I don't know of anybody to go to it | Harraden S 94 you are not the type of man to be generous to women | Swinb L 23 the sort of boy always to do decently well under any circumstances (also ib 251) | Hope Ch 226 she, and she alone, was the woman to be his | GE Mm 237 Poor mamma indeed was an object to touch any creature | Quiller Couch M 66 Naturally that would be the explanation to occur to you | Stevenson V 96 there are not many Dr. Johnsons, to set forth upon their first voyage at 64. — Cf. p. 510.

15.822. The first to come, and the last to leave means 'the first that comes (came)', etc.: Austen P 190 Elizabeth had been the first to listen and to pity, the first to be admired.

After something, anything, nothing the infinitive can often be paraphrased by means of 'that can, or may': Austen M 80 whether we may not find something to employ us here | ib 195 certain of seeing something to pain me | GE Mm 45 I beg your pardon if I have said anything to hurt you.

Similarly very often after there is: Wordsw 109 A maid whom there were none to praise And very few to love | Poe 105 there was much in the recluse to excite interest | Haggard S 13 there is nothing in this paper to make me change my mind | Wilde P 73 For pity and terror there is nothing in the entire cycle of Greek tragedy to touch it | Hope D 56 there isn't a girl in London to touch her.

15.823. After with, the infinitive approaches the function of a present participle (and is coordinated with one in the first quotation), though it implies rather some kind of duty: Di Do 68 with this notable attendant to pull him along, and Florence always walking by his side,
he went down... | Hope D 26 a pensive sigh, with a glance at Archie's photograph to follow.

15.83. A frequent phrase is *That has nothing to do with*, thus in Sh Ven 638 Beautie hath naught to do with such foule fiends | Mi C 122 what hath night to do with sleep? | Mi PR 2.389 And with my hunger what hast thou to do? | Di N 299 not because that had anything to do with the plot | ib 695 that has nothing to do with his blustering just now | Hardy L 44 Can it have anything to do with his not writing to me | Shaw C 213 I dont quite see what that has to do with it.

This is still very frequent (e.g. Di Do 193, Ru Sel 1.261, Doyle S 1.153, 5.197, 6.56, Shaw 1.229, Harraden D 240), also with got, as in Hope D 107 I don't see what that's got to do with it. But in recent use we find also is, was, instead of has, had. Perhaps this may have started with the rapid pronunciation of *has* [s] (what's that to do with me?) which was interpreted as 's = is; at any rate it is now extremely frequent in colloquial English (see Stoffel E 193) (I hope it has been nothing to do with your health? | Would that be anything to do with the floods?) and not unfrequent in recent books, e.g. Jerrold C 53 Besides, what I have had is nothing to do with it | Merriman S 160 This is nothing to do with your life | Zangwill G 134 What was it to do with him that he could see no way | Doyle S 6.164 if it was to do with money | Hope D 37 it was nothing to do with Hilary.

As to do with here = 'connected with', this group is also found as an independent post-adjunct without any preceding verb (only after everything, anything, nothing?): Harraden D 233 interested in *everything to do with* the stage | Phillpotts M 176 he understood oak rinding and *everything to do with* it | Ward M 436 she seemed to shrink with horror from *everything to do with* Verona | Galsworthy C 62 Horace does so dislike *anything to do with* the papers | Galsworthy M 192 very obscure, *everything to do with origins*. 
15.841. A passive signification is sometimes found in an infinitive post-adjunct in spite of the active form. This is a survival from the time when the infinitive (like other verbid substantives) was indifferent to the distinction between active and passive. The passive sense is frequent when the infinitive is connected with a preceding adjective: *the proper (correct, decent) thing to do.* Hope Q 201 it was *the handsome thing to do.*

15.842. Without an adjective the infinitive often has nearly the same signification: *he is not a man to know* (Di D 396, Philips L 45) = ‘a proper man to know, a man worth knowing’ | Butler N 166 *The thing to say* about me just now is that my humour is forced.—Thus also in the following instances, where the verb is followed by a preposition: More U 140 *anye numbre to speake of* | Barrie MO 201 I have no pain to speak of | Stevenson V 37 *a young lady eats nothing to speak of* | Trollope D 1.81 *Nothing to speak of* is so apt to grow into that which has to be spoken of | James S 94 It wasn’t a thing *to talk about*—it was only a thing *to feel* | Di D 339 I doubted if she were quite the sort of woman to *confide in* || Collingwood R 73 *Turner was not a man to make an intimate of,* all at once. — Cf. NED to 11 ff.

15.843. In the following quotations, too, the infin. has a passive signification, though not exactly the same as in the preceding examples: Austen M 7 *we shall probably see much to wish altered* in her | Di N 311 *keeping it up till everything to drink* was disposed of | Wells M 49 but that is a question *to consider* later | Benson D 25 *what he wanted in a wife was someone to love.*

15.851. After *have* the infinitive frequently has the passive sense, as in Mi PL 2.415 *he had much to see* | McCarthy 2.555 *he had a very hard task to perform* | Doyle S 2.236 *the brisk manner of a woman who has had her own way to make* in the world.

These cases, in which the substantive is clearly the object of *have,* sometimes approach in meaning those in
which the infinitive after have to has its own object. The difference between I have something to tell you and I have to [I must] tell you something is not always very well marked; note however Trollope's phrase that some authors write because they have to tell a story rather than because they have a story to tell. The distinction is effaced when the object precedes; thus when it is an interrogative pronoun (as in Sh Cy IV. 2.124 What haue we to loose? or Mi PL 1.567 Awaiting what command thir mighty chief Had to impose), and also sometimes in poetic diction (as in Mi PL 2.920 Pondering his voyage: for no narrow frith He had to cross).

15.852. The passive signification is also found after with (= 'having'): Di Do 2 married to a lady with no heart to give him | Wells N 519 You've left me with nothing to do—and after there is: Parker R 87 it was not you alone that had to be considered . . . There were your friends to consider | Ellis N 155 if there is fault to find in the construction of Ibsen's prose dramas it lies in their richness of material | James S 29 There are things to puzzle out || Shaw 2.149 when there is money to give, he gives it: when there is money to refuse, I refuse it [= 'when we have to give money', different from 'when we have money to give'].

In Hope Q 79 Mary had pleaded letters to write the meaning also is passive: 'letters that were to be written, letters that she had to write'.

15.86. Sometimes we find two coordinated infinitives, of which one has an active and the other a passive sense: Defoe G 60 Of what use is it to man that he has a tongue to speak [= to speak with, with which he can speak], that he has books to read [= which can be read by him] | Di D 443 there is nobody to blame for this,—nobody to answer for it. — Cf. p. 510.

15.871. The passive infinitive is found as post-adject in many cases; the last three quotations show it as a kind of future participle contrasted with the ordinary
past participle: Bacon A 3.23 a piece of crimson velvett to be presented to the officer | Bunyan G 146 There is an endless kingdom to be inhabited, and everlasting life to be given us . . . There are crowns of glory to be given us | Defoe R 145 the baking part was the next thing to be consider'd | Johnson R 117 she saw nothing more to be tried | Scott A 2.10 of all confidents to be selected as the depositary of love affairs, Oldbuck seems the most extraordinary | Shelley L 953 an imagination not to be restrained | ib 709 It is a nose once seen never to be forgotten | Ru Sel 1.287 in a way not to be forgotten | Ru T 90 a higher legal authority presently to be defined | Williamson S 193 it almost made up for everything endured and still to be endured | Galsworthy C 132 a difficulty felt by others in times past, and to be felt again in times to come | Saintsbury Cbr. H. Engl. Lit. 3.295 in the way mentioned above, and to be described below.

The adjunctal character is clearly seen from the use of the subjunct the most in Wilde P 92 “one of the things in history the most to be regretted”, and from the juxtaposition of the infinitive and a relative adjunct-clause in Austen M 193 there was nothing more to be said, or that could be said to any purpose. This also shows us the difference between the construction here considered and nothing more was to be said, parallel to the above distinction between he had nothing more to say and he had to say nothing more.

15.872. The same employment of an infinitive of a verbal phrase: Austen P 202 she saw much to be pleased with | Di Do 233 a variety of little matters to be gone through | Chesterton B 80 her father was in truth not a man to be treated with | Bennett C 1.205 houses to be lived in.

15.88. While we have in Di Do 78 “the conclusion that Dombey was a man to be known, and that J. B. was the boy to make his acquaintance” a clear specimen of the difference between the active and the passive infinitive,
in other instances the two are found in close juxtaposition with no appreciable difference; in the second quotation it is probably the subjunct at once that causes the passive turn to be chosen: Di N 656 the wayfarer sees with each returning sun some new obstacle to surmount, some new light to be attained | Carpenter P 61 one of the very first and most practical things to do, and to be done at once, is to turn the Prisons into Industrial Asylums | Shaw D 110 Bohemians who have no position to lose and no career to be closed | Ward E 20 there was so much to see at Florence. No—pardon me!—there is nothing to be seen at Florence.

15.89. Combinations of about to with infinitives (active and passive) are employed as post-adjuncts: Brontë P 6 conjectures concerning the meeting about to take place | Ru T 194 a remnant of one [a fleet], about to be put up to auction | McCarthy 2.92 no one could have had the slightest foreboding of anything about to happen | Caine P 237 he stood by the stove with drooping head like a prisoner about to receive his sentence | Hope In 57 She did not realise that she, now or about to be a social power, was to do . . .

15.9. Clause-adjuncts are always placed after their primaries; for examples see 1.84. A full treatment of relative clauses will be given in a future instalment of this work.

Chapter XVI

Rank of the Pronouns

16.11. It will be the object of this and the next chapter to examine which pronouns and which pron. forms can be used as primaries, which as adjuncts, and which as subjuncts (cf. 1.72), This question is very simple with regard to some pronouns, while with others it presents very complicated problems.
Personal Pronouns

16.12. The personal pronouns I (me), we (us), thou (thee), ye, you, he (him), she (her), they (them) are only used as principals.

16.13. Them, however, occurs in vulgar speech as an adjunct, corresponding to standard those. This word them, which can hardly be called a 'personal pronoun', is used without any regard to the case of the substantive it is added to. NED them 5 has examples as far back as 1596. Sh does not seem to know it, but Bunyan writes G 24 he should speak them words. Recent examples: Di Ch 73 them gentlefolks will search and search | Thack V 251 shave off them mustachios | ib 498 them grapes are sour | Hardy L 192 all them miles | Shaw C 193 one of them smashers. — Cf. below, p. 510.

Possessive Pronouns

16.211. The difference between mine (thine) and my (thy) was at first purely phonetic. In OE the pronouns had everywhere the n-sound, but in ME the n began to disappear before a consonant while it was retained before a vowel (and h). When the word stood alone (as a primary), n was retained partly because of the stronger emphasis, partly because the word had vocalic endings in many cases (OE mine, minum, etc., ME mine).

Examples of the difference according to the first sound of the following word are: Ch T (from Kittredge) 461 my dere hert, allas myn hele and hewe | 1560 myn herte ayens my lust | 566 thi synne and thyn offence. (Before a consonant myn is sometimes found, thus regularly in MS C of Troilus). — From Caxton R 18 my for­ mest feet, my chekes and myn eeris. — From Marlowe F 337 To slay mine enemies, and ayde my friends | 284 of mine owne accord | 285 my conjuring | 494 I cut mine arm, and with my proper blood Assure my soul | 594 thine eie
.. thy heart (ML has the forms without n before h: F 594 thy heart | T 2086 my husband).

16.212. From the end of the 16th c. the forms my, thy were, however, analogically extended to those cases in which they serve as adjuncts before a vowel (and h). Shakespeare is not so consistent as Marlowe; we have very often n before a vowel, thus in mine own (all instances in Lr, all but one in Mids), though my own is by no means rare. Tp I. 2.25 my art, 28 mine art | Hml I. 3.68 Giue every man thine eare; but few thy voyce | I. 5.40 O my propheticke soule: mine uncle. In many cases the old editions disagree; thus in Lr I. 1.155 F thine enemies, Q thy | I. 1.167 F thine allegiance, Q thy | I. 4.160 thine ass, Q thy. These and other similar instances might be interpreted as showing that the actors said thy, even when the book had thine; or else the shorthand writers, to whom the quartos are due, made no distinction between the two forms in their notes.—Before h we have once mine heart (Meas IV. 3.157) and regularly mine host (except only H4A IV. 2.50 my host); Wiv IV. 5.19 thine host. Before other words beginning with h Sh always has my.

Al. Schmidt (Sh-lex.) tries to establish the rule that if the pronoun was stressed my, thy were preferred before a vowel, but otherwise mine, thine; he cites H6B II. 1.31 Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence. And thy ambition, Gloster. But this rule cannot be maintained in all cases, though it seems to be supported by R2 I. 3.242—5 And in the sentence my owne life destroyed ... I was too strict to make mine owne away: But you gane leave to my unwilling tong. (The accents show the verse ictus, not sense emphasis).

16.213. In Milton's poetry there is a certain number of forms with n before a vowel, especially before own, eye, ear; his inconsistency in the use is shown in SA 217—8 Then of thine own tribe fairer, or as fair, At least of thy own nation, and as noble. Bunyan sometimes has mine before vowels (G 10 mine end, mine own; 31 mine ears; 35 mine eyes; 42 mine eye), also 10 mine hand, but e.g.
31 my ears. Swift seems to have mine only before eyes (3.292, 3.334) and in the vulgar mine arse (J 57, 61); but before all other words with vowels and h he uses the form my. Pope has generally my in all cases, but once mine and once thine before eye(s) and twice thine before ears. Before eye the old form with n thus seems to have had more vitality than in other cases, probably to avoid the ill-sounding repetition of the diphthong [ai]. Another survival of the old form is mine host (h was formerly mute, I. 2.943), which is used archaically by Scott (e.g. A 1.21), Thack (N 177), etc. Other archaisms are found occasionally in 19th c. poets, thus Tennyson 38 Like mine own life 39 mine eyes 39 thine arms entwine My other dearer life (which shows how artificial it is) | Swinb SbS 84 thine heart . . . thine eyes, etc.

16.22. In ordinary prose, since the beginning of the 18th c., the form my has been the only natural form of the pronoun used as an adjunct.

My thus can never stand alone. The only exception is the use as an exclamation, which is an instance of aposiopesis, the speaker breaking off before saying some such word as God: Caine C 37 My! he has caught it | Twain M 87 My, what a race I’ve had!

16.231. The chief use of mine (thine) in ModE is as a principal, generally anaphoric, as in Sh Tp I. 2.302 subject to no sight but thine, and mine | his fortune is greater than either yours or mine. A good example of the difference between my and mine is Page J 120 You are all mine [all subjunct = altogether, mine primary], and my all [my adjunct, all primary].

On mine was the notion . . . = my notion was one . . . see 10.98.

16.232. In some cases mine is not anaphoric, but stands independently = ‘my people’, but only after the corresponding personal pronoun:

[Ch B 3070 wronges that ye have doon agayn me and myne] | Caxton R 56 that we and owris may abyde
in honour and worship | Sh R3 II. 1.24 so thrive I, and mine | Barrie M 436 what he did for me and mine that day | Kipl B 146 | Bridges E 160 from thee and thine | Tenn L 2.247 I am grateful for the enquiring after myself and mine.

Milton uses the possessive pronoun in the same sense without any preceding personal pronoun: SA 291 Mee easily indeed mine may neglect | ib 1169 thine. This is now contrary to English idiom, but may have been more usual in former times, cf. More U 269 Christ instituted amonge bys all thynge commen.

In dialects come to mine is used = 'come to my house' Ellis EEP V. 249, 261

16.233. Mine may sometimes stand = 'my task, my turn': Sh Meas II. 2.12 Goe to; let that be mine | Wordsworth P 13.12 'tis mine To speak.

16.24. Besides, mine may be used as a kind of adjunct after the substantive in addressing some one affectionately: Ch T 2.1714 Come, nece myn | Sh Tp V. 1.75 You brother mine | Tw II 3.40 O Mistris mine, where are you roming? | Shelley Epips 383 Lady mine | id L 2.885 Dearest mine | Rossetti 83 Fair Jenny mine (ib 85) | Wells N 476 Oh! Husband mine, believe me!—Mine might here perhaps be explained as not being properly an adjunct to the preceding word, but as originally an independent address, and therefore necessarily a principal: Lady mine = Lady! mine! Cf. 15.45.

Cf. also the cases of semi-predicative post-adjuncts (15.64) as Tenn 99 O my Amy, mine no more.

16.25. When a principal is preceded by two possessives joined by means of and (or), the former may take either the form mine or my (rarer):

Dekker S 9 thine and my owne tormentor | Sh Ado V. 1.249 upon mine and my masters false accusation | Hml V. 2.341 Mine and my fathers death come not upon thee | Cy V. 5.230 | Mi SA 808 Mine and love's prisoner | Mi PL 10.180 between thine and her seed | Goldsm 619 without.
mine or her aunt's consent | By 586 Like mine or any other subject's breath | Shelley L 952 both for mine and Mary's health | Tenn L 3.36 Mine and my wife's love to the Duchess.

[Mi PL 8.637 thine and of all thy sons The weal or woe.]

Whitman L 87 all the belongings of my or your body or of any one's body.

Nowadays the difficulty is generally avoided, either by the use of my own (Thack P 3.34 I will not forget my own or her honour), or by some transposition (Sh Wint V. 1.167 my arrivall, and my wifes | Lamb E 1.141 to my utter astonishment and her own | Quincey 83 both on his own account and mine | Shaw 2.66 you are very solicitous about my happiness and his), or by of (Hardy T 411 For the sake of me and my husband).—Sh Tp III. 3.93 "his and mine lou'd darling" is abnormal.

16.26. On the analogy of my : mine the other possessives developed forms in n used as primaries, though these forms have never ceased to be vulgar: Wallis 1653 mentions hern, ourn, yourn with the addition "barbarice"; Cooper 1685 similarly ourn, yourn, hern, theirn "quidam male"; Pegge 1803 hisn, hern, ourn, yourn. Alford p. 211 gives the rime "He that prigs what isn't his'n, When he's cotched, is sent to prison. She that prigs what isn't her'n, At the threadmill takes a turn". Thus Di Do 16 your'n | Thanks 50 that there gel o' yawn [= girl of yours] | Ridge S 13 a shirt like yourn | ib 86 why don't they learn a decent language, like ourn? | Masefield W 58 yourn (:burn).

In Scotch we have the form mines as a primary, formed on the analogy of yours, etc. Murray D 192 gives as examples "a'll gi'ye yoors, quhan ye bryng mey meynes | meynes is the best after aa." Thus Stevenson C 69 neither your affair nor mine's. But in id U XVI it seems used as a plural form: For the auldest friends are the auldest friends, And the maist o' mines hae left me. — Cf. p. 510.

16.27. No distinction corresponding to that between my and mine is made in Standard English with his and
its (just as a genitive like John's is used both before a substantive and alone). But the possessives ending in -r have developed a special form in -s used as a principal: yours (sometimes written your's), ours, hers, theirs. The s here is the genitive mark added superfluously (as in Danish deres, jeres, eders, Dan. vg. or colloquial vores). The form without s was used as late as 1550 in Bale L 1475 eternall dampnacyon is youre (riming with deuoure). On the beginning of the form in s see Morris's ed. of Ayenbite p. 54. Chaucer has both forms. In E1E the usage is exactly as now. — Cf. below, p. 510.

16.281. Examples of the ordinary anaphoric use of the forms in -s: Sh Merch IV. 1.96 Let their beds Be made as soft as yours . . . The slaues are ours. Examples of the rarer non-anaphoric use: Sh Meas V. 1.543 What's mine is yours, and what is yours is mine | R3 II. 1.33 [he] Doth cherish you, and yours. . . . When I am cold in love to you or yours.

Thus also he and his:
More U 157 whatsoever he and hys haue neade of | Caine P 261 He and his have robbed me of my daughters.

16.282. Theirs — their task (cf. 16.233): Tennyson 222 Their's not to make reply, Their's not to reason why, Their's but to do and die [thus printed, but it should be rather Theirs without an apostrophe, with is understood].

Theirs as a semi-predicative post-adjunct see 15.64.

16.283. A special case is found where, as in the following instances, ours or theirs really defines the we or they contained in the possessive pronoun:
Dickinson S 83 that is our task and our privilege, ours of the new generation | Browning 1.424 Show me their shaping, Theirs who most studied man | Swinb SbS 49 And the wrong of the old world straightway Pass from the face of her fame: Hers, whom we turn to and cry on, Italy, mother of men.
16.29. In the cases corresponding to those in 16.25, we have the same hesitation between both forms, though those without s are now found more often than my:

Sh Cymb V. 5.186 By hers, and mine adultery | Tp II. 1.253 In yours and my discharge | Cor V. 6.4 In theirs and in the commons eares | Peele D 427 ours and Jacobs God | Cowper L 1.378 from yours and my uncle's opinion | Thack E 2.144 to represent yours and her very humble servant | Darwin L 2.308 without Lyell's, yours, Huxley's and Carpenter's aid.

Cowper L 1.27 I shall not cease to be their and your affectionate friend | Lamb E 1.110 between our and their fathers | Carlyle S 71 to cut your and each other's throat | GE L 3.112 I enter into your and Cara's furniture-adjusting labours (also 4.18, 4.167, 266) | Bennett W 2.203 her and Sophia's old bedroom | Archer NP '06 to criticize their, and the President's position.

Examples in which the difficulty is evaded in the same ways as in 16.25:

Carlyle H 97 Turn away your own and others' face | Thack P 2.103 trifle with your own and others' hearts || Malory 92 your enemy and myn | Marl J 969 For your sake and his owne | Austen S 250 to request her company and her sister's | Austen M 377 I am at your service and Henry's | Thack P 2.229 as becomes one of your name and my own | GE M 2.324 I measured your love and his by my own | Wells T 10 she had made her point of view and Filmer's plain enough || Thack V 372 For the expenses of herself and her little boy | Di N 561 my regard for the feelings of yourself and your daughter | Ward R 2.297 the shortest way to the pockets of you and me.

It is rare to find their separated from the substantive by a prepositional group as in Mrs Browning A 21 their, in brief, potential faculty.
Demonstrative Pronouns

16.31. This and that are originally neuter forms, OE þis, þæt corresponding to masc. þis, se and fem. þeos, seo. But in ME these forms were extended to the other genders, both when the words were used as adjuncts to substantives and as principals; the other forms originally corresponding to that were gradually weakened into the 'definite article' the, while that retained more of the old demonstrative force. While in the adjunctal function the plural forms these and those correspond exactly to the singulars this and that, the same cannot be said with regard to the same forms used as principals, for here this and that can no longer be used in speaking of persons, while these and those can. The sg of those who is not that who (which is not used), but he who (she who); similarly there is no sg that present corresponding to the pl those present. — Cf. below, p. 511.

We shall first consider the anaphoric use of that (those) and then the independent use of that (those) and this (these).

16.321. That (those) is often used anaphorically followed by a participle or adjective, though there is now a tendency to substitute the one (10.51 ff.): Sh Lucr 1589 Foretell new stormes to those alreadie spent | Mi SA 33 a servitude like that impos'd by the Philistines | Scott Iv 59 respecting language, I willingly hold communion in that spoken by my grandmother | GE A 115 She's at another gate now—that leading into Fir-tree Grove | Ru T & T 19 any system of business, broadly contrary to that now established by custom | McCarthy 2.611 Another secret engagement was that entered into with Turkey | Parker R 5 there was no material for defence save that offered by the prosecution | Harrison NP '01 the whole educational machinery must be at least tenfold that of the United Kingdom. That open to women must be at least twentyfold greater than with us | NP conditions may vary from those
known, and even from those that presented themselves at the time.

16.322. Anaphoric that (and those) is very frequent before of:

Cowper L 1.51 No law ever did effect what he has ascribed to that of Moses | Johnson R 126 your dress and that of your servants | Scott Iv 153 more moved by the Templar's dangerous situation than he had been by that of his rival | Macaulay B 205 His temper was that of a slave | Thack S 169 let his fate and that of his poor wife be remembered | Di Do 447 the old woman's face was anxious and expectant; that of her daughter was expectant, too, but in a less degree | Thack N 202 Here will be your place, and here that of your young friend | Stevenson D 82 give this letter with your own hands into those of Miss Fonblanque.

This combination is especially useful where for one reason or another no genitive in s can be used:

Quincey 78 the silence was more profound than that of midnight | Austen M 57 whatever may contribute to its own amusement or that of others | 'ib 228 of less moment in his eyes than in those of any other person in the house | Di N 504 the wall dividing their garden from that of the next cottage | GE A 444 with a glory beyond that of amber or amethyst | Barrie T 323 This idea that his fate was bound up with that of the plant | McCarthy 2.292 unwilling to take on him the burden of such an office as that of Prime-minister | Ward M 457 the difference between my life and that of other men I know | Stevenson D 186 the case is but a flea-bite to that of him who should be linked to an explosive bomb | Haggard S 153 the face before me was that of a young woman of thirty years.

16.323. Anaphoric that before other prepositions: Shelley 720 And pity from thee more dear Than that from another | id Pr 273 the fountains of Rome . . . That in the Piazza Navona is composed . . | Austen M 67 the pain of her mind had been much beyond that in her head |
Scott Iv 79 Gurth sleeps in the cell on your right, as the Jew in *that to your left* | Di N 444 the best timekeeper in London . . . (for Tim held the fabled goodness of *that at the Horse Guards* to be a pleasant fiction) | Haggard S 133 one of the tables, *that to the left* | Hawth S 110 she could have accomplished a much longer journey than *that before her*.

Thus also before the prepositional infinitive: Wordsworth P 9.109 history the past and *that to come*.

**16.324.** Though examples of anaphoric *that* followed by *which* are by no means rare, they are now felt to be somewhat stiff and in some cases even un-English. In such a sentence as "Have you seen my knife—I mean that which I bought yesterday, not the old one" the only natural expression is "the one I bought". Examples of *that which*:

AV Luke 15.4 if he loose one of them [sheep] . . . goe after that which is lost [20th c.: the lost sheep] | Sh Merch V. 1.185 what ring gaue you, my lord? Not that, I hope, which you receiud of me | Shelley Pr 295 a different scene is this from that on which you made the chief character of our Drama | Scott Iv 47 he caused one of his attendants to mount his own led horse, and give that upon which he had hitherto ridden to the stranger | Di N 565 drawing his chair nearer to that on which Nicholas was seated | Thackeray E 1.42 he lay in the lonely chamber next to that which the Father used to occupy | GE A 330 the face was sadly different from that which had smiled | Macaulay E 4.137 a bloody and unsparing persecution, like that which put down the Albigenses | Seeley E 74 a problem substantially similar to that which our old colonial system could not solve | Carpenter C 83 the truest truth is that which is the expression of the deepest feeling | McCarthy 2.626 The measure had exactly the opposite effect from that which was intended | Doyle S 6.167 Taking the forms he carefully examined that which was uppermost.
16.325. An anaphoric *that* before a relative clause without any pronoun is now extremely rare:

Sh Oth III. 3.309 What handkerchiefe! Why, that the Moore first gaeue to Desdemona; That which so often you did bid me steale | Fielding 3.602 he wears a ring in his nose, somewhat resembling that we ring our pigs with | Defoe R 130 I took another way to come back than that I went | Di N 261 It was a harder day's journey than that they had already performed.

16.33. Next we come to the non-anaphoric use of the demonstrative pronouns; as already hinted, the two numbers are not exactly parallel.

In the sg *this* and *that* in speaking of persons have perhaps at no time been very frequent; now at any rate they are very rare, and the quotation from Browning sounds quite un-English:

Malory 215 [q Baldwin § 90] Brewnor desyred euer worship, and thys desyreth brede | Sh H5 IV. 4.78 they are both hang'd, and so would *this* be, if hee dorst steale any thing aduenturously (cf. Franz § 313) | Tw V. 153 and then thou art As great as *that* [= he whom] thou fear'st | Alls III. 5.81 Hee; *that* [= the man, the one] with the plume: 'tis a most gallant fellow | Defoe G 94 Elder and younger share the goods of fate, *This* all the brains inherits, *that* th'estate | Browning 2.256 *this* rends his hair Because his child is taken to God's breast, *That* gnashes teeth and raves at loss of trash.

In the two last quotations, *this* and *that* are used in contrast instead of the more natural *this man* and *that man*: In Sh Tw it is possible that *that* should be taken as neuter, as in the words immediately preceding: Be *that* [= that which; what] thou know'st thou art.

16.341. In OE, where the forms of the neuter were different from those of the masculine and feminine genders, we find neutral forms employed in such sentences as Apoll 25 *his heo is* | Beow 11 *þæt wæs god cyning* |
Andreas 1722 þæt is æðele cyning. In the same way ModE this and that must be considered neutral rather than personal in "This is my brother John" (cf. Mi SA 115 This, this is he) and in "Is that you?" (e.g. Ridge G 167, Herrick M 336), where that is a more emphatic it: Di N 41 Is that you, Hannah? It is I, Miss La Creevy. This was formerly used very extensively, see e.g. Sh Meas I. 4.6 Who's that which calls? [now rather Who is it that calls] | Err III. 1.61 Who is that at the doore that keeps all this noise? Thus also in the appreciative formula: Do come at once, that's a good girl | Sh Tp 1.2.299 F [I will discharge thee]. That's my noble master | Di D 217 I am so glad to be here. That's a fine fellow! | Poe 117 Come now! that's a fine fellow.

16.342. That is undoubtedly neutral in that'll do | that's it | don't talk like that | Dickinson S 122 we don't dress like that now, etc. Also in and that, which serves to add a supplementary description: Sh H4A III. 3.5 Ie repent, and that suddenly | Hml III. 2.33 players that I haue heard others praise, and that highly | Brontë P 127 None of the Belgian girls would have retained one position, and that a reflective one, for the same length of time | Ru P 2.80 I had only yet once seen her, and that six years ago, when still a child. — Cf. 16.344.

Note the pl in Sh H8 I. 2.18 I am solicited not by a few, And those of true condition.

16.343. Note also the recent restrictive or wondering at that (corresponding to German und noch dazu, Dan. endda) as in:

Shaw D 172 they become old bachelors, and rather savage ones at that | ib 210 a bachelor, and a precious green one at that | Chesterton F 125 I'm afraid I've come on business, and rather jumpy business at that | London W 169 they had hair instead of fur, and a few had very little hair at that | Collier E 418 The only thing that produces leisure is work, and hard, painful work at that | Worth S 272 and the nigger will be lynched—probably
the wrong nigger at that | NP'11 Why should they confess? And both of them at that!

This usage, according to NED, is originally American and 'prob. extended from dear at that, cheap at that (price).

16.344. A neutral that serves to repeat a predicative, or a participle or infinitive of a verb mentioned before; in many cases the less emphatic so would now be preferred:

Sh Wiv IV. 5.60 was there a wise woman with thee? I, that there was | Caine S 1.94 are they coming? That they are | Hope Z 85 afraid for himself he was not—no man ever saw him that || Sh As I. 3.97 the Duke hath banish'd me his daughter. That he hath not | Tp V. 1.294 trim it handsomely. I, that I will | Di Do 41 "the children will go half wild to see you Polly, that they will." That they did, if one may judge from the noise they made | Di D 479 it was not that he had lost his good looks, or his old bearing of a gentleman—for that he had not || Hope R 167 they asked one another what brought his Majesty abroad at such an hour—and that in Strelsau when all the world thought he was at Zenda | Ru F 5 I should be ashamed if there were anything in Fors which had not been said before,—and that a thousand times. — Cf. 16.342.

In the following quotation the same that seemingly stands for a plural substantive:

Mill Fox 2.277 the book can never be liked by any but students, and I do not want them to spoil themselves by becoming that on my account [becoming students].

16.351. The use of that as an independent neuter before a participle or infinitive (— that which is) is completely obsolete: Sh Lucr 1256 not that devour'd, but that which doth devour, is worthie blame | Sh Tp III. 2.106 that most deeply to consider is the beautie of his daughter (now: the thing most . . .).
16.352. But before a relative clause *that* is very often used as an independent neuter; *that which* expresses very nearly the same thing as *what*, which is now more generally used; if there is any difference, *what* is a little more indefinite and thus approaches the signification of *whatever*. Examples of *that which*:

AV Luke 16.12 if ye haue not bene faithful in *that which* is another mans who shall giue you *that which* is your owne? [20th c.: if you have proved untrustworthy with *what* belongs to another who will give you what belongs to us] | ib 16.15 *that which* is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God [20th c. *what* accounts for much with men . . . ] | Defoe P.7 *that which* encouraged them was, that the city was healthy | Byron 631 Remorse of *that which* was—and hope of that which cometh not | Wordsworth 257 *what* delights the sense is false and weak . . . The wise man, I affirm, can find no rest In *that which* perishes . . . love betters *what* is best | Wilde P 107 *that which* is the keynote of romantic art was to him the proper basis of natural life | Merriman S 64 Never tell a woman *that which* is not interesting enough to magnify into a secret.

Sometimes *that which* is chosen because *what* would be taken as an interrogative: Moulton Sh 8 the ordinary reader has little idea of *that which* is the sense of my argument—the degree of regularity.

16.353. This independent neuter *that* may be followed by the relative *that* (see vol. III Index); in speaking, though not in writing, the two pronouns are easily distinguished [ðæt ðæt]:

Sh Wiv I. 1.218 I shall doe *that that* is reason | ib II. 2.216 Pursuing *that that* flies, and flying *what* pursues || Hope D 52 it's just *that that* makes stories like yours so infernally uninteresting | Hope Z 171 it's not only *that*, sir, *that keeps him away* | Stevenson M 282 it was partly *that that* brought mc down. — Cf. below, p. 511.
It will be noticed, however, that in the modern instances *that* is more emphatic than in the old ones.

16.354. Instead of *that which* we sometimes find *that what* or *what . . . that* (in the latter case *that* only adds emphasis to *what*):

Burns 2.30 *That what* is not sense must be nonsense | Shaw P 95 *What* man could, *that* we did.

16.355. *That* before a relative clause is often used in an indefinite sense approaching to 'something', especially after *there is*:

Sh Hml I. 2.85 But I haue that within, which passeth show | Sh Tp I. 2.359 thy vild race . . . had that in't, which good natures could not abide to be with | Scott Iv 423 here is that will pay for horse and man | Di N 750 There was that in her manner which prepared Nicholas for *what* was coming | Hardy L 199 there was that in the look of Mop's one dark eye which said . . . | Merriman S 217 perhaps he did understand, for there was that in her eyes that made her meaning clear.

When *that* is used in Elizabethan English (and earlier, e.g. Ch B 3958) where now we should say *what*, the natural feeling nowadays would take it as the demonstrative pronoun with relative omitted, thus stressing *that* [*ðæt*]; but the metre in some passages seems to show that it was, or might be, the weak-stressed relative pronoun [*ðæt*], see the next two examples¹: Greene F 2.13 Bacon, we hear that long we have suspected | Sh As III. 2.77 I earne that I eate: get that I weare | Wint III. 3.5. The heauens with that we haue in hand are angry (see other ex. Sh-lex. p. 1196) | AV Exod 3.14 I am that I am. — On those see 16.372.

16.36. *This* is frequently used neutrally: this is not true | this is all I have to say | will this do? | hold the glass like this, etc. Sh Hml I. 3.78 This aboue all:

¹ In this case it would be a parallel to *that* = *he that*: handsome is that handsome does.
to thine own selfe be true. It is = ‘this place’: I shall leave this to-morrow | Austen M 69 the roads between this and Sotherton, or = ‘this time, this moment’ (after a preposition): before this | after this | Sh Ado I. 1.3 He is very neere by this | Di Do 101 between this and breakfast. In letters, especially commercial ones, this = ‘this letter’: this is to inform you | when you receive this, etc.

16.371. Those = ‘those persons’ is very often used as a principal, followed by an adjective (participle), a relative clause, or an adverbial adjunct: those present, e.g. Hewlett Q 213 | Ridge S 122 she wished to punish only those responsible | Phillipotts M 85 a breakfast long remembered by those fortunate enough to attend it | Quincèy 20 I was amongst those specially invited to the festival | Kidd S 16 amongst those openly rejecting the dogmas | Swinburne L 11 all those interested in social reform || Sh Err III. 1.48 who are those at the gate? | Mcb II. 3.106 Those of his chamber, as it seem’d, had don’t | Defoe G 7 for the sake of those yet in the cradle or perhaps not born | Scott Iv 89 those of thy tribe give nothing for nothing | Carlyle R 1.230 a sage who was venerated by those about me | Fox 1.253 I was enabled to speak to all those in power that I wanted to see | Kidd S 178 a party composed of those lower in the social scale.

16.372. Those is frequent before a relative clause in the indefinite sense of ‘some’ (corresponding to that, above 16.355): there are those that will repeat anything they hear | Hewlett Q 17 There be those that laugh at danger there, as well as those who weep.

16.373. These = ‘these persons’ needs no exemplification. Sh Tp II. 2.91 These are deuils.

16.38. This and that as adjuncts (this ring, that tree, etc.) are extremely frequent and have been so in all periods of the language.

16.391. In the extremely frequent combinations this much and that much (= as much as this, that) this and that may be taken as adjuncts, cf. the rare plural in
Sh Cæs IV. 1.1 These many then shall die. But the speech instinct, at any rate of vulgar speakers, interprets this and that here as subjuncts to much, and vulgar speech in consequence employs this and that = 'so' also before other adjectives and adverbs. This moche is found as early as Caxton R 87, but the rest of my examples are recent. (This long in Sh Per II Prol. 40 is probably a misprint for thus long, which is the reading of the folios).

16.392. Examples of this much: Shelley Pr 91 This much is certain | By DJ 5.98 This much however I may add | Poe 258 they are right in this much | Ru C 37 we have this much of plain Christianity preached to us | Stevenson M 281 I will say this much more | Dickinson S 83 This much we hold to be established | Ru T 169, Art of E 288 | Swinburne L 263 (prose) | Wells A 98, T 36, Am 167 | Kipl J 2.27, etc.

This before adjunctal much is not quite so frequent: Scott Iv 375 to take this much burden upon me | Gissing B 478 to whom he owed this much courtesy | Swinb L 224 there is this much reason in it. [By DJ 16.107 this much good]. — Cf. below, p. 511.

16.393. That much: Ru C 49 I should be sorry to take that much of consolation from you Hardy L 30 That much I casually heard | McCarthy 2.539 | Kipl L 103, 105, 124, J 2.51 | Caine E 411 | Hardy F 93 | Shaw C 170, etc. — Cf. below, p. 511.

That before adjunctal much: Spencer E 40 to know these realities is to have that much science.

16.394. This as a subjunct before other words (vulgar): Twain H 1.140 we hadn’t ever been this rich before. — Cf. below, p. 511.

16.395. That in the same way is much more frequent (in the speech of vulgar people):

Scott A 2.43 I am nae that book learned, at least I’m no that muckle in practice | Ward F 3 I’m that stiff | Caine M 14 I’m that sleepy . . . I’m sleeping that light it’s shocking | Shaw C 232 his feelings are that easily touched | Kipl
Sometimes subjunctal *that* is found outside of the speech of vulgar persons, thus Ward D 1.322, 2.30, 2.83 Shaw 2.135 | London C 146 And so long as men continue to live in this competitive society . . . . *that long* will the scab continue to exist.

16.41. I do not know whether *yon*, *yond* and *yonder* are ever used as principals. They are all of them used as adjuncts in Shakespeare and later (Bunyan G 148 *yonder gate*); now only in poetry, though *yon* is also colloquial in Scotland and the North of England.

All three forms are also used as subjuncts; in this employment *yonder* is the form generally preferred (thus in Sh, where *yon* is only found once as a subjunct, R2 III. 3.91, and here the folio has *yond*). Thither and *yon* is used by Meredith (H 79); *hither* and *yon* by Kipling (P 39, 74).

16.42. *The* is usual as an adjunct (‘the definite article’); it cannot be used as a principal.

But the same form is used as a subjunct, especially before a comparative. This is developed from the OE *fý*, the instrumental case of the neuter *pat* to indicate the difference. Examples: *the* longer, *the* better | *the* more haste, *the* less speed | Di Do 2 standing on tiptoe, *the* better to hide her face | Mill L 117 society will be little *the* better for their genius. See O. Johnsen. ESt 44.212 ff.

The use of *the* is transferred from a comparative to a superlative, as in Trollope D 1.255 it would be so much the best. Other examples will be given elsewhere.

16.43. Very likely *the* in the combination *the like* is the same subjunctal *fý*, as the ordinary article *the* does not seem completely to explain the usage: More U 248 to doo *the lyke* | Bacon A 25 with divers *others the like orders* and advises | Spect 93 with many *other the like curious remarks* | Swift 3,207 these and *the like* impending dangers [indefinite = some, like that] | ib 338 At other
times the like battles had been fought between the Yahoos | Goldsm 612 Was ever the like? | Carlyle S 32 None of those bell-girdles . . . or other the like phenomena | Di Do 344 and doing the like himself. Cf. 11.34.

On them = 'those' (adjunct) see 16.13.

16.44. Self is now only a principal (on the substantival use see 8.43), and the old use as an adjunct = 'same' is completely obsolete: Marl F 561 in one selfe place | Sh (frequent) Merch I. 1.148 To shoote another arrow that selfe way Which you did shoot the first.

16.45. Such is used both as a principal and as an adjunct: Mi SA 1631 from such as nearer stood | Sh Hml III. 2.335 such answers as I can make, you shal command | don't be in such a hurry!

Such is almost a subjunct (= 'so') before another adjunct: Sh Hml I. 4.43 Thou com'st in such a questionable shape [= so q. a shape] That I will speake to thee | Hope D 8 I don't call her such a bad-looking girl [= so bad-l. a girl] While in the sg both so long a sermon and such a long sermon may be said, in the pl the latter form is always preferred: such long sermons (2.22).

Interrogative and Relative Pronouns

16.51. Who can only stand as a principal.

16.52. What is extremely frequent as a principal (neuter): What does it all mean? | I took what I could.

As an adjunct it goes back at least to early ME: Ancrene Riwle 280 hwat turn | ib 406 hwat fleschs; it is frequent in ModE, e.g. Sh Cæs I. 3.42 what night is this? | Ven 343 What a sight it was! | ib 1075 what treasure hast thou lost, What face remains aliue.

A Scotch by-form is whatten: Stevenson M 19 Whatten fish?

What from being a kind of loose object with verbs becomes a kind of subjunct 'to what extent'; cp. the similar development with nothing:

Sh Ven 1077 What canst thou boast Of things long since? | Tp I. 1.17 what cares these roarers for the name
Rank of the Pronouns. [16.52—16.621.

of King? | Ro I. 5.57 what dares the slave Come hither? | Defoe G 65 And what am I the better for all this saving? Scott A 2.4 What could I hinder him? | Doyle NP '95 you will not ask what better off I was.

Cf. the use in what if, what though, and especially in what with, what between, etc. — Cf., further, p. 511.

16.53. Which is used both as a principal and as an adjunct: either Sunday or Monday, I don't know which | Which day did you say? — Whichn see Mencken AL 454.

If that [ðæt], as, but can be termed relative pronouns, they can only be called principals in that capacity.

Other Pronouns

None

16.61. Both none and no go back to OE nān (< ne + an ‘one’), the old distinction being the same as the old distinction between mine and my (16.2), none being used before a vowel, while the final n disappeared before a consonant. This rule is still given by Hart 1569. Early ModE examples of this adjunctal none before a vowel are Caxton R 83 by none other luste | ib 96 it was none otherwyse | More U 77 none end | ib 87 to none effect | ib 123 none other; also 140, 183, 254. Sh has one isolated instance H8 IV. 1.33 of none effect; and the same phrase occurs in the AV of the Bible (Matth 15.6, Mark 7.13) and from thence used by Macaulay (H 4.217) and other recent writers. None other also survived to some extent after no had otherwise been established also before vowels: Bunyan G 42 thoughts ... none others but such blasphemous ones | Swift 1713 (NED) none other disease | AV Deut 5.7 (often quoted) Thou shalt haue none other gods before me (Prayerb.: but me) | Southey 1827 (NED) none other Lord; cf. below 16.623. — Cf. below, p. 511.

16.621. In ModE the usual distinction between no and none is that between an adjunct and a primary word, in the same way as between my and mine. But there are
some cases in which it is not easy to draw the line between adjunct and principal.

16.622. In a few Shakespearian passages it may be doubtful whether none is to be considered as a principal with a following substantive in apposition or as a survival of the old adjunctal use of none before a consonant: Cy I. 4.103 Your Italy containes none so accomplish'd a courtier | John III. 4.151 that none so small advantage shall step forth. (In both instances before so, cf. none such below). Cf. also Cy I. 6.57, where it is probably correct to place a comma between none and a stranger.

16.623. In the following instances of none other (without a sb) none must be considered the principal, to which other is added as an adjunct, though of course the old use of none before a vowel may have contributed to the usage:

Lyly C 277 it becommeth the sonne of Philip to be none other than Alexander is | Poe (q) Our hope was, at best, a forlorn one, but we had none other | Williamson S 114 She was not alone; but for a second or two I saw no one else. There was none other except her beautiful face in the world.

None others in the following quotation is odd and a little affected: Allen W 57 On these terms it shall be, and upon none others.

The natural form now is no other, not only when followed by a substantive, but also when standing alone, in which case other is the principal:

Allen W 59 other women have fallen: no other has voluntarily risen as I propose to do | Haggard S 105 in front of the prison stood no other than our friend B | GE M 1.133 The startling object was no other than little Lucy | Hardy L 97 they could do no other than smile at the accident [= nothing else, 16.9].

16.624. In Sh H8 V. 153 “I sweare he is true-hearted, and a soule None better in my Kingdome” none
better must be regarded as a new sentence (without a verb) added loosely to a soule (as if after a dash): none thus is the subject; cf. Sh Merch III. 1.28 You knew, none so well, none so well as you, of my daughters flight | Ch A 48 And therto hadde he riden (no man ferre) As wel in Cristendom as hetenesse | More U 76 he could play a part in that play, no man better, and frequent constructions like "He knows her, no one better".

16.631. None is used as a post-adjunct (for emphasis): Ch T 3.499 in storye noon | Sh Tp V. 167 heere haue I few attendants, And subjects none abroad | ib II. 1.151 riches, pouerty, And use of service, none | Mi PL 11. 669 and refuge none was found | Mi PR 4.184 Other donation none thou canst produce | Wordsw P.14.50 encroachment none was there | Bridges E 91 where lovers walk'd are lovers none to find.—This now is decidedly poetical.

16.632. Shelley's verse (p. 72) Yet sound to me none came, may serve as a transition to the very frequent employment (even in prose) of none at the end of a sentence (especially after the verbs be and have) as a kind of adjunct at a distance belonging to a word placed emphatically in the beginning of the sentence: Ch A 773 confort ne mirth is noon | ib F 249 swich a wonder thing ... herde they neuer non (other ex. in Chaucer are A 680, B 1020, 1898, Parl 437, etc.; with the indefinite article before the sb A 754) | Mal 51 vytaille they wanted none | ib 126 | More U 222 other goodnes in them is none | Sh Err I. 1.76 other meanes was none | Sh Tw III. 4.262 satisfaction can be none but by pangs | Hml I. 2.216 | Cy IV. 2.228 | Bacon A 33.11 Horse-men he had none | Mi PL 4.704 Other creature here, Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter none | Defoe R 144 lunnen I had none left | Wordsw P 8.202 nook is there none | Quincey 95 further business I had none to detain me in Chester (ib 122) | ib 26 Bad tempers there were none amongst us | Shelley 90 that ill might none betide him | Di D 304 throat she had none;
waist she had none; legs she had none, worth mentioning | Gissing B 41 Paternal relatives Godwin had as good as none | Ru Sel 1.287 of mother's teaching, we hear of none.

16.64. Very frequently none is anaphoric, in some of the following examples added for emphasis immediately after a sb preceded by no, Sh Phoen 47 loue hath reason, reason none | Tp II. 1.166 no marrying? None | Ado IV. 1.41 would you not sweare . . . that she were a maide . . . But she is none || Mcb IV. 3.60 there's no bottome, none, In my voluptuousnesse | Scott A 2.138 I meant them no affront—none | Ru Sel 2.276 men will fight for any cause, or for none.

16.651. An anaphoric none may take an adjective after it:
Sh R3 IV. 4.458 what newes with you? None good, my liege, nor none so bad, but well may be reported [fol. None, good my liege, . . .] | Stevenson JHF 92 This glass has seen some strange things.—And surely none stranger than itself.

16.652. As a post-adjunct after none, such is particularly frequent (cp. the word-order in many such):
More U 224 they cause none suche to dye | Sh Oth IV. 2.124 [He call'd her whore] I am none such | Haggard S 96 none such can have been made in the country for hundreds of years.

To explain none such where no such might have been expected, Einenkel (Indefinitum § 40) speaks of influence from Fr nulle telle; but I fail to see why that phrase should be better rendered by none such than by no such, or why English people should think of French in expressing so simple a notion.

Nonesuch is also used as a substantive, see NED 1590 this paragon, this nonsuch; 1745 a nonsuch; and (obsolete) as an adjective 'unrivalled': 1715 all none-such men. A variant of this is now spelt nonsuch and pronounced [nonsæʃ] as if containing the Latin non; see NED for examples (1895 As for your Prince, he's not a nonsuch).—Compare also the plant-name none-so-pretty (pl see 2.58).

16.66. None is now regularly followed by an verb in the plural (6.42); and no one is to some extent to be
looked upon as a singular of *none*. Still there is this difference that *none* may be used both of persons and things, while *no one* is used only of persons. (I am not here speaking of adjunctal *no one* which can be placed before names of things as well). In the following two quotations *no one* and *none* are used in close succession for the sake of variety: Spect 6 *No one* ever took him for a fool, but *none*, except his intimate friends, know he has a great deal of wit | Ward M 284 *That none* of us can do. *No one* can satisfy his intelligence | Doyle S 2.52 I have *no one* to turn to—*none*. Thus also *nobody* and *none* in Galsworthy M 141 *Nobody* gave him anything, *none* should touch his property.

On the other hand *not one* is more emphatic than either *none* or *no one*: Austen P 206 "Do you draw?" "No, not at all." "What, *none* of you?" "Not* one." | Hewlett Q 354 there is *none*, no, *not one*, in whom I can trust.

**16.67.** As an independent neuter, = nothing, *none* is rare:

Sh As II. 7.88 *forbeare, and eate no more.* [Jaques] Why, I haue eate *none* yet.

**16.681.** *None of* is used not only in a partitive sense, but also in a great many instances where the partitive sense is obscured or even totally wanting, *none of* being simply an emphatic *not*. The partitive sense is still more or less clear in the following sentences:

Sh R3 I. 1.47 *that fault is none of yours* | Wint II. 3.92 *this brat is none of mine* | ib IV. 4.710 she being *none of your flesh* | As III. 3.56 *that is the dowry of his wife; 'tis none of his own getting* | Tw V. 342 you can say *none of this* | Bunyan G 110 *that was none of my work* | GE M 2.175 *men of the right habits: none o' your flashy fellows, but such as are to be depended oh* | GE A 87 *The kitchen had had none of her attention that day* | Ward E 276 *I gave you none of my time* | McCarthy 2.652 *Trollope has none of Thackeray's genius;*
none of his fancy or feeling; none of his genuine creative power | Hardy L 215 But none of this lasted long | Haggard S 83 the cave was none of Nature's handiwork.

Thus also in the usual phrase: Defoe R 275 it was none of my business (similarly id R 2.299, Ruskin Sel 1.490, Lowell St 300, Stevenson JHF 173, etc.). — Cf. p. 511.

16.682. No partitive sense is possible in these quotations:

BJo 1.25 it was none of his word | BJo 3.212 it was none of his plot | Bunyan G 115 it is none of our custom | Congreve 245 he shall be none of my husband | Congreve 275 I was none of her man | Defoe R 318 they were none of his prisoners [he had no prisoners] | Fielding T 3.9 do not I know Mrs. Fitzpatrick very well, and don't I see that the lady is none of her [= is not at all she] | Richardson (in Flügel) yield you must, or be none of our child [= no child of ours; note the sg child].

16.683. The frequent phrase I'll none of . . . or (now more often) I'll have none of . . . is found both with and without a partitive sense: MI F 401 [take your grid-irons againe] Truly Ile none of them | Sh Mcb V. 3.47 Throw physicke to the dogs, Ile none of it | Sh Tp IV. 1.248 put some lime vpon your fingers . . . I will haue none on't | Sh Merch III. 2.102 thou gaudie gold . . . I will none of thee | Dryden 5.407 I'll none of that || Sh H4B III. 2.271 I will none of you [cf. Ile no more of you Tw I. 5.45] | Tw I. 3.102 Shee'l none o'th Count | Scott A 1.253 I'll none of Hector McIntyre | Hope R 34 they were for carrying me to a hospital. I would have none of it | Haggard S 146 [Christ] came poor and lowly, and they would have none of him.

None of is often used alone in the sense: I (we, she, etc.) will have none of . . . : None of your cheek, please! | None of your tricks! | Di Do 90 She was dry and sandy with working in the graves of deceased languages. None of your live languages for Miss Blimber.
A partitive construction is always possible, when none of is followed by a superlative (none of the brightest = 'not at all bright'): Fielding T 1.144 the parson's face, which of itself was none of the brightest | Scott Iv 48 Aymer, whose nerves were none of the strongest | Lamb 2.216 his tooth, which is none of the bluntest.

None as a subjunct, meaning 'not', is developed from the use of none = 'nothing' in the same way as so many words for 'not' in many languages have originally been neuter (primary) pronouns (thus not itself = nought; nothing below 17.37; Scandinavian ikke; Latin non < ne oenum 'not one thing'; nihil, etc.). As a subjunct with a verb, in which case it may be considered a kind of object or indication of measure, none is obsolete except perhaps in Scotland and America, cf. the Scotch and American some and any 17.17:

Defoe R 27 we lay still all night; I say still, for we slept none | ib 182 I slept none that night | Scott (NED) you will quarrel none with Captain C.

Boswell (see I. XXXII) corrected his (Scotch) we spoke none into we had no conversation.

None as a subjunct is particularly frequent before the + a comparative and before too, not quite so frequent before so; in these cases it indicates the difference (cf. all the better, little the worse). Curiously enough, this usage does not seem to have been at all frequent before the 19th century. It may have developed on the analogy of any in the same position, which in itself is due to no (below 17.16); and we thus have a curious example of cross-analogies between negative and positive words.

None the + comparative: Defoe G 50 I am none the less obliged to you | Hardy T 118 the baby was dying—quietly and painlessly, but none the less surely | Doyle S 1.57, 4.96 | Di Do 81 they all got on very well; none the worse on account of the Major taking charge of the whole conversation.
16.693. From such instances, the following use of *none the* before a superlative seems to have developed. In the first quotation, *none* may be taken as the substantival pronoun (= no intention, not the least), but this is hardly possible in the second:

Stevenson B 41 I have *none the least* intention to offend | Hawth T 125 the old man’s eyesight was *none the sharpest* [cp. *none of* with a superlative 16.684].

16.694. *None too*: Di D 737 I was *none too soon* | Hope In 301 *none too gently* | Hope C 255 I was *none too sure* of it | Hope R 24 interrupted the station-master, *none too politely* | Harraden S 29 a little danseuse, *none too quiet* in her manners | Parker R 16 *none too able*.

*None so*: GE A 4 he’s *none so fond* o’ your dissenters . . I’m *none so fond* o’ Josh Tod’s ale | GEM 1.62 he’s *none so full* now, the Floss isn’t | Hope C 150 he found this *none so easy* | Morris N 166 when the waters are out it’s *none so pleasant* | Bennett A 156 I’m *none so set up* with the idea mysen.

In George Eliot’s dialectal speech, the subjunct *none* is also found in other instances: M 1.5 He’s *none frightened* at them | ib 1.46 she’s *none drowned* | ib 2.303 he’ll *none go away*.—Thus also in Arnold Bennett, e.g. A 88 It’s *none my business* | 232 I’m *none for* marriage | 242 it’s *none thy place*.

No

16.71. ModE *no* represents two words which were distinct in OE, the pronoun *nān* (see 16.51), and the adverb *nā* (< *ne* + *ā* ‘always’). The latter is an emphatic negative, stronger than the simple *ne*. It became the ordinary negative in Scotch and in Northern dialects, where it became enclitic after verbal forms (*canna, dinna*, etc.). In Standard English, its sphere was more circumscribed, though it was extended in some ways through a confusion with the pronominal *no*: in some combinations it is hard to tell which word we have.
16.72. No evidently corresponds to OE *nan*, when it is used as an adjunct before a substantive: *Sh Shr I. 1.39 No profit growes, where is no pleasure tane.*

This *no* may be logically analyzed as containing two elements, a negative subjunct and a (positive) adjunct. Hence it is the equivalent of *not + any* or *a*, and in many cases in which *no* is preferred in literary style, *not any* is used in everyday conversation: *He has no money = He hasn’t got any money.*

16.73. With regard to *no* and *not a* before a substantive, Stoffel (St. 77ff.) has tried to establish a definite distinction, which seems to me somewhat fanciful. (What Stoffel says on English stress, is not always to the point). In most cases in which we find *not a*, we might just as well say *not a single* (*not one*), or *not even a*. In the first three examples we have *no* alternating with *not a*:

Defoe G 67 their geographers had *not a globe*; their seamen *not a compass* (by the way they had *no ships*), even their physicians had *no books* | Stevenson M 35 *no planks, no iron, not a sign of any wreck* | ib 229 ‘you are *no human being*. No, boy’—shaking his stick at him—‘you are *not a human being’.*

Defoe R 2.232 All this while they fired *not a gun* | Swift 3.267 their language, wherof I understood *not a syllable* | Di N 578 But *not a word* said Newton | Wells TM 20 He said *not a word* | Kipl L 80 Dick had listened and replied *not a word* | Di T 2.179 speaking so low that *not a sound* was heard | also Hope Z 123, Stevenson M 64.

Fielding 3.578 He therefore hesitated *not a moment* ... The justice lost *not a moment* in using his utmost endeavours | Hope R 125 the dominant impulse was to waste *not a moment* in proclaiming the crime.

[Di D 261 Mr. Wickfield said *not one word* | Benson D 85 Lady C. has positively got *not one musical footman*.]

16.74. In many cases, the negative is attracted to some substantive and thus takes the adjunctal form *no.*
though it belongs logically to the verb. Thus, in the first quotation below, the speaker does not want to say that he is ashamed (as in “I am ashamed to have no information to offer you”), but that he is not ashamed to tell his name:

Goldsmith 622 I am ashamed to tell my name to no man | Di D 568 I was troubled by no doubt of her being very pretty | ib 578 I deigned to make him no reply | Conway C 187 I turned aside to visit no objects of interest | Stevenson M 238 I shall recognise him for no son of mine | Thack E 1.261 he had made up his mind to continue at no woman’s apron-strings longer | Macaulay E 4.58 Come to no terms; defend your city to the last.

Sh Tw I. 5.5 hee that is well hang’d in this world, need to feare no colours | Congreve 264 you need make no great doubt of that | Stevenson JHF 50 he need labour under no alarm for his safety | Shaw C 39 you need have no fear.

Defoe R 81 they should be in no condition to defend themselves | also R 2.117, Fielding T 4.239 | Bennett C 2.322 he was in no condition to sleep | Kipl S 176 Beetle was in no case to answer | Gissing B 213 I’m in no mood for society | also Haggard S 8.

16.751. When no is placed before a substantive which has already an adjunct, the signification differs, according as it is the substantive or the adjective which is negatived. In the former case, which needs no exemplification, no ordinary boy means ‘no boy of the ordinary type’ (no ordinary boy hates cricket). In the second case, as in “He is no ordinary boy”, it means ‘a boy of an extraordinary type’. (Compare the cases of subjuncts shifted into adjuncts mentioned in 12.2.)

This second use of no before an adjunct is particularly frequent in English, because it serves to avoid the combination a not, which is felt to be more clumsy than the corresponding combinations in Danish or German. Another way of avoiding it is by a transposition as in
Aldrich S 78 Now Margaret was not an unusual mixture of timidity and daring | Bennett W 1.223 he regarded him as not an ordinary boy.

Examples of no:

Defoe R 2.372 We sail'd from Arch-Angel the 20th of August, and after no extraordinary bad voyage, arriv'd in the Elbe the 13th of September [== after a voyage which was not bad] | Sh Mids III. 1.157 I am a spirit of no common rate | Austen P 427 it was an evening of no common delight to them all | Wordsw 481 he, too, [the thrrostle] is no mean preacher | Scott A 2.24 he held no ordinary influence over his sentiments | ib 1.302 such a question would lead to an answer of no limited length | Di N 220 several gentlemen with no very musical voices | Di Do 349 he went on in no improved humour | Di D 200 it would require a painter, and no common painter too, to depict my aunt's face | Philips L 64 the seed that I intend to sow at no very distant date | Doyle S 6.178 he looked up with no very pleased expression | Hope R 79 that council of war was held under no common circumstances | Stevenson JHF 19 being a man of no scientific passions he added.

16.752. This is especially frequent with small (little) and great:

Mi S 1261 with no small profit daily to my owners | Di N 42 Regarding with no small curiosity all the preparations | Thack P 1.86 Bows was a singular wild man of no small talents and humour | Fielding T 1.134 with no little degree of inveteracy | Poe S 79 in no little degree with no great result | Di Do 136 at no great distance | Macaulay E 4.3 a plain man of no great tact . . . — Cf. p. 511.

16.753. Before a superlative the same no is rare; I once heard a lady say: "I have no the least idea", which I take to be a blending of two constructions "I have no idea" and "I have not the least idea", the superlative rising to the speaker's consciousness after no had already been uttered. Similarly in Trollope D 2.18 speak-
ing with no slightest twang | Bennett W 2.197 his efforts had no smallest chance of success | id C 1.126 No sound! No slightest sound!

16.76. No + an adjective may be preceded by the, a, or a possessive pronoun. Though this cannot be separated from the constructions just mentioned, the defining word seems to show that no is taken by the speech-instinct as the adverb; the NED (which does not mention a before the combination and has no quotations later than 1647) says that it is now only found with no small or little; it quotes by his no niggardishe nature from Muncaster 1581. I have noted the following instances from the last two centuries:

Fielding T 3.192 to the no small terror of Partridge | Franklin 157 to my no small mortification | Hughes T 2.123 they appeared in the bar, to the no small astonishment of its occupants | Archer A 26 to the no small delectation of a little crowd | Hughes T 2.123 they appeared in the bar, to the no small astonishment of its occupants | Archer A 26 to the no small delectation of a little crowd |

16.77. Before quantitative little (neuter or adv.) and few the occurrence of no may be (partly) due to the frequency of the combinations a little and a few, as no is felt to be the negative equivalent of the indefinite article. The NED does not exemplify this usage, and it is therefore impossible to see whether it takes no as the adverb or the pronominal adjective:

Poe S 43 it added no little to the natural ferocity of his countenance | Hughes T 2.272 in his secret soul he was no little pleased | ib 297 wondering no little at the strange mixture | RoR Dec 99.593 he was no little of a poet | Mi S 1400 no few of them | Wordsw P 6.46 tender dreams, no few of which have since been realized | Philips L 280 there are no few moments in a voyage more dangerous than those | Kipl P 80 he bought much gold, and no few elephants' teeth.

16.781. In no before a numeral adjective as in Sh All III. 6.12 the owner of no one good qualitie | Cor II.
1.20 he's poore in no one fault, but stor'd with all | no two clocks ever agree | Gissing G 100 of the cleverness there could be no two opinions—we should be inclined to see the adverb, if it were not for the parallel use of any: he has not any one good quality | do any two clocks ever agree? Cf. 5.166.

In "it is no good trying to deceive him", which means '(of) no use', no is not the adverb (as in "it is not good"), but an adjunct to the substantival good (9.8).

16.782. Before such we see the transition from what is certainly adjunctal no to what is felt to be the adverb as shown by a:

Sh Ant III. 3.44 no such thing (very frequent nowadays) | Cowper L 1.9 it is no such easy thing | Di D 19 (vg) nobody never went and hinted no such a thing | ib 126 (vg) there's no such a thing | Mered H 451 Evan displayed no such a presence.

16.783. In no otherwise we may now either take no as a subjunct to the adverb otherwise, or as an adjunct to the (substantive) wise; the latter evidently is the original construction:

Sh H6A 1.3.10 we doe no otherwise then wee are will'd | Defoe G 18 | Fielding T 1.41 | ib 3.213 the guide who was no otherwise concerned than for his horses | Carlyle S 82 into its own body if no otherwise | Ru Sel 1.305 he can see, and do, no otherwise than as the dream directs | Dickinson S 57 all ought to have happened just so and no otherwise. — Cf. vol. VII 8.72.

16.79. Sometimes no is combined with a substantive in such a way that it means the opposite of what the substantive in itself means, or what is now more often expressed by preposing the Latin non (cf. non-occurrence, non-attention, etc.). We see an approach to this in sentences like:

Di D 533 Do you set a watch upon Miss W., and make her home no home | Stevenson D 16 this street, whose name I have forgotten, is no thoroughfare.
But the coalescence is not completed unless we have the possibility of using the plural as in Dickens Do 53 "the dullest of No Thoroughfares" (2.58) or of using one of the articles or a similar word before no:

Defoe G 90 make our gentleman curse their no-education | Carlyle H 40 such irrational supercilious no-love at all is perhaps still worse | Hardie S 100 set free from the non-productive work which now occupies them, or the no work as the case may be | Galsworthy C 278 D'you mean to say that wasn't a no-ball? [from the umpire's call in cricket] He bowled me with a no-ball. He's a rank no-baller. — Cf. below, p. 511.

16.81. We now come to some uses of no, in which it undoubtedly corresponds to OE adv. nā. Thus when it is used as an answer: Are you ill? No.

A special case is found in exclamatory questions: Di D 459 "I am not living with him at present." "No?" "No." | Hope C 257 "I don't know what you mean." "No?" said I | Zangwill G 160 "I don't see anything valuable in your evidence." "No!"

16.821. The same no is very frequent in the second part of a disjunctive question; here in certain cases not may also be used. We consider first direct questions:

Sh Ado I. 1.30 is Signior Mountanto return'd from the warres, or no? | H5 I. 1.71 Doth his maiestie Incline to it, or no? | LL II. 1.211 Is she wedded, or no? | Browning 2.131 Shall I be saved or no? | Hardy L 139 and have I done it or no?—The ordinary way of expressing this is now by means of . . or not, or by repeating the verb: have I done it, or haven't I?

16.822. In indirect questions (clause-principals, cf. 1.84) this is more frequent, at any rate in PE; generally after whether:

More U 100 whether that be a philosophers part, or no, I can not tell | Sh Err IV. 1.60 Good sir say, whe'r you'll answer me, or no | Defoe R 319 and tell me, whether he thought they might be trusted or no | ib 2.167 whether
she said any thing or no we could not tell | Swift J 81
I care not whether you have or no a better | Seeley E 273
the test of the vitality of a State consists in ascertaining whether or no the government rests upon a solid basis | Haggard S 159 it was a question of whether or no she were worth it.

Also after if (rarer):

Sh Hml III. 1.35 [we may gather] If't be th'affliction of his loue, or no | Marlowe T 2126 See, se, Anippe, if they breathe or no.

The confusion of na and nan began as soon as final n was dropped in some cases in the latter word; in Chaucer we find some instances of whether (wherso) or noon, where noon evidently takes the place of adv. no, thus F 778 (: goon inf.), LGW (Prol B) 291 (: echoon), MP 6.81 (: noon), E 1741 and in prose B 2273, 2407, I 962 if. It is noteworthly that sometimes none might make sense, as in LGW: Now whether was that a wonder thing or noon. This none, however, seems soon to have disappeared.

16.823. Next, we have the same or no used in alternative conditional sentences, indicating indifference (clause-subjuncts, 1.84); with whether:

Sh Tp III. 1.86 Ile be your servant Whether you will or no | Swift J 5 I will send it, whether MD writes or no | Defoe P 90 people would go in at all times, whether the minister was officiating or no | Fielding 3.499 I shall die whether I am afraid or no | Hawthorne 1.363 Whether or no it were entirely owing to that, she still acted under a certain reserve | Ward F 172 she would go to London — whether he liked it or no | Darwin L 2.82 you do not understand my notions (whether or no worth anything) | ib 83 whether or no my book may be wretched, you have done your best to make it less wretched | Di N 668 it might be a lucky guess or a hap-hazard accusation, and whether or no, he had clearly no key to the mystery.

The same with if:

Mrs Browning A 154 to hold and move them if they will or no,

and without any conjunction (rare):
Sh Tw I. 5.163 hee'l speake with you, will you, or no | Ru P 2.302 I went out, determined to have my walk, get wet or no.

16.824. We have the pronominal adjunct no in other expressions of alternatives (chiefly elliptical):

Di N 303 never, of all divine creatures, actresses or no actresses, did I see a diviner one | Di Do 361 he'd have him out, Doctor or no Doctor [= whether he were Doctor or no] | GE M 1.96 you've had your five per cent, kin or no kin | Mrs Browning A 203 we'll save her—child or no child [= whether she has a child or no] | Black Ph 34 she proposed that we should set out, rain or no rain | Shaw 1.24 if the matter is not to be regarded as settled, family or no family, promise or no promise, let us break it off | Kipl J 2.275 son or no son, come back for I love thee | Bennett B 224 I will never rest till you are dead, police or no police. — Cf. vol. VII 8.96.

Here not is rare: Quincey 279 the whole story is a bounce of his own... Bounce or not bounce, however, certain it is that...

16.825. Where in such cases, the substantive is not repeated, the form none is used, or else not:

Hawthorne 1.294 She scowls dreadfully, reason or none, out of pure ugliness of temper | Hardy W 188 Darton would have had you, Helena or none [= whether H. had been there or not] | ib 193 However, sarcasm or none, there was the answer | id F 102 business must be carried on, introductions or none | Mered E 173 headache or none, Colonel D must be thinking strangely of her || Shaw 1.180 What harm are they doing you? Well, harm or not, I dont like it | Conway C 156 Was he Pauline's brother? Brother or not, I would unmask him. Brother or not, he was answerable for everything.

16.826. From these alternatives, we sometimes get no used where we should rather expect not:

Green H 65 But forgotten or no, Northumbria had done its work | Lawrence Allitt. Verse 34 another question
which is affected by the **existence or no** of the inner cæsura.

**16.83.** *No* before a comparative represents the OE adverb *na* (cf. Boethius, quoted NED, *na beteran*), and thus enters into competition with *not*. But to the actual speech-instinct this *no* seems to be only an application of the pronoun *no* (OE *nān*), as shown by the use of any as its positive counterpart: *no more = not any more*.

The distinction between *not* and *no* with comparatives has been investigated in C. Stoffel’s *Studies in English* 1894, p. 87 ff.; from which I take some of the following remarks. Stoffel is not right, when on p. 89 he says that *not* is added to the verb and pronounced *n’t* in such sentences as “The picture is not more startling than true | this speech was not more impertinent to me than surprising to Sir Clement”, etc. Stoffel overlooks that such combinations are exclusively literary and would not occur in ordinary everyday speech. In reading, *not* would here be pronounced with a full vowel. Besides, some of his distinctions seem too subtle and are rarely observed even by accurate writers.

**16.841.** *No more without than* (expressed or understood) equals *no longer*, implying cessation: he is no more (no longer) ill = ‘he has been ill, but is not ill now’. It often is = ‘never again’ (in the future), as in Shelley 480 *He will awake no more, oh, never more!*

**16.842.** *No more than* generally means ‘as little as’: *He is no more wounded than you = you are not wounded, nor is he*. Thus very clearly in the following quotations:

Sh Gent II. 3.11 he is a stone, a very pibble stone, and has no more pitty in him then a dogge | Fielding T 3.145 I am no more afraid than another man | Johnson R 96 you are no more successful in private houses, than I have been in courts | Di D 45 Miss Murdstone kept the keys, and my mother had no more to do with them than I had | ib 145 a middle-aged person with no more hair upon his head than there is upon an egg | Fox 1.89 he, no more than his father, admires the present system | Pinero Ir 169 I’m no more content with
the present condition of affairs than you are.—Than I am? I’m not aware that I have expressed any special discontent | Shaw D *31 the rank and file of doctors are no more scientific than their tailors; or their tailors are no less scientific than they.

16.843. Hence also the frequent no more (without than) in the beginning of a sentence, generally followed by inverted word-order (i.e. verb before subject), which is an equivalent of nor or neither: Sh Wiv II. 1.7 you are not yong, no more am I | Di Do 67 he is not ugly. No more was my uncle’s Betsy | Hope D 9 She didn’t think he was coming then. No more did I | Hope Ch 175 nobody thought them ill-used. No more they were, he supposed.

16.844. Sometimes the distinction between no more and not more is clear enough; thus before a numeral: no more than three = ‘three only’; not more than three = ‘three at most’. Stoffel gives a quotation from Gibbon: “The victorious emperor remained at Rome not more than three months” and comments on it in the following way: “This means that he remained three months at most; if the author had written “no more than three months”, this form of expression would have implied that the author thought this a brief period, and “no more than three months” would be equivalent to ‘three months only’. Now, ‘three months at most’ puts before us a question of fact; ‘three months only’ introduces a personal element, viz. the speaker’s opinion that three months is a short time.”

The gospel is not more true than what I tell you [both are true]; the gospel is no more true than what I tell you [both are lies]. What I tell you is true; the gospel is not more true—here no more true (without than) would be understood as in 16.841 and thus would state the absurdity that the gospel, which once was true, has ceased to be so.
16.845. *Not more* in the same way is found in Sh Hml III. 1.51. The harlots cheeke beautied with plaist’ring art is not more ugly to the thing that helpes it. Then is my deede, to my most painted word | Austen M 32 a heavy young man with not more than common sense | Benson W 92. The pity is that conversation is not more recognised as a definite accomplishment [it should be more recognized; different from *no more*].

16.846. In some cases *no more than* is used where according to Stoßel’s rules *not more* would be more correct, as it is not equivalent to *as little as*. thus in Di Do 166 “if I do my duty, I do what I ought, and do no more than all the rest” [all the rest do their duty, and I do as much, but not more]. This is also the case in Sheridan 221 I should be very sorry to hear that anything had happened to him.—No more than I should, I assure you.

16.845. *No less (than) = as much (as)*:

More U 250 they doo no lesse pytye the basse sorte | Sh As I. 1.116 she is at the courte, and no lesse beloved of her uncle, then bis owne daughter | Fielding T 3.57 to the no less vehement remonstrance of Mrs Whitefield | Di D 579 I could do no less than reply Stedman Victor Poets 184 a no less interesting conjecture Wilde P 13 in the sphere of thought no less than [= as much as] in the sphere of time, motion is no more [= exists no longer].

“He paid no less than twenty pounds” implies astonishment at the greatness of the amount. “You must pay not less than twenty pounds” = £20 at the very least, but it would be well if you could pay more. Examples of *not less than* in this sense: Macaulay E 4.140 the deism of Robespierre was not less hostile to the Catholic faith than the atheism of Clootz | Seeley E 241 there are not less than fifty millions of Mussulmans in India [= possibly more].

But examples of *not less than* = ‘no less than, as
much as', are by no means rare. To those adduced by Stoffel I may add:

Stevenson D 139 horrible was the society with which we warred, but our own means were not less horrible | Caine P 269 Helga appeared to be not less excited than Oscar himself.

*No fewer than* = 'as many as':
Scott Iv 76 no fewer than six candelabras | McCarthy 2.593 no fewer than 12000 persons had been killed.

**16.86.** Similarly *no bigger than* = 'as small as', *no wiser than* = 'as foolish as', *no better than* = 'as bad (or as badly, ill) as', etc.:

Mi F(1616) 884 the earth appear'd to me *No bigger* then my hand in quantity | Defoe G 66 they desire to be *no wiser* than they are | Thack V 41 he could sing *no better* than an owl | Kingsley H 259 a man *no worse*, even if *no better*, than themselves | Hope Ch 132 if he comes back *no better*, send me a line | Sh Tp 1.1.50 I'le warrant him for drowning, though the ship were *no stronger* than a nutt-shell.

Cf. also *no sooner . . than* (formerly *no sooner . . but*).

Sh Tro I. 2.85 'Hector is not a better man then Troylus : if Pandarus had said: *is no better a man than T.*, he would have spoken slightly of both.

But *no darker* in the following sentence is not = 'as light'; we therefore should have expected *not darker*:

Ru Sel 1.417 a given shade, as dark as, with due reference to other things, you can have it, but no darker.

**16.87.** *More* in the cases mentioned above is either an adjunct or a subjunct; but *more* by itself may also be used as a principal, and is so (with *no* as an adjunct), when *no more* = 'nothing more, nothing else':

Sh H4A II. 4.312 no more of that, Hall, and thou louest me | Mi PL IV. 637 God is thy law, thou mine: to know no more Is womans happiest knowledge and her praise | Parker R 5 he had' done no more than formally plead not guilty.
Cf. no other (17.77) and no better in Caxton R 80 we desire no better, which might still be said.

16.88. Stoffel rightly remarks (p. 94) that in "No worse dauber than he ever spoiled good canvas" no is an indefinite pronoun, modifying dauber (in my own terminology: an adjunct to dauber), but in Sh Ant II. 2.31 "Octavia, whose beauty claims No worse a husband then the best of men" no is an adverb modifying worse (a subjunct to worse); in the former case we may therefore transpose the comparative (no dauber worse than he), and in the second the indefinite article is placed between worse and the sb (cf. too bad a husband, so bad a husband). Further examples to illustrate the position of the article with the adverbial no (cf. 15.17):

Sh Merch V. 1.106 the nightingale ... would be thought No better a musitian then the wren | As I. 3.126 Ile haue no worse a name then Joues owne page | Swift T 127 upon no wiiser a reason than because it is dark | Defoe G 121 I need no better a testimoniall | ib 199 I would desire no better a stock of learning | Spect 113 to no greater a perfection | Thack P 1.254 Mr. Buck, the tutor, was no better a scholar than many a fifth-form boy | Stevenson B 263 Dick caught the eye of no less a person than Will Lawless || Lecky D 1.95 Even the better class, however they may grumble, ... prefer a bad candidate of their own party to a (probably no better) candidate of the other party.

In the plural, the indefinite article is, of course, dropped:

McCarthy 2.454 among those were no less eminent persons than Mr. Gladstone and Lord Hartington [where, of course, it would be absurd to analyze: were no persons less eminent than Mr. G.].

16.89. Before the preceding a comparative the use of no corresponding to any (17.16) is no longer found. OE nā þy læs was continued in the form natheUss in the North; it is found e.g. Scott Iv 299, By DJ 5.104, but
is completely obsolete. So is also the form *notwithstanding*, the last example of which in the NED dates from 1606. Instead of these we now have *none the less* (16.692) and *not the less*, as in Austen M 2 a husband disabled for active service, but not the less equal to company | Quincy 30 not the less he held himself to be a layman (also 55, 73, 214, etc.) | By DJ 12.62 | Bennett W 2.15 it was not the less tragically serious. It should be noted that *less* here retains more of its original signification than in *nathwithstanding* and *none the less*, which (like *nevertheless*) have become synonymous with 'however, still, all the same'.

Chapter XVII

Rank of the Pronouns. Concluded

Some and Any

17.111. Here we have only one form of each word corresponding to the two forms *none* and *no*. We shall first consider the use of these two pronouns as principals. The distinction between *some* and *any* will be dealt with elsewhere.

As a principal *some* is very frequent in the plural. In the anaphorical function it stands both for persons and things (There are not many apples on the tree, still there are some), but in the independent use it stands only for persons (More U 266 Some worshyp for God the sunne; some the mone | Some are wise, and some are otherwise). It is especially frequent before *of*: some of us | some of these apples.

17.112. *Other some* was formerly used where now *some others* would be said; a few examples are given by Halliwell; in Sh we find Meas III. 2.94 some say he is with the Emperor of Russia; other some, he is in Rome | Mids I. 1.226 How happy some are [= over] othersome
can be. He has also some other in the pl, Err IV. 3.4. Milton has some other in the sg (= someone else): SA 1302 I descry this way Some other tending. (Cf. 15.13.)

17.12. Any as a principal in the singular = 'any one, anybody' is obsolete:

MI F 875 Unseen of any | Sh H5 IV. 3.66 whiles any speakes, That fought with vs vpon Saint Crispins day | Bacon A 6.6 their gesture when they bid any welcome | Fielding 3.448 the affront was by no means to be put up by any who bore the name of a gentleman | Keats 2.20 a place unknown Some time to any, but those two alone [? pl].

Examples of any in the plural are given in 6.43.

17.131. As neuters some and any are used anaphorically: Money? I never had any, though I should like some now and then | Di Do 414 he snatched a basin of cold water, and sprinkled some upon her face | Hope Ch 61 his poetry ... I wish I could write some like it! | Ridge G 246 As regards refreshment, when I want any I shall have some.

17.132. Besides, neutral some and any are frequent before a partitive of:

Sh Oth IV. 2.27 Some of your function | Defoe R 15 I told him some of my story | ib 246 some of the flesh | Shelley L 2.885 have some of your novel prepared for my return | GE Mm 37 feeling some of her late irritation revive | Fox 1.229 Sterling reading some of Tennyson to us | Tenn L 3.173 Miss B played some of her part finely | McCarthy 2.593 there was no disputing the significance of some of that testimony | Ru P 1.336 some of me is dead, more of me stronger | Vachell H 233 I wish I'd some of your faith | Benson J 40 A landscape painter paints what he sees, and only some of that | Barrie T 176 a girl with some of himself in her.

Sh Wint III. 3.136 if there be any of him left, Ile bury it | Austen M 166 having never seen any of the propriety which was so glaring | McCarthy 2.163 his
voice could hardly be said to have lost any of its musical strength | Lang T 172 Let us conceive Shakespeare writing Macbeth in an age of "exact history." Hardly any of the play would be left | Barrie T 209 if I felt any of my old fear of you.

17.14. Some and any are so frequent as adjuncts (some men, any number, etc.) that it is not necessary to give examples. A special case is the use before numerals, which has already been mentioned in 5.166. The numeral is either an adjunct (as in Macaulay H 1.52 Their prayers are not exactly the same in any two assemblies on the same day, or on any two days in the same assembly) or a principal (as in Austen M 245 you must keep two dances for me; any two you like, except the first).

Some and any are also adjuncts before more when this is a principal:

Sh H4A II. 3.7 Let me see some more | Tp II. 2.136 Ha'st any more of this? | Behn 334 she needed not any more to inform her who this intended husband was | London W 87 he had learned some more about the world.

17.151. When some is used to indicate approximation, chiefly before a numeral, it must also be termed an adjunct though it approaches the function of a subjunct:

Sh Gent IV. 1.21 Some sixteene moneths | Meas II. 1.95 a dish of some three pence | Yesterday I walked some twenty miles || Sh Shr IV. 3.189 I thinke 'tis now some seuen a clocke | Thack V 252 at some ten o'clock || Sh Tw III. 2.48 some thrice | Carlyle S 16 some once in the month | Browning 1.509 [he] shifts his ministry some once a month.

17.152. Some = 'about one': Sh Merch II. 4.27 Meete me ... Some houre hence (also Tw II. 1.22, Err III. 1.122) | Lr I. 1.20 I haue a sonne ... some yeere elder than this | Bacon A 11.30 it might be some mile into the sea | Di D 9 after some quarter of an hour's absence | Carlyle S 149 some generation-and-half after Religion has quite withdrawn from Life | Ru Sel 1.27 each stone being usu-
ally some foot or foot and a half in diameter | ib 133 in some quarter of a mile's walk.

17.153. Thus frequently before one of those substantives which indicate number (and which tend to become adjectives): Sh R3 I. 2.255 some [folio: a] score or two of taylors | Hml II. 2.565 a speech of some dozen or sixteene lines | Swinb L 15 he was in daily correspondence with some dozen of societies.

17.154. In some half-dozen, some is thus an adjunct, but when we find some half-a-dozen, the use of the indefinite article seems to make some rather a subjunct than an adjunct to the whole group. Examples of both:

Di T 2.22 some half-dozen times a year || Sh Ro III. 4.27 weele haue some halfe a dozen friends | Congreve 204 I have despatched some half-a-dozen duns | Di Do 237 some half-a-dozen more | Stevenson B 145 some half a dozen men sitting about the table | ib 159 a strong post of some half a score of archers | id D 29 a party of some half a hundred men, women and children | Di D 21 some half-a-year before | Swinb T 18 while some half a season ran || Bridges E 149 some half thy road.

Some is a subjunct in Stevenson M 60 he had paused, some halfway between me and the wreck.

17.16. Any is used as a subjunct before a comparative. The oldest example in the NED is from ab. 1400; a slightly older one is Ch B 4618 If thou bigyle me any ofter than ones. I take this usage to be developed as a positive counterpart to no before comparatives (16.8); the influence of analogy cannot have worked till after the two OE words nā and nān had been partly confused on account of the dropping of the final n.

Modern English examples:

Sh Tp III. 2.55 if you trouble him any more | Wiv IV. 2.128 you are not to go loose any longer | Wiv IV. 2.233 | Defoe R 36 they did not design to come any nearer to the shoar | Ru Sel 1.380 it will never be of much use to you any more | Stevenson V 82 it does not follow
that the one sort of proposition is any less true than the other | Collingwood R 289 he was not a Pessimist any more than an Optimist | Hope R 37 Any easier, Fritz?" | Shaw M 81 are your brigands any less honest than ordinary citizens?

Examples of any + the + comparative:

Hughes T 2.33 to ask whether I was any the worse for my ducking | Shaw C 265 Is the ring any the better because you think the drawingroom worse? | Shaw 2.136 Do you think she would have loved me any the better for being insincere? — Before too: Norris P 84 it don’t give us any too much time. — Cf. additions vol. VII 17.53.

17.17. Apart from the employment with comparatives, any is used as a subjunct in Scotch (in 1911 I heard a Scotch lady say: Is it raining any?) and especially often in American:

Stockton R 55 I don’t believe I can help you any | Amr NP ’11 he will not idle any during our absence.

The corresponding adverbial use of some (= standard somewhat) is similarly dialectal (especially Scotch) and very frequent in America (many examples in Krüger, Schwierigk. III § 332 a):

Norris 0 85 I’m some better | Herrick M 222 it’d be some better than it is working for you || Mrs. Carlyle F 3.233 I slept some in the intervals | Herrick M 135 B was some drunk | ib 310 the papers would make it some hot for you.

Compounds with body and one

17.21. Instead of using some, any, no, every alone in the singular as principals, compound pronouns with body and one are used in speaking of persons, and compounds with thing in the neuter. Those with body and thing are now always, and those with one often, written in one word (somebody, something, some one or someone, etc.); in the 17th and 18th c they were very often written separately (some body, any thing). In nothing the vowel is
changed like that of none [nāpīn, nān].—On the transition to real substantives with a plural see 8.44.

17.22. There is no real distinction between the compounds with one and those with body. Shakespeare evidently preferred one; anybody is only found twice and somebody only eight times, while everybody is not found at all in his works; nobody occurs only 23 times, chiefly in prose and in the mouths of characters like Falstaff and his friends; in poetry only three times (stressed on bo- in Merch V. 1.13, John IV. 1.13, on no in Oth IV. 3.52 Let no body blame him, his scorne I approue). Nowadays some one, no one, etc. seem to be more usual, and are often considered more literary, than the compounds with body; the latter seem to be avoided by some authors (Oscar Wilde), while others use both. In 200 pages of Ruskin I counted 30 instances of the body-pronouns and only 10 of those in one. Body is always used in the proverb: What's everybody's business is nobody's business. — Cf. below, p. 511.

17.23. The compounds with body are hardly ever used before a partitive of: always some one of the inhabitants, every one of our friends, no one of the company, any one of us. This is probably due to a reminiscence of the numeral value of one. Similarly: no one in the room spoke for some time.

17.24. The form with one is always used in the phrase no one better (Di Do 131 I leave him to you; and I can leave him to no one better | Hope D 38 Hilary knew the girl, no one better) and generally before a post-adjunct: every one present | no one concerned in that affair | Di Do 497 a tablet, erected to the memory of some one dead. The expression she's nobody particular is hardly an exception because nobody has the special signification mentioned in 8.441.

17.25. Sometimes the forms with one and with body are found in close proximity, probably for the sake of variety:
Thack S 73 Tom Prig knows everybody, has a story about every one | Di D 315 No one knows me there. Everybody knows me here | Caine P 203 “She’s gone”, said some one, and somebody else said, “So much the better” | Pinero Ir 205 And you’ve met no one else of our acquaintance? Nobody. | Ward M 273 Nobody knows.—Not even William?—No one. | Wells L 100 Somebody shuddered again, someone opposite him this time | Wells T 47 he remarked that nobody, not any one, ever, had given him sympathy.

The plural someones is found dialectically: Caine M 114 there’s someones on earth would sooner go to heaven solitary | 158 a barn, belonging to someones they’re calling the sky pilots.

17.26. The forms containing body and thing have now coalesced so completely that there is felt to be something unnatural in a combination like this: Hughes T 2.139 his remarks on boating, and everything and person connected therewith; better: everything and everybody.—Every other body = ‘everybody else’ is a Scotticism in Carlyle F 3.115 Everybody is astonished at every other body’s being pleased with [the French Revolution] | Barrie M 191 everybody looked at every other body. —To the coalescence of the two words is due the frequent pronunciation of somebody and nobody with obscured vowel [sAmbædi, nou-bædi]; in anybody and everybody the full vowel [-bodi] has been preserved by rhythmic stress (I. 9.223). — Cf. p. 512.

17.27. Instead of one and body we also have man, though it is not very frequent except with every:

Caxton R 64 seke every man vpon his febllest and wekest | Sh Ado III. 2.110 Leonatoes Hero, your Hero, every mans Hero | Sh R3 V. 2.17 Every mans conscience is a thousand men | Oth II. 3.318 You, or any man liuing, may be drunke at a time | Spect 7 he visits us but seldom, but when he does, it adds to every man else a new enjoyment of himself | Shaw C 175 Well, every man to his taste.

In Sh As I. 2.30 “Lone no man in good earnest” man implies the male sex.
17.28. Shakespeare also has *each man*, where now *each* alone (or *every man*) would be generally used:

Sh H4A V. 2.93 Let each man do his best | Lr IV. 1.74 So distribution should vndoo excesse, And each man haue enough.

This supplies us with a genitive of *each*: Sh H4 A V. 2.93 Take *each mans* censure. This passage also shows us that *each man* and *every man* are strict synonyms, for in the preceding line Polonius says: Give *every man* thine eare.

*Each body* (Caxton R.114 eche body) is completely obsolete.

**Something, etc**

17.31. As neutral principal pronouns corresponding to those in -body and -one we have *something, nothing, anything, everything*, and finally *somewhat*, which is, however, now generally restricted to the subjunctial function (17.41). The words *aught* and *naught* are nearly obsolete in standard English (17.43).

17.321 *Something* and the other forms in *thing* are now indissoluble wholes to a greater extent than in former periods, when an adjective could come in between *some*, etc., and *thing*, as seen in Ch C 325 Tel us som moral thing | ib 328 som honest thing | AV John 1.46 Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth | Defoe R 13 some dreadful thing had happen'd. This is still found in *no such thing* (for instance Austen P 4) and *any such thing* (ib 7). Instead of *every such thing* or *everything such* the usual phrase is *everything of that kind*, thus also *something of that kind*.

The numeral *one* must, of course, be placed between *some* and *thing* as in Stevenson D 7 it is necessary to know *some one thing* to the bottom; but then *thing* has here more of its original substantive meaning than in the other combinations.

17.322. The usual word-order is seen in: *something new | nothing particular | anything wrong | everything*
important | Sh Mcb IV. 1.45 By the pricking of my thumbes, Something wicked this way comes | Ant IV. 3.3 Heard you of nothing strange about the streets? | London A 192 I fail to see anything in it remarkable or unusual | Bennett C 1.160 the story stimulated something secret in him that seldom responded to the provocation of a book; more easily would this secret something (8.44) respond to a calm evening | Hope D 56 changing what you are for something no better [This shows the semi-predicative character of the adjective after something] | Mered E 421 I was under the cover of something silk [rare, cf. 13.64].

An adjective may also be added by means of a relative clause:

Defoe R 155 so void was I of everything that was good.

17.323. It should be noted that the difference between nothing new and no new thing corresponds to the distinction between mass-words (non-countables) and thing-words (countables), cf. 5.2. This explains the distinction made by Spedding in Tennyson L 1.171 I have not done anything good; nor said any good thing. In Stevenson M 68 still no human thing means the same thing as no human being'.

17.33. Like other mass-words nothing may also be combined with much; nothing much (which does not seem to be very old) means nearly the same as 'not much':

Gissing B 144 nothing much depends on it | Vachell H 35 nothing much to speak of | Wells L 19 I don't mind. It's nothing much. | Harraden F 27 there's nothing much the matter with me | Hope In 18 | Herrick M 68 Nothing much was done | Housman J 329 Nothing very much happened at the ball. — Cf. below, p. 512.

17.341. Something may be used instead of a name one has forgotten or does not know:

Thack V 20 to write to Sir Something Crawley | Carlyle R 1.282 This was the Honourable Something or
other | ib 283 the Honourable Something had a look of perfect politeness.

*Something* may in a similar way be a substitute for a word of another word-class: Hope Ch 57 she acts, or sings, or something.

In a similar way *everything* is colloquially used at the end of an enumeration, no matter what kind of word it is to take the place of: Bentham (NED) It is against my habits, my principles, *my everything*, to propose it to him | Zangwill, Cosmop. '97.616 new plates, new dishes, new spoons, *new everything* | Goldsm 646 if he be so young, so handsome, and *so everything* as you mention | Galsworthy M 197 a little too alert, a little too dark, a little *too everything*.

**17.342.** Note the following idiomatic expressions: Philips L 119 he may *be anything between* sixty and a hundred | Sw El 38 he *thinks nothing of* drinking six cups of tea straight off.

Cf. also the well-known passage Sh Merch I. 1.114 Gratiano speakes an infinite deale of nothing,—and the imitation in Ru Sel 2.85 that they should *mean something*, and a good deal of *something*.

**17.35.** *Something of a critic* is used in the sense: 'to some extent a critic' (cf. somewhat 17.41) Di N 554 she was *something of a critic* | Caine E 69 The man was *something of a dandy* | Quiller Couch M 132 she was *something of a scholar* | Mered H 461 thinking her *something of a fool* | Di T 2.285 with *something of the complacency of a curator* | Phillpotts M 358 he went through *something of a crisis* | Stevenson M 60 he spoke to me in *something of a pulpit voice* [id D 178 I have *something of the poet in my nature*].

**17.36.** In some cases we find the pronouns in *-thing* used in such a way that we may either take them as objects of the verb or as subjuncts to it; thus in Ch C 433 I *preche no thyng* but for coveitise; further in combinations with *care*: 
Di Do 48 they *cared nothing* for this | Austen P 79 a man whom nobody *cared anything* about.

In the following combinations also, *nothing* is approximately a subjunct:

Dickens D 39 I had *thought little or nothing* about my home | Benson D 235 Duchesses were expected to be *nothing accounted of* | Scott Iv 223 that *concerns thee nothing*.

**17.37.** *Nothing* was formerly much more frequently than nowadays used as a subjunct with a verb, meaning practically ‘not’:

Ch C 404 myn entente is not but for to wynne, And no thyng for correccioun of synne | Caxton R 113 wherof he thankyd nothyng the cook | More U 275 whoes lawes . . he wold nothing at al esteme | ib 201 thys doth nothing diminishes their opinion | Sh R2 I. 1.120 such neighbour-neerenesse to our sacred blood Should nothing priviledge him | Oth II. 3.224 to speake the truth shall nothing wrong him | Cor I. 3.111 they nothing doubt | Ado V. 1.33 therein do men from children nothing differ.

The corresponding subjunctal use of *anything*, as in More U 213 that they wolde annye thyng proffytte therin- ib 297 yf he doo annye thynge erre, — does not seem to occur in Shakespeare or later writers.

**17.381.** Next, we have some combinations in which *nothing*, etc., is used with an adjective or adverb to indicate degree and thus becomes practically a subjunct.

In the following combination with *like* it is still possible to take *nothing* as the pronominal primary (predicative) with *like* added as a post-adjunct: Hoccleve (NED) Hir woys was . . nothing like a manny's voise in sound.

**17.382.** This leads to the use of *nothing like* before *so (as)* as a kind of composite subjunct = ‘not at all, not in the least’; stress on *like*. NED 1728 (Blower) [she sits her *horse*] nothing like so well as you

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
used to do. Recent examples are: Di L 135 It is a fine place, but nothing like as beautiful as people make it out to be | Di D 85 I was much less brave than T and nothing like so old | Seeley E 92 the effects produced in Holland were nothing like so momentous as those which I have traced in England | Mrs Carlyle 3.203 that night on the road was nothing like so wretched as those nights at Marina | ib 222 Being nothing like so polite and self-sacrificing as you, I told Helen to say I was tired | Ru P 2.46 the houses were nothing like so interesting as ... | ib 3.4 the road is nothing like so terrific as most roads in the Alps | Browning 2.152 old And nothing like so tall as I myself | Henley Burns 242 In another respect their luck was nothing like so good.

Thus also:

McCarthy 2.161 No sixpenny paper contained anything like the news which is supplied by the penny papers of our day | CD Buck, Linguistic Conditions of Chicago 19 No other city in the country contains anything like as many representatives of these groups | Hope Ch 154 unless you behave something like a gentleman. — Cf. below, p. 512.

A similar expression, now extinct, is Defoe R 70 L was nothing near so anxious about my own danger | Sh Wint V. 3.28 Hermione was nothing so aged as this seemes. Cf. also Brontë P 19 young curates who were nothing equal to me for steadiness.

17.383. Nothing as a subjunct is very frequent in the (literary) phrase nothing loth (e.g. Di X 26 nothing loth to go, Thack N 257, Carlyle R 1.88, Haggard S 252, Philips L 51, Mered H 223, Kipl S 212, Grand T 85). As the phrase does not occur in Sh, it is no doubt a reminiscence of Milton PL IX. 1039, where “he (Adam) led her nothing loath” to the nuptial couch—a passage probably better known than most passages in PL.

(Not loth as in Hope R 89 is rare).

17.384. From this phrase, subjunctual nothing has then been extended to, other synonymous expressions, chiefly with participles:
Di N 491 Nothing daunted by this repulse | Di Do 381
nothing checked | Kingsley H 225 He, nothing discomfited,
likened himself to Socrates | Poe 129 nothing discouraged |
Philips L 88 nothing disconcerted | Harraden F 317 nothing
reluctant | ib 328 nothing mollified | Thack H 112 nothing
doubting (also Di Do 192).

17.385. Something as a subjunct to indicate the
degree, where now somewhat is used, was formerly fre­
quent; in Scott it was a literary archaism, and now it is
found in vulgar speech only:

Sh Wiv I. 4.14 he is giuen to prayer; hee is some­
thing peevish that way (and often in Sh; not in Mi) |
Behn 327 he advanced something farther | Congreve 265
the barbarity of it something surprises me | Defoe R 101
I was something chilly | ib 176 | ib 323 till I was some­
thing surpriz’d with the noise of a gun | ib 346 our guide
being something before us | Swift 3.340 another kind of
root very juicy, but something rare | Austen M 199 has
not Miss Crawford a gown something the same | Scott
A 1.209 I am something surprised at it || Shaw D 197 it
cut me off from all my old friends something dreadful |
Ridge S 51 she was using the little girl something cruel |
Caine P 267 ‘e knocks ‘is mother about something cruel.
Here dreadful and cruel are = ‘dreadfully, cruelly’.

In educated speech one may hear: He’s something
like his mother | she wore something the same sort of
dress as before.

17.39. With comparatives, and before too, some­
things and nothing are fairly frequent as subjuncts to indi­
cate the difference:

Di N 429 he was something stouter than his brother |
Di D 335 Grainger, something older than Steerforth |
Holmes A 142 houses built something more than half a
century ago | [Stevenson JHF 63 in something less than
a fortnight he was dead] | Gissing B 135 two cabinets,
something the worse for transportation || Wells N 200 I
was nothing bigger at twenty-seven than at twenty-two ||
Di Do 186 Something too deep for a partner, and much too deep for an adversary, Mr. Carker sat . . .

17.411. Somewhat—a combination of some and the indefinite what OE hwæt, which goes back at least to 1220: AR 398 mid sumhwat elles—was formerly frequent as a neutral pronominal principal, in which function it has now been nearly supplanted by something; in some passages the Shakespeare folio corrects the quarto reading somewhat into something. In the nineteenth c. somewhat is either archaic, as in Carlyle, who prefers it to something, or else vulgar (summat in the last quotation). Examples:

Sh H4B V. 3.83 an old man can do somewhat | Wiv IV. 5.128 here is a letter will say somewhat | Mi PR 1.433 that hath been thy craft, By mixing somewhat true to vent more lyes | Behn 336 he knew somewhat of the business | Fielding T 1.177 Mr. Jones had somewhat about him which . . . | ib 3.48 the religion, together with somewhat else, taught him . . . | ib 3.196, 4.175 | Austen S 171 as if he had somewhat in particular to tell her | Carlyle S 82 thus nevertheless was there realised Somewhat | Merriman S 69 we all carry with us through life somewhat of the scenes through which we passed in childhood | Swinb A 80 Much good and somewhat grievous hast thou said | ib 93 | Shaw 2.116 Gimme a nice book . . . Summat pleasant, just to pass the time.

A somewhat (cf. 8.442 a something) is rare: Fielding T 4.185 she now began to feel a somewhat for Mr. Jones.

17.412. In the combination somewhat of a = 'to some extent a' (cf. above something of a), somewhat is still comparatively frequent; this may depend on the similarity with the subjunctal function mentioned below (17.413):

Di Sk 475 he was somewhat of a favourite with his uncle | Doyle S 2.27 I am somewhat of a fowl fancier | Scott A 242 a walk to Fairport had become somewhat of an adventure with Mr. Oldcastle | Stevenson JHF 19
thia little spirit of temper was somewhat of a relief to Mr. Utterson | Doyle S 4.108 It is somewhat of a liberty.  

**10.413.** As a subjunct of degree, *somewhat* is extremely frequent, often in a depreciatory sense = 'rather too':

Sh Tp III. 1.58 I prattle somewhat too wildly | Mi PL 6.616 for a dance they seemed Somewhat extravagant and wilde | he was somewhat paler than usual | Haggard First 139 somewhat to my astonishment | Dickinson R 56 Such, or somewhat such, is the situation | NP '97 I should do it in somewhat the following fashion | Carpenter C 60 we are in somewhat the position of a mole surveying a railway track.

Thus we see that *something* and *somewhat*, which were originally strictly synonymous, have more and more differentiated, the former being used more and more exclusively as a pronominal principal, and the latter as a subjunct. No *anything* or *nothing* is found.

**17.42.** *Somedeal* (now obsolete) was used as a subjunct very much like *somewhat*:

Sh Tit III. 1.245 To weepe with them that weepe, doth ease some deale | BJo 3.132 he may be somedeal faulty | Stevenson B 115 he is some deal heartened up.

**17.43.** *Aught* (OE *a + wiht*) means the same as 'anything' and is chiefly used as a principal. The spelling *ought* (cf. I. 10.73), which was frequent in 17th and 18th c., has now practically disappeared. It is best known in the phrase *for aught I know* (care), but even there it is obsolescent. 19th c. examples: Austen P 292 Has he deigned to add aught of civility to his ordinary style? | Di Do 276 she is more degraded by his knowledge of her than by aught else | Bennett C 1.96 For aught his father could ever guess he might have been prevented. The word is frequent in Bennett's books in accordance with its employment in North Country dialects.

The personal use is exceptional: Stevenson U 54 nor aught of man's sons escaped from the command.
As a subjunct, 'to any extent, in any respect' aught has never been very common; NED has quotations from 1205 to 1870 (Morris, archaism); it is also found in Mi SA 1420 if aught religion seem concern'd.

Aught or more frequently spelt ought has become a sb in the signification 'cipher, 0', see NED (s. v. cipher): it was said that all Cambridge scholars call the cipher aught; and all Oxford scholars call it nought. This must have arisen through metanalysis: a nought > an aught.

17.441. The corresponding negative naught or nought has largely gone out of use, though found now and then, e.g. in Arnold Bennett's books. Its chief use is as a principal, for instance Sh Mids III. 2.462 Jacke shall hauve Jill, nought shall goe ill | John V. 7.117 Naught shall make vs rue, If England to it selfe do rest but true | to set at naught.

17.442. It was formerly frequent in the predicative, where it meant 'nothing, i.e. of no value, worthless, bad, wicked'. In this use it is by many lexicographers reckoned as an adjective, though an adjunctal use does not seem to occur (in Sh naughty is the corresponding adjunct): Sh H5 I. 2.73 [his title] Though in pure truth it was corrupt and naught | Hml III. 2.157 You are naught | By (NED) the poem will be naught.

17.443. The use of naught (nought) as a subjunct is parallel to that of nothing: Sh Gent III. 1.83 she is nice, and coy, And naught esteemes my aged eloquence. This use was once so extensive that nought in the shortened form not (ME also frequently nat) became the usual negative subjunct and supplanted the weaker ne.

All

17.51. All is used as a principal, as an adjunct, and as a subjunct. As a principal it is used both in the sg and in the pl, but as usual the former is exclusively neuter, and the latter is personal.

Examples of the sg:
All's well that ends well | Sh Merch II. 7.65 All that glisters is not gold | Mcb I. 7.46 I dare do all that may become a man | Mi PL I. 105 What though the field, is lost? All is not lost | Swift 3.219 he made wise observations on all I spoke | Wordsw P 4.385 all else was still | Fox 1.93 the bishop promised all in his power | Shaw C 32 when all was arranged | Phillpotts K 147 All, or anything approaching all, she did not know | after all is said | Is that all?

A neutral *all* is also found in the phrase *and all* = 'and so on, etcetera', as in Sh As IV. 1.117 Then love me. Yes faith will I, fridaes and saterdaies, and all | R2 III. 4.52 the weeds Are pull’d vp, root and all (= roots included) | Scott (NED) With smithy, bellows, tongs, anvil, and all. Cp. also: I hate poetry and painting and all that.

17.52. When *all* is combined with an adjective, it sometimes does not matter which of the two words we consider as the principal and which as the adjunct: *all good* = *all* as principal 'everything' + *good* post-adjunct, or = *all* adjunct + *good* principal (cf. 11.3): Wordsw P 4.133 richly laden with *all good* | Ru C 47 it is with lent money that *all evil* is mainly done.—Cf. also *all this, all that*.

17.53. This neutral *all* very rarely has the definite article before it, as in Sh Sonn 31.14 "thou . . hast *all the all of me"; but frequently a possessive pronoun: Sh Sonn 109.14 thou art *my all* | Sh R3 1. 2.250 On me, whose *all* not equals Edwards moytie | Dryden 5.257 My life! my soul! *my all* that Heaven can give! | Di M 220 We have very little to venture; but it is *our all* | Merri-man S 182 a man who plays for a high stake, must be content to throw *his all* on the table.

Neutral *all* is very frequent with *little*: Fielding 3.508 bring hither *my little all* | Stevenson D 295 *my little all* has perished | Ru C 20 Will you take *this little all* of his
life from your poor brother? | Di D 143 with my little worldly all in a small trunk.

The use of alls as in Fielding (NED) he bid me pack up my alls, is now obsolete, except in Sc.

17.54. Neutral all is frequent in prepositional groups: at all, after all, above all (for all, withal = with all), in all. Sh Hml I. 2.187 Take him for all in all | By DJ 2.189 they were All in all to each other.

A rare variant in Archer A 73 Take it all and all, America is a trying place.

17.55. Examples of the personal all in the plural: Rich and poor, all must die | Sh Cor I. 6.81 A certain number (Though thankes to all) must I select from all | Mill Fox 2.257 All send love to all.

Very rarely with the definite article: Sh Wint V. 1.14 from the all that are (= all those that exist).

17.56. As the principal all is thus both sg and pl, there is a tendency now to avoid it and to use every­thing and everybody respectively. “I came to tell you all” is not clear, therefore it is preferable to say “to tell all of you, everyone of you” or “to tell you everything”, “to tell you all about it.” In Sh Hml III. 2.5 “vse all gently” all would now generally be taken as the pl, and everything would therefore be preferred. Where the AV has “all that I haue is thine” (Luke 15.31), the 20th c. translation has “everything I have is yours.”

17.57. All is extremely frequent as an adjunct in various applications: all England | all women | all night | all the money | all my money | all his friends | Sh Meas IV. 3.109 Ile make all speede | Cowper Gilpin: Up flew the windows all.

17.58. All is very often used as a subjunct. We shall first consider those cases in which we have a trans­ition from the use as a principal to that as a subjunct.

Thus when a neutral all is in apposition with the subject:
Sh Ado III. 2.10 he is all mirth | Mi C 560 I was all eare | Austen P 35 I am all astonishment | Di Do 173 the Major was all politeness | Fox 1.66 a man all nerves | Disraeli (NED) His Royal Highness was all smiles, and his consort all diamonds | Caine E 265 she was all in a tremor.

In “it is all one to me”, “it was all the same to him” (Di X 4) all might perhaps be termed neutral in apposition to it, but in “he will come all the same” it is frankly a subjunct. In the exclamation all right, it is probable that all was originally the subject (neutral), and right the predicative adjective; but it has frequently been taken as containing all as a subjunct to right, as shown in the frequent use of both words together as the predicative: That’s all right, and especially when everything is the subject: Bennett W 1.263 everything will be all right | Ridge G 129 he was all right, and she was all right, and everything was all right. Note also Galsworthy P 4.36 I’m quite all right | Bennett HL 367 You’ll be perfectly all right.

17.59. Subjunctal all is frequent before a comparative with the: Di Do 156 you’d be all the better for it | ib 399 he held her hand all the longer in his own for that suspicion.

Subjunctal all is hyphenated before adjectives in all-important, all-powerful, all-wise, all-pervading; cf. on the other hand the spelling almighty.

All is used as a subjunct before adverbs: I ache all over | all through | all round | all but.

The spelling is now different in altogether, although, almost. In alone and also the original connexion with all has been still more obscured.

Either, etc

17.61. Either and neither are frequent as principals (anaphoric), as in Fielding T 3.162 he was more inclined to eating than to sleeping, and more to drinking than to either | Sh Merch V. 103 The crow doth sing as sweetly
as the lark. When neither is attended | BJo 1.104 neither's friends have cause to be sorry (gen of either Sonn 28.5, Tp I. 2.450).

They are equally frequent as adjuncts: either hand | neither hand.

And finally they are used as subjuncts ('conjunctions, adverbs'): either he or I | neither he nor I | He isn't young. Neither is he handsome = He isn't handsome either.

17.62. Both has the same three functions: Sh Merch I. 1.143 [shafts] by aduenturing both, I oft found both | both my hands | both he and I.

17.63. Every is now only an adjunct, but formerly it was sometimes used as a principal: Caxton R 43 eueriche in his place (ib 54). On every one, everybody, everything, see 17.2 and vol. VII 17.52.

17.64. Each is frequent as a principal: Sh H4B IV. 2.105 Each hurries towards his home and sporting place —and as an adjunct: Sh Hml I. 5.19 [make] each particular hair to stand an end. Cf. also 7.812.

Other

17.71. Other may be treated here on account of its (quasi-)pronominal signification. In OE it had always the 'strong' inflexion, whether as an adjunct or as a principal, whether with or without the definite article. Now it is uninflected as an adjunct, but takes the substantive endings when it is used as a principal: gen sg other's, pl others, gen pl others'.

17.72. As principals we frequently find the other and another used anaphorically both in speaking of persons and of things, as in Sh Ado III. 4.11 my cosin's a fool, and thou art another | Lucr 1162 That mother . . Who hauing two sweet babes, when death takes one, Will slay the other, and be nurse to none. My bodie or my soule which was the dearer? When the one pure, the other made devine.—Rarely without the article: Sh Err IV.
3.86 a ring . . a chaine, Both one and other he denies me now.

In the 'reciprocal pronouns' each other and one another we also have other used as a principal.

17.73. As independent principals both the other and another are frequent in speaking of persons; instead of the latter we rarely find some other: Sh Ado II. 3.161 Benedicke knew of it by some other (now: somebody else; also Shr I. 1.209).

17.74. In this employment the regular genitive is formed:

Sh Sonn 68.11 Making no summer of an others greene | Sh Mids I. 1.140 | Goldsm 641 he has all his happiness in another's keeping | Mrs Browning A 236 to suffer torment for another's sake (cf. ib 264 what you think of Mr. Some-One's book, or Mr. Other's marriage) | Di D 114 the one occasion trod upon the other's heels [now better the heels of the other] | Norris O 146 surprised by the other's outburst | Le Gallienne: in many another's name.—Each other's and one another's are perfectly natural, but instead of this other's one would now prefer this other man's in Sh Mcb IV. 3.80 I should Desire his jewel's and this other's house.

17.75. In the plural, the old ending in OE pā òdre, ME the othere, had disappeared, and in early ModE we thus had the same form other as in the sg. Examples from Ch are to be found B 3344, E 436, F 490, G 21, 512, HF 23 other sayn | Malory 77, 88 (never others) | Caxton R 47 all the other that were there | ib 56. The substantivized pl others begins to appear towards the middle of the 16th c. More U has generally other (94, 155, 157, 172, 192), but some times others (103 the folysshenes of others; 192 both after to and as a genitive pl). Ml T 3103 has other, but 4111 and 4172 others (all these in stage directions); F 483 others, but the 1616 edition has other. Lyly C 284 others, but 294 other. Shakespeare has both forms, though others is far more
common than other, which is found, for instance, Meas III. 2.93, Mob I. 3.14, Cy III. 1.37; cf. also R2 II. 4.12 (where the one is also a kind of plural, though it may be taken = ‘one class . . the other class’) Rich men looke sad, and ruffians dance and leapc, The one in feare, to loose what they enjoy, The other to enjoy by rage and warre. Bacon has others A 19, 37, 45, but other ib 39; cf. Bøgholm B 59 f. The AV seems to have others more frequently than other (Tobit 6.14). Bunyan has generally others, but also other (G 32 many other). Milton has others, with the one exception PL 4.783 these other. (Note that som other PL 3.211 is sg = ‘somebody else’, cf. SA 1302 Some other . . . in his hand). Rehearsal 111 the other. Defoe has other in the pl (R 34, 235, 239, R2 89, G 99) more frequently than others (G 131).

Nowadays others is the only form when no substantive follows; thus the two others = the other two (cf. the obsolete other some 17.112). Before such, others is used contrary to the rule (such is not one of the adjectives that can be placed after their subst.): Spencer A 1.486 cultivated men—professors and others such.

Examples of the genitive plural see 9.56.

17.76. When other is accompanied by a quantitative adjunct, the adjectival character sometimes prevails, so that we find other (before of), where others would be expected:

Di (NED): Mrs. C. dipped certain of the rusks and ate them; while the old woman buttered certain other of the rusks | Gissing G 86 Fadge, and sundry other of his worst enemies | id R 226 in so many other of our good points | Bennett W 2.204 she would not have produced it [the cloth] for the first meal, had she not possessed two other of equal eminence. — Cf. below, p. 512.

Before than we also sometimes find other in the plural: Meredith H 17 the graces of tradesmen’s daughters may be witnessed and admired by other than tradesmen [= by those who are other than t., cf. below 17.78].
17.771. As an independent neuter, the other may be used, especially in the colloquial formula this, that, and the other: Sterne 110 he would do this, and that, and t'other | Ru S 23 fancying they [the words] mean this or that, or the other, of things dear to them | Shaw C 108 reforming this, that, and the other (also Caine C 448, etc.).

Examples of neutral the one, the other: Lowell St 290 Swift never forgot or forgave; Dryden was careless enough to do the one, and large enough to do the other | Hope D 62 you meant that. The other was nonsense | Stevenson JHF 66 it was impossible to do the one without the other.

17.772. No other (but, than) is archaic for nothing else (except): Sh Mcb V. 4.8 We learne no other but the confident Tyrant Keepes still in Dunsinane | Sh Alls III. 6.26 he shall suppose no other but that he is carried | Mcb III. 4.97, Meas. V. 1.60, H4B V. 2.62, Tro II. 3.119 | BJo 3.161 I think no other | Defoe G 72 milk, which is no other than the half digested food | ib 112 all first speaking is mimicry and no other | ib 116 of them no other would be expected | Shelley P 113 the most astonishing combinations of poetry are no other than combinations which the intellect makes of sensations | Carlyle H 125 [Luther:] here stand I: I can no other (translated from German) | Garnett T 12 they know no better, and can no other | Hope R 153 in this remark, he spoke no more and no other than he felt. Cf. the use of no with comparatives 16.8.

Cp. also Carlyle R 1.152 What other could he do now? = the ordinary what else.

17.78. Apart from the combinations the other and no other, it is impossible to use other as a neuter principal except as the object after do and as the predicative after be, in both of which cases it approaches the meaning of otherwise' and might be called a subjunct (compare in some of the examples the parallel use of better):

Carlyle R 2.328 Nor could his private friends do other than mournfully acquiesce | id H 125 had Luther
in that moment done other, it had all been otherwise | McCarthy 2.525 No one undertook to say that there was anything the Government could have done other than what they did | Carpenter L 112 the tragedy which lies before her, and yet which she cannot do other than accept | Hope R 33 thinking that he could have done other and better than in fact he did | Hope In 121 Why give people other than what they want, better than they desire?

Allen W 62 had she been other than she was | Hope Z 69 [no one] imagined that I could be other than the king | Seeley E 80 That we might have been other than we are, nay that we once were other, is inconceivable | Dickinson S 57 history ought to have been other than it was; and we ought to be other than we are | Lang T 73 “In Memoriam” is not to be reckoned inferior to these [Adonais, Lycidas] because its aim and plan are other than theirs.

Note here in the three last quotations that the pl others would give another meaning; other = otherwise, different.

17.79. Other may be taken as the object in Norris P 382 I did not answer other than by taking her hand, and as the predicative in Bookman Nov. 1905. 85 had some trivial action gone other than it did (cf. go wrong, go mad); but in either case it might also be termed a subjunct, as it means the same thing as the adverb otherwise; it undoubtedly is a subjunct in Sh Mcb I. 7.77 Who dares receive it other? NED has not this example, but some others, from 1205, 1628 and again [independently of the old usage?] from 1880, 1883. In many of the examples given in Schmidt’s Sh-Lex. p. 817 other can hardly be called an adverb.

17.8. New section. See below, p. 512.
Index

References are to chapters and sections.

A.

a, an, see Article, indefinite.
-a-, prefix, etc. 14.15ff.
-a, ending 2.61, 2.65.
Abbreviation-words 8.9, 13.8, 15.72.
abducens 2.67.
ab-blaze 14.15.
able, predicative and pre-adjunct 14.14.
able, adjectives in 15.43.
aborigine 5.633.
about to, with infinitives 15.89.
above, adjunct 14.95.
aboveboard 14.67.
asent, principal 11.42.
abundance 4.83, 5.212.
Accusative with infinitive 1.67.
acquaintance 4.95.
act of ... 5.33.
Active 1.64, see also Infinitive.
addle 13.82.
Adjectival endings in substantive adjuncts 13.7.
— pronouns XVI, XVII.
Adjectives, definition 1.31, 1.32, 8.13, 13.8; distinct from sb 8.13; number in 2.22, 2.7; with object 1.62; substantivized IX; with one X; a good man and a true 10.96; as principal XI, pl to denote the whole class 11.41; adjective instead of adverb 12.26; before genitival compounds 12.331; adjective groups 14.2; adj + preposition + object as pre-adjunct 14.23; adjective subjuncts 15.2; adjectives in -en 13.16, in -ed from sb 15.34; place XV; is cannon in cannon ball an adj? XIII. See also Adjuncts.


Adjunct, definition 1.21; number 6.12f., relation between adjunct and principal XII; direct 12.11, 12.17; shifted 12.12, 12.2; partial 12.13, 12.3; compositional 12.14, 12.4; other indirect adjuncts 12.15, 12.5; adjunct to proper name 12.17; substantival adjunct (orig. compound) XIII; difference between adjunctal and predicative forms 14.1; place of adjunct XV, of adjuncts of quantity and number 15.12. Cf. also Adjective, Post-adjunct.

Admirality 8.91
ado 8.72.
Adverb, definition 1.31, 1.32, with object 1.68, 1.86; pronominal adverbs 1.74; plural of adverbs 2.1; adv turned into substantive 8.5; as adjunct 12.27, 14.9; before substantival adjunct 13.5; adverb of degree 15.221; identical with adjective 15.27; adverbial post-adjuncts 15.73 ff.

advice 4.62, 5.34.
-x, pl ending 2.61.
æsthetics 5.775.
afeerd 14.16.
afloat 14.15.
afore-thought 15.41.
aforetime 14.92.
afric 13.87.
after, adverb, preposition, conjunction 1.68, 1.86; pre-adjunct 14.92.
afternoon 8.7; pl 2.49; adjunct 1.81, 14.61.
Age, adj. denoting 9.35.
aghast 14.16.
aglow 14.15.
ago 14.36.
ahigh 14.18.
aide-de-camp, pl 2.56.
air, -s 4.62.
alive 14.15, 14.18.
all 17.5; principal 17.51; my all 17.53; alls 17.53; in prepositional groups 17.54; all in (and) all 17.54; personal 17.55; avoided 17.56; adjunct 17.57; subjunct 17.58; all right 17.58; with comparative 17.59; spelt al in compounds 17.59. — all eyes 6.225.
all-but 12.272.
all-fours 5.15.

almighty 9.22, 15.24, 15.43.
almost 12.272.
alsos 5.62.
alone, lone 14.16, 14.18.
aloof 14.15.
against, loud 14.18.
amends 5.771.
among 7.761; cf. p. 183 note.
analysis, pl 2.66.
anana 5.633.
Anaphoric, defined 10.14; anaphoric one X passim; pronouns 16.231, 16.281, 16.32, etc.
and, subjects connected by 6.51; nice and warm 15.29; and that 16.342.
animalcula 2.653.
Animals, pl unchanged 3.2ff., denoted by substantivized adj 9.75.
anniversary 9.79.
another, see other.
antelope 3.24.
antipodes 2.67; antipod 5.633.
any, principal 17.12; neuter 17.13; adjunct 17.14; before numeral 17.14; with comparatives 17.16; subjunct 17.17; any two 5.166; any . . they 5.56; with pl verb 6.43.
anybody, sb 8.441, and anyone 17.22 ff.
anyone 10.22, 17.22 ff.
anything, sb 8.445, 17.3, with adjective 17.32, idioms 17.342, object or subjunct 17.36, subjunct 17.37 f., anything like 17.38.
a one 10.33, 10.57.
apex 2.67.
Aphorismic Words 14.18.
apocrypha 2.653.
apotopemia 16.22.
apparatus 2.63.
apparent 12.261; place 15.41.
appendix 2.67.
Apposition 15.61, 15.64; nume-
merical disagreement 6.212.
Appositional Compounds 2.33ff.,
7.26ff.
Approximation, plural of 4.5.
apes 2.67.
aquarium 2.651.
arch 13.71f.
archives 4.74.
Arithmetical expressions (three
nines, etc.) 5.14; number of
verb 6.33ff.
armour 5.225.
arms 5.73.
around 14.18.
arra, arry 10.333.
article (of furniture, etc.) 5.3.
Article, definite 16.31, 16.42,
with all 17.53, 17.55, with
generic words 5.43, 5.46,
11.3, 11.4, 11.5.
— indefinite 1.27; with gen-
eric words 5.42; place and
repetition 15.121, 15.17, 15.18;
a not avoided 16.751; a af-
ter no + comparative 16.88;
in some half a dozen 17.154.
as ... a 15.172.
as well as, subjects connected
by 6.54.
ash, -es 4.62, in compounds
7.11.
ash-leafs 8.91.
Asia 4.841.
aside sb 8.55.
aslant 14.15.
asleep 14.15.
asset 5.631.
assize 5.774.
astray 14.18.
western 14.15

at best, last, least, most 11.38;
at that 16.343.
Athens 5.742.
athletics 5.775.
at-home, sb 8.71, pl 2.49.
atlas 2.67.
attention, -s 4.62.
atorney-general, pl 2.41.
Attraction, number of verb
6.72ff.
Attributive, see Adjunct.
aught 17.43.
auto-da-fé, pl 2.56.
antomaton 2.651.
average 13.72.
averse 14.16.
awake 14.15.

B.
back, post-adjunct 15.77.
Back-formation 5.63, 15.33.
bagpipes 5.73.
Bhurhihi, compounds 5.721.
baize 5.751.
ban 4.62.
banditto 2.64.
banns 4.62.
barracks 5.741, in compounds
7.11.
bashed 14.18.
basis 2.66.
Bateke 11.58.
Batungo 11.58.
bearing 4.62.
beastly 15.25.
bear, pl 2.68.
beau 8.92.
being 15.482.
bellows 5.712.
bench 4.841.
beneath 14.95.
best of prose 5.413.
betters 5.724.
between 7.76; p. 183 note; between one and two 6.66.
— -decks 2.49.
bhurrel 3.24.
billiards 4.76, in compounds 7.11.
hillion 3.53.
bitter, -s 4.62, 5.751; bitter (cold) 15.21, 15.26.
biznai 5.633.
black cock 3.33.
black-letter 5.24.
bleeding 15.26.
blind 15.26.
Boanerges 2.67.
bob 3.64.
bodice 5.712.
body, politic, etc. 15.41, 15.54; pron. compounded with 17.2.
bone 3.93.
born (days) 12.54, English born 13.84, post-adjunct 15.482.
boots 5.723.
bosomest 13.71.
both, used of more than two 7.71; genitive 9.55; principal, adjunct, subjunct 17.62.
bottomest 13.71.
brace 3.51.
brain(s) 5.281, 5.752.
bread 5.223.
brackback 14.71.
brack-down, pl 2.43.
brackneck 14.71, 14.74.
brackwater 2.45.
bract-race 2.45.
bred 13.84.
breeches 5.792, in compounds 7.21.
brethren 5.793.
bridal 13.72.
bridle 5.631.
broad awake, open 15.21.
bronchia 2.653.
broth 5.224.
brothers with name 2.39, 5.793.
Brussels 5.742, 7.21.
buffalo 3.24.
bugle 8.92.
burial 5.631.
burning hot 15.21.
business 5.381.
buttocks 5.73.
buttohole 8.92.
button-over 14.751.
buttons 5.723.
bye 8.91.
bygone 14.31.

C.
cake, mass-word and thing-word 5.23.
calm 9.79.
calyx 2.67.
candelabrum 2.651, 2.653.
canon 3.75, in cannon ball 13.11, 13.8.
capital 9.78.
carat 3.65.
cargo 4.841.
carrich 5.633.
cast-away, pl 2.44.
catamount 2.53.
catch-'em-(all)-alive 8.66, 14.73.
caterpillar 5.651.
cat o' mountain, pl 2.53.
cattle 4.812, 4.89.
celestial 15.42.
certain 11.61.
change, sb pl 3.65; vb with obj in pl 4.381.
chay 5.633.
cheap 13.71 f.
cheese 5.222, 5.62.
cherry 5.631.
cherub 2.69.
chess 5.711.
chestnuts 8.91.
cheviots 8.92.
chick, chicken, chickens 5.791.

chief 13.71f.

child, women with 4.35, in compounds 2.36, 7.42.

children in compounds 7.23.

Chinese 5.632, Chinese 11.57.

chints 5.751.

choice 13.71f.

chrysalis 2.67.

church 4.841.

cioatrix 2.67.

Class, sg and pl to denote a whole 4.18, 5.4, adj pl 11.4.

Classical prepositions in pre-adjuncts 14.66.

Clause, definition and division 1.84.

claw 5.633.

clay 8.91.

clergy 4.814, 4.89.

cloth 5.222.

clothes in compounds 7.23.

coach-and-six, pl 2.57.

coal 5.23.

coarse 13.71f.

cock-eye 14.74.

coin 5.23; pl of names of coins 3.64.

Collectives 4.16, 4.8, 4.9, 5.1; "collective plural" 5.4.

colour, -s 4.62, 5.73; adj indicating colour 9.74.

come, to 15.81.

come-by-chance 14.752.

comics 9.78.

Common number 5.5; in adjuncts 6.13.

commonplace 13.72.

commons 5.725. 5.751.

Comparative in speaking of two or more 7.77; with s-plural 9.41, without one 10.92; as principal 11.38; ex-comparatives 14.13.

— (little c. loss) 12.261.
counsel 4.89.
counterpoison 8.71.
countryman (what c.) 12.325.
couple 3.51.
course 4.61, > coarse 13.71.
court 4.84.
court-martial 15.41, pl 2.41.
craft 3.73.
Creed and party, adjectives denoting 9.36.
crisis, pl 2.66.
cross-country 14.18.
Crucified 9.22.
cruel 15.25.
crumb 5.222.
crystal 13.82.
Cumberlandshire 8.91.
curch 5.633.
custom, -s 4.62, in compounds 7.23.
cut-and-thrust 8.26, 14.792.
cute 14.18.
cutthroat 14.74.
cyclop 5.633, -s 2.67.

dace 3.43.
daggers drawn 15.482.
dailies 9.78.
dainty 13.71.
damage, -s 4.62.
damn, sb 8.23.
damp 13.71.
dance 4.61.
danger 5.222.
dare-devil 14.74.
data 2.653.
day out 15.75.
Days of the week 5.442.
deaf, principal 9.23; sub junct 15.26; deads 9.79.
deal (great, good) 5.212.
dear (one) 10.87; post-adjunct 15.45; dears 9.38.
death, -s 4.33.

D.
debt 5.222.
decency, -ies 4.62.
decorum 2.651.
dead 9.79.
deer 3.23.
Definite number 7.8.
demonstrative (proof d.) 15.41.
Demonstrative pron. 16.3, 16.4.
Derivatives, number in 7.5; partial adjuncts with 12.3.
Descriptive substantival group post-adjuncts 15.71.
designate 15.41.
desperate 15.26.
Detached first-words XIII, 13.6, 13.8; as post-adjuncts 15.72.
deuced 15.25.
devil-may-care 14.83.
devilish 15.25.
dhole 3.24.
dice 5.71; in compounds 7.22.
die, sb 5.71.
die-away 14.751.
'Die-Hards' 8.67.
Differentiated plural 4.6.
diggings 5.741.
dilettante 2.64.
dip 8.91.
Direct adjuncts 12.11, 12.17.
disagreeable 9.79.
Diseases, names of, pl and sg 5.282, 5.76.
Distributive phrases 5.132, 5.4; "distributive plural" 5.4.
ditto 10.91.
divers 2.22.
do, to do 15.83.
dog-in-the-manger, pl 2.53.
dogma, pl 2.652.
dogs-ear 7.43.
dog-skin 8.91.
do-nothingness 14.74.
domestic 15.41.
don't-care-ism, don't-carish 14.76.
double 12.57; place 15.121.
subjunct 15.26.
down, sb 8.52.
downhill 14.64.
downstairs 14.64.
dozen 5.11; pl 3.52.
draught, -s 4.62.
drawback 8.68.
dreadful 9.78.
dreadnought 8.63, 14.72.
Dress, substantivized adj denoting 9.77.
dry-as-dust, pl 2.58.
Dual 7.6.
due 15.41.
dug-out, pl 2.44.
Duplex object and duplex subjunct 16.4; number in duplex subjunct 4.36; cf. complex.

double . 12.57; place 15.121; subjunct 15.26.
down, sb 8.52.
downhill 14.64.
downstairs 14.64.
dozen 5.11; pl 3.52.
draught, -s 4.62.
drawback 8.68.
dreadful 9.78.
dreadnought 8.63, 14.72.
Dress, substantivized adj denoting 9.77.
dry-as-dust, pl 2.58.
Dual 7.6.
due 15.41.
dug-out, pl 2.44.
Duplex object and duplex subjunct 16.4; number in duplex subjunct 4.36; cf. complex.

E.
-e, pl ending 2.64.
each, principal and adjunct 17.64; different from every 7.81; repeated by they 5.56; each one 10.22; each man 17.28; each other 7.75, 17.7.
early 12.56.
earth 5.222.
earthenware 5.24.
East India, East Indian 13.86.
eave(s) 5.631.
economics 5.775.
ed, adjectives in 15.34
ego 8.42.
"Egypt Exploration Fund" 13.87.
cider duck 3.33.
either with pl verb 6.44; used of more than two 7.73; either one 10.22; principal, adjunct, subjunct 17.61.
elders 5.724.
elict 15.41.
onber(s) 5.281.
Emphasis causes post-position 15.54.
-en, adj in 13.16; ptc in, as pre-adjuncts 14.11.
encomium 2.551.
enemy, as pl 4.96; be enemies with 6.232.
enough, number 2.75; principal 11.61; place 14.22.
enow 2.75.
ephemeris 2.67.
erwhile 14.92.
errata, erratum 2.651, 2.653.
es, pl in 2.66.
es, words in 5.632, 11.57.
Eskimo 11.58.
etics 5.775.
ever a one 10.333.
evermore 14.92.
every, principal, adjunct 17.63; repeated by they 5.56; every two 5.166; different from each 7.81; two subjects each with every 6.524.
everbody sb 8.441, and every one 17.22ff.; better than all 17.56.
ever man 17.27
every. one 10.22, 17.22ff.
everything, sb 8.444; pronoun 17.3; with adjective 17.32; at the end of an enumeration 17.341, better than all 17.56.
evil 9.6; the Evil (One) 10.85.
Examinations, names of 9.73.
exceeding 15.28.
excessive 15.26.
exchange with obj in pl 4.381.
Ex-comparatives 14.18.
excursion (train) 8.91.
experience 5.222.
extant, place 15.63.
extempore 14.974.
extraordinary, subjunct 15.23;
post-adjunct 15.41f.

Extraposition 1.44.

extreme 15.26.

F.


fair (one) 10.85.

family 4.814.

far 14.961.

distant 14.961.

distant between 14.98, 15.67.

distant-off 14.961.

distantwell 8.21.

far-off 14.961.

distantrow 4.89.

fat (one) 10.84.

fat (one) 10.84.

fat (one) 10.84.

flock (one) 10.85.

feeling 5.222.

feet in compounds 7.23.

distanthe, sb 9.34; post-adjunct 15.41.

form 5.791.

few 2.71; with collectives 4.88.

a few 4.972; the few 11.42;
pal principal 11.61.

file 5.53.

first three or three first 15.122f.

First-words of compounds, number 7.1ff.; pl 7.2; geni-
tival first-words 7.4; detached first-words adjectives? XIII; isolation of 8.93, 13.6.

fish, pl unchanged 3.4; mass-
word 5.223.

five = five-pound note 9.79.

five-leaf 5.722.

Flanders 5.742; in compound 7.21.

Florence, Florentine 13.86.

fly-away 14.751.

fly-by-the-sky 14.752.

distress (one) 4.912.

fool 12.222.

distress, pl 3.62, 3.72; in com-

pounds 7.12 (7.5).

force, -s 4.62.

forceps 2.67; forcep 5.633.

Foreign plurals 2.6.

forget me not 8.65; pl 2.48.

former, principal 11.62.

formula, pl 2.61.

fort and again 8.54.

fortnight 5.172.

Foundling (Hospital) 8.91.

four-in-hand, pl 2.55.

fours, on all 5.15.

forteen 14.11.

fowl, pl 3.31; compounds 3.32;

mass-word 5.223.

Fractions 4.28, 12.59.

French adjectives, plural end-
ing 2.76; place 15.41; French plurals in sb 2.68.

Frequentative verb 6.92f.

fresh 15.32.

friends with 6.231.

fruit 5.23.

fray 4.93.

full 9.79; compounds of 2.42.

funeral 4.76; adj 13.87.

fungus, pl 2.62.

fur 5.633.

furniture 5.32.

future (one) 10.85.

G.

gadabout 8.67.

gallows 5.712; in compounds 7.22; adj 13.72.

game, collective 4.812; adj 13.71f.

Games, names of 8.24.

gardens 5.741.

Gender, adj denoting 9.34.

general, compounds with 2.37;
pal principal 15.41.

Generic singular and plural 5.4.
Genitival compounds, number of first-word 7.4; adjuncts with 12.33; case doubtful 7.27.

Genitive, pl 2.21; of adjectives 9.5 (pl 9.55, neuter 9.9); made possible by one 10.83; isolated as subject 10.98.

genius, pl 2.62.
gentry 5.631.
genus, pl 2.652.

Geographical names, pl 4.45, 4.74 (5.742).

German, sb (9.32) 9.79, 11.58; cousin german 15.41.
giraffe 3.24.
girdle 5.631.
give-and-take 8.26, 14.792.
Gladstone (bag) 8.91.
glanders 5.76.
go-ahead 14.751.
go-between 8.67.
goings-on 2.52.
good(s) 9.6; goods 5.782; in compounds 7.22; good my lord 15.16.
good-for-nothing, pl 2.55.
good-humour 15.151.
good-natured 14.11.
go-to-meeting 14.752.
government 4.841.
grace, -s 4.62.
Grammatical terms, word-order 15.43; cf. Terminology.
grape 5.24.
great 12.241; greats 9.73; in compounds 7.24.
greece 5.711.
Greek plurals 2.6.
Greeks 11.58.
green 9.79.
grey hen 3.33.
gross 3.52.
grounds 5.741.

Group 1.81; group adjuncts 14.2ff., 14.5.
grown, post-adjunct 15.482.
grown-up, pl 2.44.
gum 4.75.

H.

hair 5.23.
half, sb and adj 12.58; place 15.121; half a one 10.332.
Half-pronominal adjectives 1.71; as principals 11.6; cf. XVII.
handful, pl 2.42.
hand-round 14.751.
hang, sb 8.23.
hangdog 8.64; adj 14.74.
hangman 8.64; pl 2.451.
hansom (cab) 8.92.
hard 11.37.
harlotry 4.89.
have to 15.851.
Haymarket (theatre) 8.91.
he, sb 8.41; pronoun 2.23, 16.12; he and his 16.281.
head 3.54.
headlong 14.974.
hear-say 8.66; adj 14.73.
heathen 9.36.
heaven, -s 4.62; . . they 4.842.
Hebrew plurals 2.69.
heir-apparent, pl 2.41.
helix, pl 2.67.
her, sb 8.41; pronoun 2.23, 16.12; he and his 16.281.
hereafter 14.92.
herring 3.43.
here 16.27f.
hide-and-seek 14.792.
him, sb 8.41; pronoun see he.
his 16.27, 16.281.
hither, adjunct 14.95.
hitherto, adjunct 14.92.
ho 5.633.
hog 3.23f.
hold-up 14.751.
holiday 5.774.
Holies 9.79.
home, post-adjunct 15.77.
honour, -s 4.62 ; in compounds 7.23.
hopes 5.39.
hop-skip-and-jump 14.792.
horse 3.71.
horse-power 7.32.
hotel 4.841.
hour 3.61.
house, pl 2.21 ; as collective 4.841.
household 4.841.
how...a 15.171.
howling 15.26.
Human beings in general, adjectives denoting 9.32.
hundred 3.53, 5.11.
hundredweight 3.63.
hustings 5.741.
hypothesis, pl 2.66.

I.
I, sb 8.42 ; pronoun 2.23, 16.12.
i, plural ending 2.62, 2.64.
sible, adjectives in 15.483.
icily cold, icy cold 15.21.
sic, words in, pl and sg 5.775.
ignis fatuus 2.66.
ignorami 2.62.
illex 2.67.
ill 14.973.
ill-off 14.972.
imaginable, place 15.63.
immemorial, place 15.42.
Imperative sentence, as substantive 8.6 ; as adjunct 14.791.
in-between, pl 2.58.
incarnate, place 15.42.
indeed, place 14.22.
Independent, as opposed to anaphoric 10.14.
index, pl 2.67.
Indies 5.18.
indifferent 15.26.
Indirect adjuncts 12.2ff., 12.5.
—object 1.66.
Individualisation of mass- words 5.3.
indoors 14.63.
infantry 4.89.
Infinitive, pre-adjuncts 14.41 ; post-adjuncts 15.8ff. ; active form 15.81ff. ; with passive signification 15.84ff. ; passive form 15.87ff.
inings 5.774.
is 8.53.
Interrogative pronouns 16.5 ; whether 7.741 ; which as different from who and what 7.82 ; with one 10.63.
Intransitive verb 1.63.
invoice 5.711.
iron 5.222 ; adjunct 13.16.
ironclad 9.78.
is 2.66.
Isolation of first-word 8.93, 13.6.
Iterative verb 6.92f.
it is 6.542.
its 16.27.

J.
jackanapes 5.723.
jakes 5.741.
Japan, Japanese 13.86.
jaundice 5.62.
jolly 15.24.
Index.

joust 5.774.
jungle, collective 4.841.

K.
kangaroo, pl 3.24.
kid 8.92.
kin 4.841.
kind, number (those kind of, etc.) 3.81, 3.83, 3.85; kind of, subjunct 3.81.
kindness 5.371.
kindred 4.95; adj 13.82.
knight errant, pl 2.41.
— templar, pl 2.37.
knockdown 14.751.
know-nothing 14.72.

L.
lace 5.24.
lace-up 14.751.
lack-lustre 14.71.
lamb 5.223.
landau 8.92.
Languages, names of 9.72.
last, place 15.122 f., 15.55.
late 14.93.
Latin plurals 2.6; influence on place of adjunct 15.43.
latter, used in speaking of three 7.774 f.; principal 11.62.
laureate, place 15.41.
lazybones 5.721.
leads 5.741.
lean-to 8.68, 14.751.
leash 3.51.
least 11.61.
leave, take our leave(s) 4.323.
lees 5.281.
legislature, collective 4.842.
less, lesser 2.72; principal 11.61; less barbarians 12.274.
letter, -s 4.62; letter patent 2.41.

lettuce 5.711.
level 13.82.
licence 5.62.
life, lives 4.33.
light, -s 4.62.
light o' love, pl 2.55.
lightskirts 5.721.
like, principal 11.44; the like 11.34, 16.43; nothing like 17.381 ff.
likely + infinitive 15.51.
linguistics 5.775.
links 5.741.
little, number 2.72; two significations 5.212; with pl mass-names 5.283; little one 10.84; principal 11.61; place 15.152.
live 14.18.
loaf 5.223.
lock-out, pl 2.43.
lodging(s) 4.74, 5.741.
London, collective 4.842.
lone 14.18.
'longshore 14.64.
look, -s 4.62.
looker-on, pl 2.51.
Lord Chancellor, pl 2.37.
loth 17.383.
loud 14.18.
love, -s 4.62.
lower in Lower Danube 12.56.
lustrum 2.651, 2.653.
luxury 5.382.

M.
mackerel 3.43.
maikhor 3.24.
main adj 13.82; subjunctal 15.26.
Majesty, plural of 4.13.
make-believe (-/) 8.66; adj 14.73.
makeshift 14.73.
amale, place 15.41.
Maltee 5.632.

man, in compounds 2.34f., 7.42; generic 5.41; in pronouns (every man) 17.27f.; with post-adjunct 15.473.

manner (all manner) 3.81f.; manners 4.62; in compounds 7.23.

many 2.73; with collectives 4.88; a many 4.971; one too many 6.211; genitive 9.55; as principal 11.42, 11.61.

mark, pl 3.64.

marquee 5.631.

Marseilles 5.742.

martial, place 15.41.

marvellous 15.23.

mass-words 4.17, 5.2; plural 5.224, 5.28; plant-names as m. 5.25; immaterial m. 5.222, 5.26; generic 5.412; plural made into sg 5.75; not represented by one 10.91; nothing new 17.323.

Master with name, pl 2.38.

mathematics 5.775.

matins 4.76.

matrimonial 15.41.

matrix 2.67.

matter 5.222; matters 5.443; with post-adjunct 15.472.

matter-of-course 13.72.

matter-of-fact 13.72.

me, sb 8.42; pronoun 2.23, 16.12.

means 5.755.

measles 5.76.

medium 2.651.

memorandum, pl 2.651.

memory 4.61.

men, generic 5.441; in compounds 7.23.

men-folk 2.34.

merry 5.631.

mesdames 2.21.

Messieurs, Messrs. 2.21, 2.68.

Metanalysis, numerical 5.6.

metaphysics 5.775.

metropolis, pl 2.66.

mews 5.741.

mice, in compounds 7.23.

middle (one) 10.85.

might-have-been 2.47, 8.8.

mighty 15.24.

mile 3.62.

military, the 4.96; post-adjunct 15.42.

million 3.53, 5.11.


minutiae 2.61.

Miss with name, pl 2.3.

mo (moe) 2.74.

mock 14.78.

moderate(ly) sized 15.34f.

modern built 15.32.

molasses 5.281.

money(s) 5.32.

monstrous 15.23.

month 3.61.

moose 3.24.

moot 13.82.

moral, -s 4.62.

more 2.74; principal 11.61;

more than one 5.52, 6.75;

more .. a 15.175; no more, not more 16.84, 16.87.

Morphology, definition 1.1.

mortal 15.26.

most, principal 11.61.

mouse 3.24.

moustache(s) 4.15.

Mr. with name, pl 2.38.

Mrs. with name, pl 2.38.

much 2.71; with pl mass-
names 5.283: as principal 11.31.

music, musical 13.87.

my 16.21f.; alone 16.22; place 15.14; good my lord 15.16.

N.

naiad 2.67.

Naples 5.742; in compounds 7.21.
narcissus, pl 2.62.
nathelless 16.89.

Nationalities. words denoting 11.5.

naught 17.44; naughty 17.442.
near, adj 14.962.
near-by 14.962.

Negative attracted to other word 16.74f.; see no.

neither with pl verb 6.44, used of more than two 7.73; principal, adjunct, subjunct 17.61.

-ness, concrete pl of words in 5.372.

Neuters, substantivized adjectives 9.6ff.; in adjectives as principals 11.3; neutral this, that 16.34; see anything, etc.

Neutral number 5.51.

never a one 10.333.

now with ptc. 15.31ff.

Newfoundland 8.92.

new-furnish 15.33.

newly with ptc. 15.31ff.

news 5.781; piece of news 5.34.

next, place 15.122f., 15.55.

next-to-nothing 14.62.

nice and warm 15.29.

nickel (coin) 8.91.

night 3.61.

nilghai 3.24.

no origin 16.71; adjunct 16.72;
different from not a 16.73; attracted to sb 16.74; before adj + sb 16.75; no small, little, great 16.752, 16.761; no few 16.77; before numeral 16.781; no good 16.781; no such 16.782; no other 17.772; no otherwise 16.783; combined with sb 16.79; adverb 16.8; in disjunctive questions and clauses 16.821; Doctor or no Doctor 16.824; before comparatives 16.83f.; no more, not more 16.84; no less, not less 16.85; no bigger etc. 16.86; no worse a dauber 16.88; no one 16.66; no two 5.166; no... they 5.56; no... a... 15.174.

no-ball 16.79.

nobody, sb 8.441; pronoun, different from no one 17.22ff.

noise 5.222.

nonce, for the 8.51.

none 16.6; origin 16.61; none effect 16.61; none other 16.61, 16.623; principal 16.62ff.; post-adjunct 16.631; at the end of a sentence 16.632; none such 16.652; and no one, not one 16.66; neuter 16.67; none of 16.68; subjunct 16.69; none the 16.692f.; none too, none so 16.694; for no 16.822; reason or none 16.825. — Number 5.54; verb 6.42.

none-so-pretty, pl 2.58.

non-such 16.652.

Normal plural 4.11, 4.2.

nor, subjects connected by 6.61.

not one 16.66; not any 16.72; not a 16.73; not the less 16.89; (whether) or not
nothing 17.3; with adjective 17.32; nothing much 17.33; idioms 17.342; object or subjunct 17.36; subjunct 17.37f.; nothing like 17.38; loth 17.383; with participles 17.384; comparatives 17.39. — Nothing, sb 8.443.

no thoroughfare 16.79; pl 2.58. nought 17.44.

Noun of multitude 4.86.
noun-substantives 2.33 (15.43).

now, sb 8.58; adjunct 14.91; now and then 2.1; sb 8.58.

Number II—VII; see table of contents, also Singular and Plural. Words indicating number, unchanged pl 3.5; as collectives 4.83.

number, -s 4.62.

Numerals, with collectives 4.89; unified 5.12; + of with singular 5.59; principals 11.61; post-adjuncts 15.44.

Numerical relations, Words with 7.6f.

nuptials 4.76.

-o, pl -i 2.64.
oak 5.222, 5.223, 5.25.
oasis, pl 2.66.
oal(s) 5.281; in compounds 7.11, 7.25.

Object, definition 1.6; of adjectives 1.62; of verbs 1.63; object of result 1.65; direct and indirect 1.66; complex (duplex) 1.67; object of adverbs 1.68.

observanda 2.653.
octopus, pl 2.62.
odds 5.783.
of, ten of him 5.59.
off, pre-adjunct 14.95; post-adjunct 15.77.
off and on 14.95.
off-hand 14.67.
offspring 4.89.
of, often, pre-adjunct 12.271, 14.91.
ofentimes 14.91.
ogrial 3.24.

old, place 15.152; old age 12.47; olden 14.11.
omnibus 2.62, 2.63.
onimipotent 15.43.
-on, pl -a 2.65.

once, principal 8.51; pre-adjunct 14.91; plural 2.1.
one, as prop-word X; before adjunct 10.23; ones 10.34f., 10.42ff. 10.521, 10.53, 10.55, 10.61, 10.63, 10.66, 10.67, 10.82, 10.85, 10.87, 10.95; one + adjective + one 10.36; with possessive pronouns 10.64; with genitive 10.65; with personal pronoun 10.66; with substantive-adjuncts 10.67, 13.4; pronunciation 10.7; one avoided 10.9. — One another 7.75; one or two 5.52, 6.65.
one-time 14.92.
opposite in post-adjuncts 15.69.
or, subjects connected by 6.61.
orchis, pl 2.67.

Order of adjuncts 12.23, 15.11ff.

order, -s 4.62.

Ordinals, substantivized 9.82.
ordinance 4.842.

other, used of more than two 7.722; place 15.13; inflexion 17.71; principal 17.72; genitive 17.74; plural 17.75; other of 17.76; other than
17.76; neuter 17.77f.; no other 17.772; approaches subjunct 17.78, 17.79; other some 17.112.

otherwise 14.98; no 16.783.
ought, pronoun 17.43.
ourselves 4.13.
out, instead of without 14.63; in post-adjuncts 15.73ff.; sb 8.53.
outdoor 14.63.
out-of-work 8.71.
outsides 8.91.
over ... a 15.175.
overall 8.71.
overhead 14.11.
own, principal 11.35; to avoid difficulties in possessives 16.25, 16.29.
oxalis, pl 2.67.
oxen, sg 5.791; in compounds 7.23.

P.
pains 5.754; in compounds 7.22.
pair, pl 3.51; 4.73.
paper 5.222.
parenthesis, pl 2.66.
Parenthetic restriction 14.25.
parish, collective 4.841.
part, -s 4.62.
Part, words indicating 4.83; parts of speech 1 (1.3, etc.), 8.1; names of parts of the body 9.76; parts of words turned into substantives 8.9.
Partial adjuncts 12.3.
Participles, substantivized 9.24; 9.83; word-order 15.48; + adverb as pre-adjunct 14.34; as post-adjunct 15.52; + prep + object 14.35; with subjuncts as pre-adjuncts 14.3; as post-adjuncts 15.52.
passing 15.28.
Passive 1.64; see also Infinitive, Participle.
past, place 15.55; + object as adjunct 14.65.
patent leathers 8.91.
pea 5.631.
peg-away 14.751.
penny pl 2.21; in compounds 7.12, (7.5), 8.93; pence in compounds 7.23; (six)pences 5.171, 8.93.
pennyweight 3.63.
pennyworth 7.31.
people 4.911.
per cent 8.91.
perch, pl 3.43.
Person, in verbs 1.44; attraction 6.74; personal pronouns 16.1; definition of first and second persons plural 4.52ff.
— Adjectives denoting personal relations 9.38.
pert 14.18.
phalange 5.633.
phalanx, pl 2.57.
phenomenon, pl 2.651, 2.653.
philistims 2.69.
phonetics 5.775.
Phrase, definition 1.87; pl of phrase compounds 2.47f.; phrases turned into substantives 8.8 (8.6f.); 14.7.
physic, -s 4.62, 5.775.
Physical and psychical characteristics, adjectives denoting 9.37.
pickrel 3.43.
pick-me-up 8.65; pl 2.46.
pick-pocket and similar compounds 8.6.
pick-up 14.751.
piece (of furniture, of advice, etc.) 5.3.
pike 8.92.
pile 3.54.
pincers 5.73.
pities 5.39.
Place-names, pl 4.74, 5.742; in compounds 7.21.
plaguy 15.25.
plains in compounds 7.24.
Plant-names, as mass-words 5.25; from adjectives 9.75.
pleb 5.633.
plenty 4.83, 5.212.
plover, pl 3.33.
Plural, forms II; unchanged III; meaning of IV; normal plural 4.11, 4.2; plural of approximation 4.12, 4.5; plural of social inequality 4.13; differentiated 4.14, 4.6; composite objects 4.15, 4.7; collectives 4.16, 4.8, 4.9, 5.1; mass-words 4.17, 5.2; whole class 4.18, 5.4; common number 4.19, 5.5. — Pl or sg of a word with two adjuncts 4.22ff.; characteristic of several individuals 4.3; of reciprocity 4.38. — Pl used as sg 5.7; raised to the second power 5.131, 5.167, 5.793.
Poetry, post-adjuncts in 15.45.
police 4.89.
politic, adj place 15.41; politics 5.775.
poll 3.54.
pollard 13.82.
porridge 5.224.
portmanteau, pl 2.68.
nouns as principals XVI, XVII; relations between adjunct and p. XII.

private 15.41.

prodigious 15.23.

Pronominal adverbs 1.74; pl 2.1; as substantives or principals 8.12, 8.5; as adjuncts 14.9.

Pronoun, definition 1.71; pl forms 2.23, 2.8; as quotation-substantives 8.22; as substantives 8.4; as adjunct to first-word 12.325; place 15.14. — Functions XVI, XVII: personal 16.1; possessive 16.2; demonstrative 16.3f.; interrogative and relative 16.5; other pronouns 16.6—17.

proof 13.82.

proper, post-adjunct 15.46.

Proper names 1.25; pl 4.4; as adjuncts 13.85; adj with 12.17.

Prop-word one X.

public, collective 4.842; adj 15.41.

pudding 5.222.

pure, adjective-subjunct 15.24.

purple, adj 13.71.

Q.

quality, collective 4.841.

quantifiers 2.7, 5.212, 15.121 (11.61).

quarter, -s 4.62, 5.741.

Quarterly (Review) 4.841.

Quaternary words 1.21.

quick 11.36.

quid 3.64.

Quinary words 1.21.

quince 5.711.

quire 3.52.

quits 6.233.

Quotation words 8.2; pl 2.48; adjuncts 14.8.

R.

radius, pl 2.62.

ramson 5.791.

rare 15.23.

reach-me-down 8.65; pl 2.46.

ready 11.37.

real 15.25.

ream 3.52.

Reciprocity, pl of 4.38.

regard, -s 4.62.

regnant 15.41.

Relations between adjunct and principal XII.

Relative pronouns 16.5; with collectives 4.85; number of verb in rel. clause 6.77.

respect, -s 4.62.

return, -s 4.62; = return ticket 8.91.

reverse in post-adjuncts 15.69.

rhinoceros, pl 2.67.

Rhythm 14.19.

riches 5.62.

rackets 5.76.

riddle 5.631.

rifle 8.92.

right (one) 10.84.

Rockies 9.79.

roll-down 14.751.

round, around 14.18; round ocean 14.963.

roundabout 14.963.

row 5.633.

royal, place 15.41.

rubbers 8.92.

runaway, sb 8.67; pl 2.44; adj. 14.751.

running, place 15.482.

S.

-s in verbs with pl subject 2.242.
sail 3.76.
sailor (hat) 8.91.
sake, both our sakes 4.324.
Salic, place 15.41.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
salmon 3.43.
salt, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
sambhur, pl 3.24.
same 11.34.
sand, -s 4.62.
sarcophagus, pl 2.62.
sash 5.631.
snowy white 15.21.
so + adj + a 10.332, 15.172.
sobersides 5.721.
Social position, adjectives denoting 9.33; plural of social inequality 4.13.
socialist, socialistic 13.56.
soda 8.92.
solo, pl 2.64.
Solomons 5.742, 8.91.
some 17.1; as principal 17.11; neuter 17.13; adjunct 17.14; before numeral 17.14; indicates approximation 17.15; some half a 17.154; subjunct 17.17.
somebody, sb 8.441; ... they 5.56; and some one 17.22ff.
someday 17.42.
someone 17.22ff.; someones 17.25.
something 17.3; with adjective 17.32; instead of a forgotten name 17.341; something of 17.35; like 17.382; = somewhat 17.385; with comparative 17.39. — Substantive 8.442; something else 2.58.
sometime(s), adjunct 14.92.
somewhat 17.41; principal 17.411; of 17.412; subjunct 17.413.
son-in-law, pl 2.53.
soon 12.271.
soprano, pl 2.64.
sorrow 5.222.
sort 3.81, 3.84, 3.85.
so-so 14.974.
sound (one) 10.85.
soup 5.224.
species 5.633; species pl 2.66.
specimen, pl 2.652.
spectacle, -s 4.62.
spendthrift 14.71.
spirit, -s 4.62; in compounds 7.23.
spiritual, place 15.41.
spoken with adjective and adverb 15.36.
square 13.71f.
squaretoes 5.721.
stables 5.741.
stage 8.91.
stair 4.74; in compounds 7.21.
stamen 2.652; stamina 2.653.
stand of arms 3.54.
stand-off 14.751.
stand-offish 14.76.
stand-up 14.751.
stark 15.26.
start-up 8.67.
statistics 5.775.
stay-at-home, sb 8.67; adj 14.752f.
stews 5.741.
stickle 5.631.
stimulus, pl 2.62.
stone, pl 3.63.
stone's throw, pl 7.44.
straightforward 14.942.
stranger 12.222.
strata 2.653.
straw (hat) 8.91.
stray 14.18.
Stress in compounds 12.41, 13.22, 14.11.
stripes 5.723.
Studies, names of 9.73.
Subject, definition 1.43; and predicative of different numbers 6.71.
Substances, adjectives denoting 9.74.

Jespersen, Modern English Grammar. II.
Spry INDEX.

Substantive, definition 1.31; pl 2.2—2.6, III—V, VII; criteria 8.11; distinct from principal 8.12; from adjectives 8.13; substantives proper 8.15; from verbs 8.16; quotations 8.2; adjectives substantivized IX; pronouns substantivized 8.4; adverbs substantivized 8.5; verb-phrases 8.6; pl 2.43ff.; prepositional groups 8.7, 2.49, 2.53; phrases 8.8, pl 2.47. —Substantival adjuncts XIII, groups as adjuncts 14.51, 14.53.

Substitutive plural 2.21f.
such 2.22; principal 11.62, 16.45; such a one 10.331; such a 15.172.
sudden 11.36.
summon(s) 5.634.
superficies, pl 2.66.
Superlatives, in speaking of two or more 7.77; substantivized 9.42, 9.81; without one 10.931; as principal 11.38; post-adjunct 15.68.
sweepstakes 2.452.
swine 3.23.
Syntax, definition 1.1.

tactics 5.775.
talent 5.222.
tales 5.726.
talk 5.222.
teal, pl 3.33.
teas 4.61.
teens 4.77; in compounds 7.11.
teeth in compounds 7.32.
tell-tale 14.71.
temporal, place 15.41.
Terminology, questions of grammatical, I passim, 3.21, 4.11—4.17, 4.4, 4.45, 4.81ff., 5.131, 5.211—5.226, 5.4, 5.5f., 5.61, 6.9, 7.11, 7.6, 8.11, 8.12, 8.16, 8.21, 10.14, 10.86, 11.12, 12.11—12.15, 13.11—13.15, 13.8, 14.78, 15.121, 15.21, 15.4, 15.61.
terminal, pl 2.62.
terrible 15.25.
Tertiary words 1.21; cf. Subjuncts.
-th in verbs with plural subject 2.242.
thanks 5.772.
that, pl 2.23; that one 10.61; indicates neuter 11.39, 16.34; see especially 16.31ff.; used of persons 16.33; that that 16.353; = something 16.355; that what 16.355; that much 16.39; subjunct 16.395.
the subjunct 16.42; the like 16.43, 11.34; the = the typical 6.224; the + adj + one 10.41; the one 10.51.
thee 2.8; sb 8.42.
their, theirn, theirs 16.261.
them, adjunct 2.22, 16.13.
thesma, pl 2.652.
then, adjunct 14.91.
there is with pl subject 6.81f.
these 16.3ff.; = these persons 16.373; with collectives 4.87.
thesis, pl 2.66
these 4.75.
they, referring to sg pronoun 5.56; they are (cf. it is) 6.241.
thick-lips 5.721.
thief in compounds 7.42.
thine 16.21.
thing, to express the neuter 10.99; in Scotch 10.91; things (indefinite) 5.443;
with post-adjunct 15.471; in pronouns 17.3.

**Thing-words** 5.2; esp. 5.222, 10.91.

dish, pl 2.23; with pl words 5.16; this one 10.62; see especially 16.31ff.; used of persons 16.33; neutral 16.341, 16.36; adjunct 16.38; this much 16.391f.

thorough 12.273.

those 2.23; with collectives 4.87; see especially 16.31ff.; = some 16.372.

thou 2.8; sb 8.42.

thousand 3.53, 5.11.

thundering 15.26.

thy 16.21.

tidings 5.773.

tight-fitting 15.21.

time, mass-word and thing-word 5.222.

tin, mass-word and thing-word 5.222.

tire 3.54.

**Titles** 2.37ff.; of books, sg or pl 6.32.

to-day, sb 8.71.

to-do, sb 8.72; to do 15.83.

toilet tidy 9.79.

tolerable 15.26.

to-morrow, sb 8.71.

ton 3.63.

to-night, sb 8.71.

too + adj + a 10.332, 15.173.

tooth in compounds 7.23 (7.5).

toppest 13.71.

tops 8.91.

total, place 15.42.

touch-and-go 14.792.

trace 5.711.

**Transitive verb** 1.63.

**tricky** 7.5.

**Trinity (College)** 8.91.

troop 4.92.
utmost 12.243.
utter 12.243.

V.

vapour, -s 4.62.
vase, pl 2.652.
vaults 5.741.
Verb, definition 1.4; transitive and intransitive 1.63ff.; forms of plural 2.24; concord 6.3ff.; verb + object as sb 8.6; pl 2.45; as adjunct 14.7; verba pluralia tantum 6.91.
Verbal Idea, pl of 6.9.
Verbal-substantive 12.28.
Verboid, definition 1.42.
vermin 4.812.
verse 5.26.
very 15.222.
victual(s) 5.281.
village, collective 4.841.
virtuoso, pl 2.64.
visible, place 15.63.
vocative 15.16, 15.45, 16.24.
vortex, pl 2.67.

W.
wage(s) 5.753.
ware 5.24.
-ward and -wards 14.942.
warp 3.51.
water, -s 4.62.
water-colour 8.92.
wayward 14.18.
we, definition 4.52—4.54; sg (ourselves) 4.13; we 'uns 10.66.
wean 10.7.
week 3.61.
weird 13.71f.
well, pre-adjunct 14.971.
well-off 14.972.
West India in compounds 7.41.
what, pl 6.12, 6.243, 6.45; different from which 7.821; principal, adjunct, subjunct 16.52; with or without a in exclamations 5.213; what one 7.824, 10.63; what a one 10.332; what ... a 15.175; what indicates neuter 11.39.
whattin 16.52.
what-not, pl 2.58.
wheat ear 5.633.
whereabouts 5.784.
where's with pl subject 6.83.
whether 7.74.
which, common number 5.54; pl 6.45; different from who and which 7.821; = old whether 7.744; which one 10.63; principal, adjunct 16.53.
whilom 14.92.
whisker 4.75.
whisky-and-soda, pl 2.57.
who, common number 5.54; pl 6.45; different from which 7.821; used of two 7.744; principal 16.51.
whose 7.823.
wide awake, open 15.21.
wife in compounds 7.42.
wild duck 3.33.
will-o'-the-wisp, pl 2.53.
wit, -s 4.62.
with, subjects connected by 6.53; = having 15.823, 15.852.
witness 6.223.
woman, generic 5.41; in compounds 2.34, 7.23, 7.42.
women-folk 2.34.
women-kind 2.34.
womanly 15.23.
wood, mass-word and thing-word 5.223.
woodsy 7.5.
word 3.91.

Word groups 1.8.

Word-order: something great, some great thing 5.213, 17.32; one before adjunct 10.23ff., 10.43, 10.51ff.; a good man and a true 10.96; yours is a long life 10.98; two adjuncts 12.23, 12.313, 15.1ff., 15.54; double 12.57; half 12.58, 15.121; substantial adjuncts 12.33ff., 13.61; adjectival groups 14.21; enough 14.22; indeed 14.22; participial groups 14.3, 15.52; infinitive 14.4, 15.8; other group-adjuncts 14.5; prep. with object as pre-adjunct 14.6; verb with object ditto 14.7; two first, first two 15.122ff.; old, young 15.152; good my lord 15.16; how (so, too ...) great a 15.17; post-adjuncts 15.4ff.; no man living 15.473; proper 15.46; present 15.62; lady mine 16.24; none 16.63; a not 16.751; no worse a name 16.88.

Words referring to two 7.7; to definite number 7.8.

work, -s 4.62, 5.741; in compounds 7.23.

world, collective 4.841.

worsteds 8.91.

worth ten of him 5.59.

worth while 14.65.

would-be 14.77.

writing, -s 4.62.

Y.

Yankee 5.632.

ye 2.8.

year 3.61; three-year-old 7.15.

yoke 3.51.

yon, yond, yonder 16.41.

you 2.8; you all, you together 2.88; you folks, people, etc. 2.87; you was, you were 2.89; meaning of plural 4.52; you 'uns 10.66.

young, place 15.152; young ones Appendix 10.84.

your, yourn, yours 16.26—

16.29.

yourself, yourselves 2.86.

youth 4.94.

Appendix

Chapter I

Introductory

The whole theory of grammatical system and nomenclature has been taken up in a much fuller form in my book “The Philosophy of Grammar” (London 1924, George Allen & Unwin; here abbreviated PG), to which the reader
is referred, as well as to the article "Die grammatischen Rangstufen" in Englische Studien 60, 300 ff., in which I have defended my system of the three ranks against Otto Funke's criticism. Instead of the term principal I now always use the word primary, chiefly in order to avoid conflicts with the usual term "principal clause" (cf. 1.85). The expression p. 5 line 3 that "the distinction between primary, secondary, and tertiary is purely logical" is not correct: the distinction is one of "function" and not of "notion": see on the meaning of these terms PG ch. II and especially p. 56 ff. The distinction between substantives, adjectives, and adverbs concerns words, independently of their connexion with other words, while the distinction between primaries, secondaries, and ter­tiaries has regard to the employment of words (or groups of words) in their relation to other words in the same sentence. — Cf. also JEGPh 35.461 ff. (1936).

1.43. I should not now say that a verb is connected with its subject as "a kind of adjunct": the important distinction between junction and nexus (PG 108 ff.) was not clear to me in 1913. What characterizes complex objects, as I termed them in 1.67 (duplex objects 15:4), is that the two parts together form a nexus; therefore I now prefer the term nexus objects.

The references in 1.65 and 1.67 to chapters which did not find their place in vol II should be deleted. These matters have been treated in vol. III.

Chapter II
Number

2.34. Bennett C §1.189 her own menkind.—Further examples of the rare unchanged man and woman: Carlyle
FR 591 man-midwives | Lawrence L 27 Outlaws have often the finest woman-mates | James Talks 227 girl-students and woman teachers.


2.38. Trollope B 374 the Misses Lookaloft, as they call themselves | ib 386 the Miss Lookalofts | Stephen L 187 I should not have met the Miss Thackerays (or should I say the Misses Thackeray, or how the deuce do you put it?). This illustrates the vacillation. It is hardly necessary to state expressly that this section deals only with the plural of a whole group, and that the form Misses is of course required before different names: the Misses Mary and Ann Brown | the Misses Brown and Green—if one does not prefer to put Miss before each name separately.

2.41. Burke Am 44 all solicitors-general | Huxley L 1.24 Directors-General—but NP '19 other postmaster generals.—Spencer First P 377 sum-totals.—Wells War 88 the greed of the Napoleons and Fredericks the Great.

2.42. The rule is: -fuls in the more, and -s-full in the less familiar compounds. Additional examples: car: Bennett Helen 50 two electric cars-full of people (the adj. makes it difficult to inflect carfuls).
hand: two exceptional forms: Walton A 237 two handful of Marygolds | Wells TB 1.243 they gave handsful away.
hospital: Brontë V 195 women who have nursed hospitals-full of unfortunates.
sack: Kipl DW 8 sackfuls.

2.43. Add:
get-ups Lewis B 155.
holdfasts Troll Aut 268.
knockouts London V 79.
makes-up Keats 4.31.
pull-overs.

2.4. left-overs Lewis MS 73 (leavings from meal).

2.4⁵¹. Add: Walp RH 74 the steal-a-pennies.

2.4⁵². Singular: Hay B 139 the shake-hands was disposed of. Plural: Di P 325 (Sam Weller:) a couple o' Sawbones | Walpole OL 211 when she came to a cross-roads ... The cross-roads were there.


2.5⁵. Hardy R 32 Fifth-of-Novembers ought to be kept up by night.

2.6. Many mistakes in classical plurals in colloquial American noted by Louise Pound and Mencken, see the latter's AL.⁴[p. 412.

2.6¹. Lamb E 1.19 their Alma Maters | wireless antennae.

2.6². Walpole RH 71 two octopi (Gr. -ous treated as if Lat. -us) | Galsw Ca 665 rhinoceri | Mackenzie S 1.234 succubi.


2.6⁵². stigmata (Bennett T 38, Gosse P 10).

2.6⁵³. Wells TB 1.166 these apologia (Gr. sg taken as pl).


2.6⁹. Curme CG distinguishes cherubs darlings, cherubim angels, seraphs sweet singers, seraphim angels. This, however, is not generally recognized.

Add fellaheen (Arabic) by the side of fellahs. Ski (Norw. pl) by the side of skis.

2.7. The pl idea is shown in Gay BP 109 many a lady of quality have servants of this sort.

2.8. yez as Irish pl Tennyson 556, Birmingham Regan 157.
Chapter III

The Unchanged Plural

3.1. Add: (5) the tendency to use foreign words without any inflexion, see examples in 3.24 and some of those in 3.34 and 3.44, cash below 3.64 (and carat 3.65?), and compare 11.58.

3.2. Add: Wells Ma 2.185 six caribou London V 319 herds of elk | ib 474 two bear . . . herds of elk | Kipl J 1.4 our buck are like his fat bullocks. Note the quotation from Sir Charles Eliot on the pl of rhinoceros in GS § 141.

3.3. Cf. Galsw IPh 227 (and elsewhere) These green-fly get in everywhere. (Plant-lice, thus not exactly birds, but I find no other place to mention them.)

3.4. The second proverb is found in the form “Fish is cast away that is cast in drye pooles” in Eastw. Hoe 489. The distinction between fish sg as mass-word (food) and pl (individually) is seen in Cowper L 1.27 “One to whom fish is so welcome as it is to me, can have no great occasion to distinguish the sorts. In general, therefore, whatever fish are like to think a jaunt into the country agreeable, will be sure to find me ready to receive them; butts, plaice, flounder, or any other. If herrings are yet to be had . . . they will be welcome too.”—Walton A has fish and fishes, salmon, but not, I think, any other unchanged plurals: trouts, minnows, pikes, loaches.—Kipl P 33 and 39 trouts.

3.5. Walpole OL 12 three pair of stairs were a great number for an old lady. In that combination probably always pair, not pairs.

Add: team ‘set of (two or more) draught animals’, pl rarely unchanged after numerals. NED.

3.5. Other 18th c. quotations for the pl dozen Gay BP 8 and 13.

3.5. Burke Am 38, two million of men; but ib 56 two millions six hundred thousand pounds.
Scott OM 161 ten file.

3.54. Carlyle FR 170 eight-and-twenty thousand stand of muskets.


3.63. Add: Carlyle FR 168 five thousand-weight of gunpowder.

Tun, ton. Correct: Tun (measure of capacity) and ton (measure of weight and of capacity, esp. for ships), originally the same word, both pronounced [tʌn], pl now generally -s . . .

3.64. The pl shillin’ is found as a vulgarism in Shaw 1.33 and Galsw MP 30; Masefield W 37 his weekly five and twenty shilling.—Cash (Tamil kasu) is used in the East for a small coin: Maugham PV 141 we give them a few cash for every child.

3.65. The pl carat may originate in the adjunct employment: eighteen carat gold. Bennett RS 86 What carat is it [a ring]? Eighteen. | ib 92 a very good ring . . . Harder. Nine carat.

Walton A 197 eight or ten load at a time.

3.63. After such: Defoe M 56 for such kind of gentlemen.

3.64. Kennedy CN 159 She took it as one of the sort of things that Jacob was liable to say, the sort of thing that so palpably upset Uncle Robert.—MacGill Ch 53 three rough-looking, angry sort of men.

Chapter IV

The Meaning of Singular and Plural

4.1. Add: Note especially the loose use of numbers in 5.57.
4.24. Macaulay H 1.25 The gulph of a great revolution completely separates the new from the old system | ib 30 the limits of legislative, executive, and judicial power | Wells OH 319 With each invasion first this and then that section of the Semitic peoples comes into history || Walton A 152 the he and she frog are observed to use divers simber salts.

4.26. Bennett C 1.236 The eldest and the youngest child of the family sat at the piano in the act of performing a duet.

4.321. Sh Alls I. 3.169 were you both our mothers [i. e. the mother of us both].

4.33. Collins W 448 We each keep our opinion.

4.35. The sg is the rule when the definite article, and not a possessive pronoun, is used: Stevenson T 44 they were all in the saddle | Maxwell EG 265 almost slapping them on the back.—Note further Oppenheim People’s Man 124 There are any number of girls, I’m sure, who’d be proud to be your wife (wives would imply bigamy!).—Note the difference in Mason R 165 It is only in the wisdom of middle age that we lose heart. In youth we lose our hearts—a very different thing.

4.62. argument: Bennett C 1.109 a man who had his way by force and scarcely ever by argument [i. e. arguing]; a man whose arguments for or against a given course were simply pitiable.

letter; letters often of a single epistle (cp. Latin) in Sh, e.g. Lr I. 5.1.

society: Huxley L 1.250 having utterly renounced societies [i. e. meetings of learned societies] and society since October | ib 1.324 the plan for uniting the Societies which occupy themselves with man (that excludes “Society” which occupies itself chiefly with woman).

4.72. balance ‘apparatus for weighing’ AV Rev 6.5 a pair of balances = Rev. Version 1881 a balance. The pl was sometimes balance. (Partly due to final -s, -ce, partly
to confusion of sense) NED, which quotes Sh Merch IV. 1.255. Are there balance heere to weigh the flesh?

4.76. Massinger N IV. 1.187 such a divellish matins.

4.87. NP '26 We clergy come into contact with young people | Galsw WM 124 most of those big counsel.

4.88. Swift UL 122 I keep the fewest Company of any man in this town | Thomson Spencer 266 many unprotected offspring, or a few carefully protected by the parent.—Cf. also Kaye Smith HA 85 there are certain clergy who would willingly perform the ceremony.

4.89. Carlyle FR 153 Forty-eight Noblesse, D'Orleans among them, have now gone over to the Commons | Di F 875 I want the room cleared of these two scum | Huxley L 2.47 five womenkind | Wells A 209 a dozen Irish militia were gathered | Carpenter Ad 72 we have a skipper and four crew | Mackenzie C 96 she turned up with both her offspring.

4.96. Gay BP 152 I my self saw the enemy putting themselves in order of battle | NP '17 It is only our friends the enemy who are satisfied with themselves.

4.972. Examples of vg or slang a few = 'a little'. Huxley L 1.232 It's a horrid nuisance and I have sworn a few | OHenry RS 119 we mined some and gambled a few.

Chapter V
Meaning of Number. Continued

5.161. A curious use (which = the number of which) is found in Defoe R 2.99 tho' all the savages that were landed, which was near fifty, were to attack them | ib 125 all the children they had, which was near 20 in all. Somewhat differently Fielding 7.331 my mother was a most indulgent mistress to one servant, which was all we kept.

5.162. end. Similarly a long two hours is different
from two long hours.—Collins W 144 a good three thousand a year [= rather more than].

5.183. Fielding 1.427 I shall save many a twenty guineas.

5.185. An early example is Ch R 991 Contrarie to that other fyve (translates: contraire as autres cinq floiches).

5.171. Shaw Ms 177 Well, it was two forty shillingses [i.e. fines of 40/].

5.172. Pl: Carlyle FR 415 two irrevocable Twelve-months.

5.18. Wells OH 562 Why was not the stars and stripes waving over Mexico? (= the American flag).

5.212. The obsolete use of a great deal with pl is also seen in Sh Alls III. 6.99 a great deale of discoveries. Cp. Brontë J 171 a deal of people are for trusting all to Providence | Galsw MP 241 a deal of mortals.

5.23. Stevenson T 177 I filled both pockets of my coat with biscuit ... These biscuits ... would keep me from starving. This use of biscuit is common.

5.25. Cowper L 1.425 a bed of mignonette ... and a hedge of honeysuckles, roses, and jasmine; and I will make you a bouquet of myrtle | Galsw IC 273 a narrow strip of garden-bed full of mignonette and pansies.

5.26. Gibson Dipl. Diary 212 the two ladies, who have good nerve, and don't turn a hair at being arrested | he has plenty of nerve.

5.27. Galsw Ca 204 [the tree] was covered with young blossoms, pink and white ... and on all this blossom and these leaves the sunlight glistened | Cowper L 1.108 [myrtles] were sure to lose their leaf in winter.

5.281. Carlyle FR 50 [Man's] appetite for sweet victual is so enormous | Kipl K 50 to buy us victual in the bazar.—F. N. Scott's article on Verbal Taboos is reprinted in "The Standard of American Speech" 1926, see on victuals p. 185.

Oats: Galsw Rub 36 as a young man he had sown many a wild oat | Wells JP 178 sow their wild oats ... her One Wild Oat!
5.2. Swift J 295 there was too much victuals (cf. ib 324 herrings . . . they are a light victuals) | ib 369 the Duke is not in much hopes | Fielding 4.519 the little clothes he had on | Walp GM 90 a drawing-room that had witnessed so much good manners.

Cakes and ale in the Schreiner quotation is from Sh Tw II. 3.125 and forms one idea.

5.4. (5) A better example: the English are fond of outdoor sports. In this section a reference should be made to the use in relative clauses of the generic sg and pl: who touches pitch = he that touches pitch = they that touch pitch, see vol. III ch. III; and also to the loose use in 5.57, see below.

5.4.11. Shelley 67 Can man be free if woman is a slave? | Wells OH 499 Napoleon had a vast contempt for man in general and men in particular.

5.4.41. Note the numbers in Mitford OV 219 But then geese are a domestic fowl.

Men = all mankind (both sexes) is often found in the AV, e. g. Gen. 4.26, 6.1, Deut 32.26 (Moore Smith):

5.4.42. Walp C 176 Everything seemed to happen in Polchester on Sundays. For one thing more talking was done on Sunday than on all the other days of the week together . . . The rule on Sundays was that the maid knocked at half-past six on the door. Thurston Ant 247 never to do business on Sunday . . . I conduct no business on Sundays | Cowper L 1.372 I write generally three hours in a morning, and in an evening I translate | Bennett RS 1 a suit, which must have been carefully folded at nights | ib 137 If I'm to go through my work Monday mornings I can't waste my time getting my tea.

5.4.5. The rule as given is too narrow, for the Jews, the Danes, the Russells and similar names of nations or families are used generically with the definite article.

5.5.2. Lewis B 124 They [families] had but two, one
or no children.—Sh Tit V. 3.17 What, hath the firmament more suns than one?

5.5. AV Phil 2.3 Let each esteeme other better then themselves (20th C. Version: each of you should humbly reckon the others to be of more account than himself).

Swift 3.180 if there be any body below, let them speak.
—Defoe Pl 161 The people have good reason to keep anybody off that they are not satisfied are sound: here the pl are is occasioned by the distance; Defoe would probably have written “anybody that is sound” without the intervening words.

Fielding 1.385 That no one can abuse, unless they love him | Kennedy CN 248 a person must do what they think right, mustn’t they?

A different consequence of the identity in meaning of every one and all is seen in Walp RH 85 Every one was splitting up into little groups.

5.5. Further examples of looseness in the use of pl, sometimes caused by the generic meaning (cf. also 6.222 first ex.): Stevenson M 123 I have no objection to a deathbed repentance—Because you disbelieve their efficacy | Walp C 272 What do you take when you have a headache? I don’t think I ever have them | Galsw Ca 155 he had all a Briton’s deep-rooted distrust of the foreigner. He felt that they were not quite safe | ib 170 As for a doctor—that would be sinful waste, and besides, what use were they except to tell you what you knew? | id P 12.13 He hardly ever quite finishes a word, seeming to snap off their tails | Bennett LR 327 she’ll explain everything to you. They always do [they = women of her class] | ib 384 The state she’s in, you know—they have to be handled with care [they = pregnant women] || Swift 3.376 from whence they concluded I was not a native of the place, who all go naked | Defoe M 264 it was the easiest thing in the world for him to manage the captain of a ship, who were, generally speaking, men of good-humour | ib 170 I saw . . . on the
table a silver tankard, things much in use in public-houses at that time | ib 270 She brought with her a sea-chest—that is, a chest, such as are made for seamen.

5.5. The pl is rare: Butler W 5 his father was worth a hundred of George Pontifexes.

5.6. Shelley uses pulse as a pl, e. g. 456 The crimson pulse of living morning quiver.

Laches (from OF lascesse sg) as a pl Butler W 189 one of the most serious laches of his life | ib 282 many smaller laches.

5.631. NED takes succour as from ME sucurs, OF sucurs with subtraction of -s apprehended as the pl suffix; but isn’t it rather formed on the verb succour? Cf. summon 5.634.

5.721. Sh H4A II. 2.33 ye fat guttes [Falstaff], cf. II. 4.251 | Walton A 43 Sweetlips was like to have him [name of dog] | Goldsm 595 slyboots was . . . | Dowden Shelley 354 [Mary says:] I wish Blue Eyes was with me | Brontë V 321 a melancholy sober-sides | Mackenzie S 896 he’s more of a bright-eyes than you are | ib 937 you’ll wish you hadn’t been such a grass-eyes [fool] | id PR 238 You know everything, glass-eyes [to a boy with spectacles] | id RR 168 Oh, would you, cleversticks? her sister sneered | London V 42 Come on an’ kick in, you cold-feets [double pl !].

5.723. On sailing ships the carpenter was usually called “Chips”. In theatrical slang props is used for the property man. Cf. also Trollope W 47 “with Calves to help him”. I am sorry to say the archdeacon himself was designated by this scurrilous allusion to his nether person.

Jackanapes in the pl Fielding 7.501 I never saw two worse bred jackanapes | Galsw SS 46 and 313 All the modern jackanapes whom . . . he had been unable to avoid.

5.741. Walp C 189 the Precincts was abandoned for a time to its Sunday peace, but ib 355 The Precincts were quiet.
5.754. Much pains already Sh Cy II. 3.92. Many pains rare, Galsw Frat 46: the Society... took much time and many pains to ascertain the worst.

5.756. Galsw WM 21 it would run like a measle round the ring [rare].

5.754. Whereabout as a sg subst Sh Mcb II. 1.58, Di Do 193, Carlyle FR 301.

5.793. Troll B 421 two walloping gals, dressed up to their very eyeses | 423 they was dressed finer with all their neckses and buzoms stark naked.—Cf. also in spite of their teeths (NED tooth 1596, 1689).

Chapter VI
Number in Secondary Words

6.13, end. Bennett ECh 67 Having a perfect complexion and lips.

6.223. NP '14 the Powers who stand sponsor for the Prince of Wied.

6.241. Di X 229 Are those wheels upon the road? You've a quick ear, Bertha. Are they wheels?

6.32. Brontë J 291 Jewels for Jane Eyre sounds unnatural and strange—which might have been printed “Jewels for J.E.”

6.33. Cf. many a with pl verb 2.73.

6.42. Trollope Aut 14 Other books of the kind there was none—was probably used instead of were in conformity to the grammar taught at school.

6.44. Cf. 6.61 (n)either as conjunction.—Sh Tw II. 5.154 every one of these letters are in my name [probably attraction as in 6.72]. See also Keats 5.74 each one of them by turns reach some gardens of Paradise.

6.516. Goldsm V 1.192 Dryden and Row's manner, Sir, are quite out of fashion.
6.521. Further examples: Troll B 4 his ingress and egress was as much a matter of course as that of his son-in-law [note that] | Sh Tro III. 2.164 to be wise and loue Exceedes mans might [note that to is not repeated].

6.523. Note the commas in Carlyle FR 426 Cornet Remy, and those Few he dashed off with, has missed his road.

6.53. NP '14 Ability in sport, combined with a fair amount of learning, are very necessary qualifications for the teaching profession in England.

6.54. Kinglake E 271 The General, as well as I, was bound for Smyrna | Brontë J 183 the great carved clock, as well as the steps and banisters of the staircase, was polished to the brightness of glass.

6.71. The OE rule was that the number of the verb was decided by what precedes: Hys mete wæs gærstapan | pas pry hadas sindon an God (Huchon, Hist. Langue Angl. 1.195). The same rule is recommended by Curme CG 115 on the ground that "it is often difficult to distinguish subject and predicate in such cases, so that a mechanical rule is easier to follow". But modern writers do not always follow it, see, besides the examples given in vol. II: Sh H4A V. 4.91 But now two paces of the vilest earth Is roome enough | Mi Hymn Nat. 91 Perhaps their loves or else their sheep, Was all that did their silly thoughts so busy keep | Rose Macaulay T 302 Preparations was the great topic at these chats. The rule is followed in Wells PF 137 One very great factor in my mental distress was the uncertain values of nearly every aspect of the case | Bennett LM 73 My subject is chocolates. In many cases unification or attraction is the decisive factor, see 5.1 and 6.72.

6.72. With the quotation from AV Deut (in which daies may be the genitive, cf. 7.28) compare Locke D 325 Then there were a few moments silence.

A few more examples of attraction, the last to the end
of the section: Boswell 1.312 Much, no doubt, both of the sentiments and expression, were derived from conversation with him | Goldsm V 2.72 nothing but mirth and feasting were going forward.

6.7. Walton A 196 he is one of the leather mouthed fish that has his teeth in his throat [NB his] | Sterne 11 I affirm it to be one of the vilest worlds that ever was made | Fielding 1.449 he is one of the damnedst liars that ever was hang’d | Troll B 368 Staple was one of those who in his heart approved of the credit system | Stephen L 308 Ruskin is one of the people who frightens me to death, and makes me want to sink into my shoes.

6.9. Mason R 241 they were quarrelling. At least, Walter Hine was quarrelling, and my father was speaking to him as if he were a child.

Chapter VII
Number. Appendix

7.1. Number in First-words of Compounds. It should be noted that this is really part of 6.1 (Number in secondary words), as soon as the first part of a compound in recognized as a separate word, cf. ch. XIII. See also 8.93 a four-wheel, etc.

7.1a. On the type a four-wheel see 8.93.
A curious example: Wells H 343 these childless or one-or-two-child homes.

7.2a. Peacock M 168 the pound-shilling-and-pence philosophy.

7.2b. NP '17 the creation of a States system exclusively consisting of homogeneous national groups is an unrealizable ideal.—This is evidently different from a state system.
7.2. Bennett LR 163 a bearded foreign-affairs expert | ib 164 the visit of the Dominions and American press.

7.3. end: not so very rare: Di F 796 he had betrayed his parent for sixty threepennyworths of rum | ib 811 sixty threepennyworths | 814 two threepennyworths | Asterisk Gone Native 223 selling threepennyworths of sugar.

7.4. Di F 761 how can you ask such goose’s questions?

7.7. Cowper L 1.25 under which of the three . . . or whether under either | ib 1.264 whether I have a lantern, a dog, and a faggot, or whether I have neither of those desirable accommodations.

Chapter VIII
Substantives

8.5. Maxwell EG 422 time, with its immense in-terminable todays and its small insignificant yesterdays.

8.5. Galsw SS 102 here are three ‘down and outs’ [poor and out of work].

8.5. Kipl K 226 since ‘hows’ matter little in this world, the ‘why’ is everything.

8.6. Bennett Truth 54 the poor relation, the doff-hat, the ready-for-anything (not in NED) | id LR 25 Mr. Poppleham, M. P., is my washpot (acc. to NED obs.).

8.6. Galsw T 54 There it was in the Stop Press! “Glove Lane Murder.” This is short for the newspaper column “Stop Press News” (which in itself is elliptic) and belongs in so far in 8.9 (and 14.7).

8.7. Doyle S 3.191 he had descended into the ’tween decks [generally between-decks] | fo’c’stle = forecastle, what is before the castle | Galsw WM 102 the out-of-works and the in-works [the former usual, the latter not] | McKenna Ninety 101 They’d have paid his out-of-pocket expenses [to 8.9: short for out-of-pocket expenses].
8.8. Carlyle FR 391 these same *would-have-beens* are mostly a vanity.

8.9. Many additional examples must be treated in a different place.

---

Chapter IX

Substantivized Adjectives

9.2. Bunyan P 98 the *poor* that loveth Christ, is richer then the greatest man.

9.3. Note the difference in Bennett ECh 164 They were strangers in one way and the most *intimate* of *intimates* in another.

9.3. While the pl *nobles* 'members of the nobility' is common, the sg is rarer; twice in Sh; Carlyle FR 11.

9.3. "Female is objected to on grounds of taste, as treating women purely as animals—not as being incorrect English"—Moore Smith.

9.3. The *drys* and the *wets*, those in favour of prohibition and against it (U. S.).

9.6. Another example of adjective before *good*: Collins W 348 Her unexpected absence did me amazing good. Note the distinction between "this is equivalent to a refusal" (adj) and "this is the equivalent of a refusal" (sb).

9.7. Defoe Rox 306 Amy packed up her alls.

---

Chapter X

The Prop-Word One

On the origin of this use see (besides my book and the articles quoted there) Luick *Anglia* 37.543. I have given Danish parallels; Björkman, ESt 49.122 gives Swedish examples, even of the pl *(sådana ena, ni är ena roliga ena)*, which is not found in Danish. But what Einenkel, *Anglia*
38.210, says of Danish, must be wrong: no one in Denmark knows what the combinations he mentions, *en kniv en*, *god en*, could possibly mean. Nor is it easy to see how Einenkel has been able to understand my words as if they implied "nur in maskuliner und neutaler form": Danish makes no distinction between m. and f. in these cases. The rest of Einenkel's article is not very clear.

We may perhaps give the following tentative chronology, the dates of course to be taken as approximative:

1300 a good one.
1400 the good one.
1550 never a one, such a one, good ones, the good ones.
1600 one good one.
18th c. that one, a silver one.
19th c. the one (we) preferred, those ones, a one to keep company, the ones that . . ., my one.

**10.3**. Another early example Ch D 605 I was a lusty oon.

**10.3**. Swift 1.310 As universal a practice as lying is, and *as easy a one* as it seems.

**10.3**. Walp C 84 she knew nothing about primroses—there were for her yellow ones and *other ones*, and that was all [generally *others* 17.7].

Non-anaphorical: Sh Oth II. 1.143 *foule pranks, which faire and wise-ones do* | Egerton Kn 82 the spirits of *unborn little ones* never to come to life in me troubled me.

**10.5**. Instead of what is printed in small type on p. 257, read: It is important, if one wants to understand the historical development, to keep the prop-word distinct from the numeral *one*, which occurs in the same combinations as those dealt with in the following sections. The numeral is found when *the one* (earlier *that one*, *that oon*, and with weakening of *a* and attraction of *t* to *oon*, *the toon*, *the t’one*) is opposed to *the other* (that *other*, the *tother*), further in the following instances: Matt. 18.12
OE (Corpus) gæð & secp pæt án þe forwearð... he swyðor geblissap for pam ánun þonne ofer þa nigon & hund-nigontig; Tyndale: go and seke that won which is gone astraye (where the contrast is between the one and the 99; Miss Björling persists in seeing here the prop-word in spite of my articles Anglia Beibl. 1925. 155 and 382) | Sh Ro III. 5.167 we scarce thought vs blest, That God had lent vs but this onely child, But now I see this one is one too much | Hml IV. 7.76 a qualitie Wherein they say you shine, your summe of parts Did not together plucke such envie from him As dim that one [one opposed to your sum of parts together; in both Sh-quotations the verse ictus falls on one] | Bronte V 360 I gave papa his twelve letters—his herd of possessions—and kept back my one, my ewe-lamb | Hope In 135 there was a letter for her. While he attacked his pile, she began on her one (one stressed).

10.61. The only example from the eighteenth c. that has come to hand is Sterne 59 of the traverses of that attack,—but particularly of that one where he received his wound.

10.62. end. Thack V 30 this one blacked his shoes: that toasted his bread.

10.64. Instead of the Hope quotation (see above), put: Birmingham Regan 72 What was the explanation that you gave to Doyle? It was different from my one I know [i. e. the one you gave me; mine would have been the one I gave].

10.68. New section: Ones without any adjunct before it may sometimes be found before a relative clause: McKnight W 9 this end is attained only when the symbols of language are ones that convey precisely the same meaning to all [ Mackenzie (quoted by Kruisinga) Why not plain white for the walls and no curtains at all, until you can get ones you really do like? Cf. for the sg 10.26.
10.8. The difference between *young* and *young ones* is not always clear: Defoe R 171 I wanted a she-goat with *young* [sg! cp. a woman with child 4.35] | ib 213 three favourites, which I kept tame, and whose *young* I always drowned | By DJ 5.132 A tigress robb'd of young . . . What is stealing *young ones*? | Rose Macaulay O 92 all of 'em married and had *young ones*, and the young ones had *young* in their turn | Pinero S 62 when the *young ones* gradually take the place of the old | Gregory Discovery 75 females producing live *young* without any eggs . . . insects which produce *no young*, and eggs from which *young* emerge. Cf. examples of *young ones* 10.4.

10.9. Sh Caes I. 2.144 Yours is as faire a name | Walton A 105 yours is a better rod.

Chapter XI

Adjectives as Principals

11.3. Note the difference between *a little* and *a little thing*: Di X 14 Why do you doubt your senses? Because *a little thing* affects them.

11.3. *The before like* is probably OE *py*: Wells WW 58 a clock, a silver spoon, and the like poor valuables [= some similar].

11.3. Maxwell F 293 Anyhow, she has *done the handsome* for once [behaved decently] | Wells JP 729 making *our damndest* just in order to sit about safely.

11.4. Genitive pl: Kingsley Y 46 for the *poor's* sake; cf. 9.5.

11.4. *Kipl DW 334 no sick, no prisoners* | Wells Br 375 with one or two other *wounded* . . . these *wounded* had all been found | Gibson Dipl. Diary 236 and *wounded* are everywhere.

11.5. Troll B 81, *popular* . . . with Italians as well as *English*. 
11.5. A Chinese found, e.g. Boswell I.254, Cowper L 1.37, Kingsley Y 50, Maugham TL 80, 201, 205.

11.5. NP '15 a number of Egyptian Beduin... the Beduin who have revolted (cf. 3.1 above).

11.6. Cf. that much, that little 16.3.

Certain also in Macaulay E 3.61 certain of the house of Villiers were to go shares with Overreach.

Considerable (sg) Defoe M 288 my mother had left me something, and perhaps considerable | Dreiser F 165 his cane which he carried with considerable of an air.

---

Chapter XII

Relations between Adjunct and Principal

12.2. Here a reference should be made to the use of no as a shifted not, see 16.7(5).

12.221. Bennett Cd 81 men are moral cowards [= morally] | James RH 18 an extreme intimate | ib 422 a "handsome" subscriber to an important cause likes an acknowledgment of his cheque [the inverted commas show that the writer felt this to be a peculiar use of the adj].

12.222. Goldsm V 1.33 farmers who were equal strangers to opulence and poverty.

12.272. Gissing H 245 Light-blue eyes tended to modify the all but harshness of his lower face | Flecker Hassan 140 This is the first day of my exaltation, I have begun it the all but murderer of a woman.

12.29. Troll B 161 The conqueror once is generally the conqueror for ever after | Dreiser F 96 Davies realized that in his absence writing a new turn had been given to things [when he was absent, writing, cf. 15.75].

12.312. Troll B 78 as a modern linguist she had made great proficiency | Cowper L 1.267 a dozen good sizeable cakes.

12.331. Against my rule that in combinations like the stout Major's wife the adj. belongs to wife and not to
Major, Trampe Bødtker quotes two instances from Shaw's Ms, but he overlooks the fact that both must be understood in the way indicated by me. P. 56 Percival asks "What sort of girl are you? What sort of house is this?" and gets the answer "This is the house of a respectable shopkeeper, enormously rich. This is the respectable shopkeeper's daughter, tired of good manners. Come, handsome young man, and play with the respectable shopkeeper's daughter". Here the first sentence answers the question about the house, and shows how to express oneself if respectable is to be an adjunct to shopkeeper; in the second and third sentences the question as to "what sort of girl" is answered: she is the daughter of a shopkeeper and she is respectable. P. 230 Shaw speaks of persons in a play: "Then there's the comic relief: the comic shopkeeper, the comic shopkeeper's wife, the comic footman who turns out to be a duke in disguise". Evidently there are three comic persons, the shopkeeper, his wife, and the footman; there would be no point, if the second person was not perhaps comic herself, but only married to a comic husband.

12.4. Greenhouse is like blackbird in regard to stress, but different from it as far as the internal relation between the two parts of the compound is concerned. But both are compounds and thus distinguished from the collocations black bird and green house (with level stress), in which we have direct adjective adjuncts. The spelling is not always decisive: a French master (level stress) is a master who is French, not necessarily a teacher of French, but a French master with stronger stress on French than on master is one who teaches French, but not necessarily one of French nationality. See on the difference in intonation Palmer Gr p. 40.

12.41. ff. Miscellaneous examples: short-sighted glasses (spectacles) | Hope D 88 A guilty silence reigned for some moments.—In a newspaper (1914) I find advertized Wonderful Bad Leg Cure: wonderful goes with cure, bad with leg: but it may turn out to be a wonderfully bad leg cure.
12.4.3. Butler W 190 he was placed on the idle list for the whole half year.

12.4.5. London V 105 he was a great Indian fighter [i.e. fought red Indians].

12.5.3. Sh Lr III. 7.101 If she live long, and in the end meet the old course of death [i.e. die old, of old age, though editors explain old as meaning customary, natural].

12.5.5. Mackenzie C 140 the balloon sleeves of the mid-'nineties.

12.5.6. Kaye Smith T 115 The ceremony was fixed for early June | Bennett HL 144 I went to see him one late afternoon [common].

Chapter XIII
Substantives as Adjuncts

13.4. Eighteenth and early nineteenth century examples: Defoe M 179 they found but one of the gold watches, and a silver one | Swift J 208 handkerchiefs... snuff ones | Gay BP 8 five gold watches, and seven silver ones | Sterne 215 pulling out my box (which was a small tortoise one) | Cowper L 1.382 I made Mrs. Unwin a present of a snuff-box—a silver one | Richardson G 90 education... it is a country and a bookish one | Southey L 19 with an appetite no ways like my Portugal one | Keats 4.93 a sort of philosophical back-garden, and cheerful holiday-keeping front one.

13.5.4. Locke SJ 216 in my most nightmare dreams | id A 180 he had the most lightning way of establishing an intimacy.

13.6.4. Butler Er 65 if I had been found to have anything contraband in my possession | Norris S 66 Everything metal was intolerable to the touch | Meréith: something silk, see 17.322.
13.7. Bennett ECh 7 casting off a thick apron and springing to a flimsier and fancier one.

Chapter XIV
Adjuncts Continued

14.2. Beresford R 146 That's the worthwhile thing | Dreiser F 77 this was a worthwhile assignment (cf. 14.6, worth-whileness) | London V 29 a free-for-all fight.
14.3. AV Ps 136.12 with a stretched out arme | Wells TB 1.25 pensioned-off servants.
14.7. Mock before an adverb Dreiser F 205 she would protest mock earnestly.
14.8. Tracy P 272 something has happened which has put us again in the also-ran class [from reports of horse-races: Also ran Diomedes, etc.].
14.9. Carpenter Art Cr 92 from the within point of view . . . on its more external side || Galsw TL 17 her wide-apart brown eyes [also id T 45; apart not by itself in this way, cp. 9.1.].
14.9. Cp. also Wells H 18 a hard-up professional family | Mackenzie PR 172 comfortably-off poor relations.

Chapter XV
Adjuncts. Concluded

15.1. In the section about the word-order of two adjuncts to the same primary a reference should have been given to the old order an old man and a poor (10.9) and the corresponding order in the pl as in Goldsm V 1.70 With fainting steps and slow.—An English correspondent asks why we say a large white horse, but a nice little basket.
I do not think that rhythm, though often influential, is here the decisive factor, but that white horse and little basket are more intimately knitted together into one idea (cf. 15.151) than large horse or nice basket would be. Walton (Compleat Angler, ed. Lang 315, not in 1st ed., which I usually quote) writes: "I will . . . contemplate the lilies that take no care and those very many other various little living creatures that are fed by the goodness of the God of nature". Here living creatures forms one idea, with which little is intimately connected; the place of those, of many, and of other is determined by the rules I give in 15.14, 15.141 and 15.13. But in some cases much depends on individual fancy, or rather, as I said, on the order in which the ideas present themselves to the mind of the speaker. The following examples must be explained in accordance with 15.151: London M 353 his Hawaiian short story | Shaw D 262 your usual society small talk | Twain H 1.99 it was the worst bad luck.

15.175. Keats 4.146 There is a deeper joy . . . of more divine a smart | Locke GP 280 Yet, for that reason, was he not all the greater a human being? | Lewis MS 371 whatever possessed you to let her pump you, bright a girl as you are.

15.25. Stevenson T 160 Silver had terrible hard work getting up the knoll | James RH 57 anything worth doing is plaguy hard to do!

15.28. The development of passing and exceeding is similar to that of Fr tres from trans and of over in not over particular, etc.

15.31. It should be noted that newly, not new, is now the colloquial form in most combinations, with married, appointed, etc.

15.32. Austen M 245 taken up in fresh arranging the fire.

15.41. Astronomer Royal (still existing title) | Wells Ma 2.41 the cook-general | Galsw WM 248 and 249 the lie benevolent | Troll W 35 the church militant.
15.5. "Body national suggested by the body politic. A giant refreshed is from Psalm 78.66 (Prayerbook version). Person doing... thing done: the doing person and the done thing scarcely possible. Deed accomplished, a Gallicism = fait accompli." (Moore Smith).—The effect of parallelism and contrast is seen in Sh Shr V. 2.142 A woman mou'd is like a fountaine troubled | Cowper L 1.193 after it has feasted upon praise expressed, it can find a comfortable dessert in the contemplation of praise implied | Bennett RS 136 a fire laid is already half lighted.

15.6. An early example: Ch R 3552 agayn your man, As hoolly youres as ever he can.

15.7. Sh Tro I. 3.130 The generall's disdain'd By him one step below; he, by the next, That next, by him beneath.

15.8. Ch R 4453 Of thing to comen she woot right nought.

15.8. Rose Macaulay T 197 there scarcely was a war on, now. Not a war to matter.

15.8. Stephen L 20 I have one person less to believe in me and one person less to reverence.

Chapter XVI

Rank of the Pronouns

16.1. Cowper L 2.61 I should have thought them tears as well bestowed as most that I have shed for many years.

16.2. There is also a rare American primary whosen: If it isn't hisn, then whosen is it? Mencken AL4 453.

16.2. Examples of its as a primary are very rare. NED has only one, Sh H8 I. 1.18 Each following day Became the next dayes master, till the last Made former wonders, it's. (NED explains the meaning as 'its one, its ones', but are these combinations in common use?)
Kruisinga § 1104 has two examples. I may add London War of the Classes 187 these nations will have attained their maximum development, before the whole world, in the same direction, has attained its.

16.3. Here again we have American forms in -n: Thissn is better'n thatn. I like thesenn better'n thoseen, Mencken AL 4 454, who (wrongly) explains them as degenerate forms of this-one, that one, etc. But then the pl?

16.3 93. Note that in all recent examples we have it is with its peculiar logical connexion, see vol. III ch. V.

16.3 92. Walton A 15 having said this much.

16.3 93. Cp. Carlyle R 1.55 if little was said, that little had generally a meaning; Mill in Fox 2.259 I had read but little of them before now, and that little at long intervals.

16.3 94. British examples of subjunct this: Maxwell Ch. Night 134 Sure you don’t think poorly of me for making friends with you this easily | Rogers Wine of F. 73 We couldn’t go this early.

16.5. On whether see 7.7. Amr whosen see above 16.2. On adjunct relative which see vol. III ch. VI.

16.6. Bunyan P 125 they had given none occasion.

16.6 8. An early example Roister 77 she shall be none of mine. Cp. on non-partitive, appositional of my remarks in SPE Tract 25, 1926.

16.7 52. Note the definite article in Locke FS 70 to the no small scandal of the neighbourhood.

16.7 9. Mi A 29 I proceed from the no good it can do, to the manifest hurt it causes.

Chapter XVII

Rank of the Pronouns. Concluded

17.2. Mixed examples of body and one, some of them showing the preference for one before a relative clause: Beerbohm Seven Men 114 he asked me to tell him who every one was. I told him no one was any one in particular |
Walp SC 353 Every one gave way to him, and he despised everybody | Maxw EG 166 Has somebody sent you an anonymous letter? No. Oh no. Has someone spoken about me? | Goldsm 648 under an obligation to every one I meet ... a pretty ... youth that everybody is fond of | Carpenter E 24 Every body (which in the "society" signification of the word means everyone who does not work with his hands) does it [viz. lend money] | Galsw F 53 have somebody with whom she could share everything—someone she could protect and comfort—someone who would bring her peace.

17.2. Walton A 156 any other body.—With adj after, as in something good (17.3): Kaye Smith HA 43 Let Jenny marry somebody rich | Mackenzie S 1.61 Everybody nice went away.

17.3. Similarly, of course, anything after a negative: Wells PF 19 without anything much in the way of a family | Galsw F 349 I can't believe anything much can happen.

17.3. Earlier examples than in NED: Sh Err III. 2.104 Swart like my shoo, but her face nothing like so cleane kept | Defoe R 7 the sea went very high, tho'. nothing like what I have seen many times since.

17.7. We find, though more rarely, the same use of other in the pl when it is not accompanied by a quantifier: Beresford R 68 like other of the world's great men | ib 118 conversations with Oliver and other of the young hot-heads. —Instead of of we may have among: Wells JP 589 Two other among that handful of young soldiers.

17.8. One may be used as a primary, in which case it is made into a substantive (ch. cf. X), and as an adjunct; in the latter case it has always its numerical value, which is often more or less obliterated when one is a primary.
THE PHILOSOPHY OF GRAMMAR

by Otto Jespersen

Demy 8vo 6th Impression 16s. net

'A fascinating storehouse of the wonderful devices of language, and as its illustrations are largely taken from English, its appeal is not merely to linguists, but may be appreciated by anyone.' Spectator

'Indispensable to all students of language and invaluable to every teacher of grammar.' Education

'A fascinating book . . . In its originality, its erudition, and its breadth, this is quite the best book on grammar we have seen.' Birmingham Gazette

'He realizes, as many grammarians do not, that grammar, if it is to become a science, must be based upon a logic and a psychology definitely addressed to the problems of language as well as upon linguistic history, formal analysis and the comparison of usages . . . both destructively and constructively the book has notable merits.' Mind

LANGUAGE: ITS NATURE, DEVELOPMENT AND ORIGIN

Demy 8vo 8th Impression 18s. net

'A book which ought to be widely read, and we think that many who had never previously attempted such a book might easily be fascinated.' Westminster Gazette

'Wherever it is tapped it yields evidence of the magic of words and of the author's extraordinary power of bringing it out. His enthusiasm and humour work more spells even than his encyclopaedic knowledge.' Birmingham Gazette

'A delightful and fascinating book.' Daily Herald
by Otto Jespersen

HOW TO TEACH
A FOREIGN LANGUAGE

Cr. 8vo 9th Impression 9s. 6d. net
'This very suggestive work has been well translated, and ought to be read by all heads of schools and teachers of foreign languages in Great Britain and other countries where speakers of English live.' Athenæum

'Professor Jespersen is well known to English students . . . not only a skilled philologist, but also a profound thinker. The present volume demonstrates that he is besides an experienced teacher.' Journal of Education

'We recommend this very lucid, readable and practical book to all language teachers and learners.' Schoolmaster

NOVIAL LEXIKE

Large Cr. 8vo 5s. 6d. net
Contains the most necessary vocabulary of the author's international language (ovial).
'I have studied your system with great admiration and sympathy. Your principles are unobjectionable, and Novial surpasses the other international languages in all respects.' C. C. Uhlenback, President of the First International Congress of Linguistics.

'Its vocabulary is natural, its grammatical structure is simple and logical, it employs no sounds that are not familiar to everyone, and it shows a considerable euphony . . . an extremely interesting little book.' H. L. Mencken in The American Mercury

MANKIND, NATION AND INDIVIDUAL
FROM A LINGUISTIC POINT OF VIEW

Cr. 8vo. 9s. 6d. net
'It is as interesting as a novel, and the ordinary reader who is not a linguist can read it with pleasure . . . a very delightful book and a very important contribution to linguistic science.' Henry Bett in London Quarterly and Holborn Review
ESSENTIALS OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR

by Otto Jespersen

Cr. 8vo Ninth Impression 12s. 6d. net
'This is an attempt at presenting the chief facts of English Grammar so as to give a real insight into the structure of the language in the light of modern linguistic science. The author has taken great pains to make the rules clear and concise without any great apparatus of learned terms; typical and in many instances interesting examples have been carefully selected to illustrate the rules. Much stress is laid on word order and other important things which are generally neglected in works of this kind; forms and their uses are treated together, and an endeavour is made throughout to get away from the trammels of Latin grammar. Historical explanations are kept in the background except in the chapters on the evolution of the sound-system, where they are necessary to understand the difference between breath and breathe, the sounds of food, good, and blood, etc.

'Jespersen's treatment of English grammar is . . . far more logical and far more elastic than the traditional methods . . . He writes with the ease of perfect mastery.' Teacher's World

'An analysis of the written and spoken language of today, it is very complete and vivid.' New English Weekly

THE WORLD'S CHIEF LANGUAGES

by Mario Pei

Demy 8vo 2nd Impression 25s. net
The author describes the world's main languages and their geographical distribution, the linguistic families and the elementary relationships among their members, the identification of the written and possibly the spoken form of several important tongues, and lastly the description of the sounds and grammatical structure, together with a selective vocabulary, of seven of the world's most widely-spoken languages.

'The book contains an immense amount of well arranged information for anyone interested in language study.' John O'London's Weekly

LONDON: GEORGE ALLEN & UNWIN LTD
JESPersen, Otto, 1860-1943
A modern English grammar on historical principles
012482958 (108066)